A 15 14 1.36.17

# THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OVR LORD AND SAVIOVR IESVS CHRIST.

Newlie tranſlated out of the Originall Greeke: and with the former Tranſlations diligentlie compared and reuiſed:

*By his Majeſties ſpeciall Commandement.*

EDINBVRGH,
Printed by the Heires of
*Andro Hart.* 1628.

# An admonition for the better vnderſtanding of the enſuing Kalendar.

*I haue thought good (Chriſtian Reader) for thy better conceiuing and vnderſtanding of this enſuing Kalendar, to ſet downe the order thereof.*

*And firſt, as yee may perceiue, there is ſeuen Columes in euery Moneth: In the firſt and laſt, is containeld the riſing and ſetting of the Sunne: In the ſecond, the Golden number: In the third the dayes of euerie Moneth: In the fourth the exact houre and minute of the Change of the Moone, anſwering to the Golden number of that yeare: In the fifth, the Sundayes letter: In the ſixt, the Apoſtolicke Sainctes dayes, with the time of the entrance of the Sunne into the twelue Celeſtiall Signes.*

*Now knowing the day of the Moneth, you ſhall eaſilie ſee all the reſt correſpondent thereunto.*

*And as for the Change of the Moone, Looke in euerie Moneth, where you finde your Golden number of that yeare, and you ſhall finde duely following thereafter the exact houre and minute of the Change, and b if it bee before noone, and a if it bee afternoone: As for example. In this preſent yeare, 1628. the Golden number is 14. ſeeke in Ianuarie, and yee ſhall finde it vpon the 26. and immediatelie thereafter following you ſhall finde 11. houres 46. minutes afternoone: And ſo of all the reſt.*

436 ; 01

# A Table of the moueable Feasts, Golden number, Epact &c. for xxv. yeeres to come,

*with an exact Kalendar*

| yeere of God | fund. let. | gol. num. | Epact | Lenton begins | Easter day | Whit-sunday |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1628 | g E | 14 | 4 | feb. 26 | apr. 13 | iune 1 |
| 1629 | D | 15 | 15 | feb. 18 | apr. 5 | may 24 |
| 1630 | C | 16 | 26 | feb. 10 | mar. 28 | may 16 |
| 1631 | B | 17 | 7 | feb. 23 | apr. 10 | may 29 |
| 1632 | AG | 18 | 18 | feb. 15 | apr. 1 | may 20 |
| 1633 | F | 19 | 29 | mar. 6 | apr. 21 | iune 9 |
| 1634 | E | 1 | 11 | feb. 19 | apr. 6 | may 25 |
| 1635 | D | 2 | 22 | feb. 11 | mar. 29 | may 17 |
| 1636 | CB | 3 | 3 | mar. 2 | apr. 17 | iune 5 |
| 1637 | A | 4 | 14 | feb. 22 | apr. 9 | may 28 |
| 1638 | G | 5 | 25 | feb. 7 | mar. 25 | may 13 |
| 1639 | F | 6 | 6 | feb. 27 | apr. 14 | iune 2 |
| 1640 | ED | 7 | 17 | feb. 19 | apr. 5 | may 24 |
| 1641 | C | 8 | 28 | mar. 10 | apr. 25 | iun. 13 |
| 1642 | B | 9 | 9 | feb. 23 | apr. 10 | may 29 |
| 1643 | A | 10 | 20 | feb. 15 | apr. 2 | may 21 |
| 1644 | GF | 11 | 1 | mar. 6 | apr. 21 | may 9 |
| 1645 | E | 12 | 12 | feb. 19 | apr. 6 | may 25 |
| 1646 | D | 13 | 23 | feb. 11 | mar. 29 | may 17 |
| 1647 | C | 14 | 4 | mar. 3 | apr. 18 | iune 6 |
| 1648 | BA | 15 | 25 | feb. 16 | apr. 2 | may 21 |
| 1649 | G | 16 | 26 | feb. 7 | mar. 25 | may 13 |
| 1650 | F | 17 | 7 | feb. 27 | apr. 14 | iune 2 |
| 1651 | E | 18 | 18 | feb. 12 | mar. 30 | may 18 |
| 1652 | D | 19 | 29 | mar. 3 | apr. 18 | iune 6 |

## Ianuarie hath xxxi. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gold. numb. | | Moone change h. m. | | Dom. letter | est. aies | Sunne settes. h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 8 25 | | 1 | 5 33 | a | A | Cir- | 3 35 |
| | 8 | 2 | | | b | cum | |
| | | 3 | | | c | cisi | |
| | 16 | 4 | 2 12 | b | d | | |
| | 5 | 5 | 8 0 | | e | Epi- | |
| 8 19 | | 6 | | | f | phan | 3 41 |
| | 3 | 7 | 10 37 | b | g | | |
| | 2 | 8 | 9 26 | a | A | | |
| | | 9 | | | b | | |
| | 18 10 | 10 | 9 39 | a | c | | |
| | | 11 | 4 45 | b | d | *Sun* | |
| 8 11 | | 12 | 3 3 | a | e | *in* | 3 49 |
| | 7 | 13 | | | f | *Aquá-* | |
| | | 14 | 10 7 | b | g | *rius.* | |
| | 15 | 15 | | | A | | |
| | 4 | 16 | 1 17 | a | b | | |
| 5 51 | | 17 | 10 45 | a | c | | 3 58 |
| | 12 | 18 | | | d | | |
| | | 19 | 5 57 | b | e | | |
| | 1 | 20 | 4 3 | a | f | | |
| | 9 | 21 | | | g | | |
| 7 53 | | 22 | 8 41 | a | A | | |
| | 17 | 23 | | | b | | |
| | | 24 | 3 37 | a | c | | 4 7 |
| | 6 | 25 | | | d | | |
| | | 26 | 11 46 | a | e | Con | |
| | 3 14 | 27 | 8 28 | b | f | uer- | |
| 7 43 | | 28 | 6 56 | b | g | sion | 4 17 |
| | 11 | 29 | 6 43 | a | A | of | |
| | 19 | 30 | | | b | *Paul* | |
| | 8 | 31 | 10 10 | b | c | | |

Februarie hath xxix. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gold. numb | | Moone change h. m. | | | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies | Sunne sertes h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 7 27 | | 1 | 8 | 38 | a | d | Circumcision of Mary | 4 33 |
| | 16 | 2 | | | | e | | |
| | | 3 | 9 | 9 | b | f | | |
| | 5 | 4 | 11 | 44 | a | g | | |
| | 13 | 5 | | | | A | | |
| 7 19 | | 6 | | | | b | | 4 21 |
| | 2 | 7 | 7 | 32 | b | c | | |
| | 10 | 8 | 3 | 53 | a | d | | |
| | 18 | 9 | 3 | 10 | a | e | | |
| | | 10 | | | | f | *Sun in Pisces* | |
| | 7 | 11 | 10 | 2 | b | g | | |
| 7 9 | | 12 | | | | A | | 4 51 |
| | 15 | 13 | 4 | 29 | b | b | | |
| | | 14 | | | | c | | |
| | 4 | 15 | 3 | 38 | b | d | | |
| | 12 | 16 | 8 | 59 | b | e | | |
| | 1 | 17 | 5 | 43 | a | f | | |
| 6 56 | | 18 | | | | g | | |
| | 9 | 19 | 6 | 29 | b | A | | |
| | | 20 | | | | b | | 5 4 |
| | 17 | 21 | 3 | 24 | a | c | | |
| 6 44 | | 22 | | | | d | | |
| | 6 | 23 | 9 | 1 | b | e | | 5 16 |
| | 14 | 24 | 11 | 8 | a | f | | |
| | 3 | 25 | 9 | 27 | b | g | Matthew Apostle. | |
| | 11 | 26 | 4 | 44 | a | A | | |
| | | 27 | | | | b | | |
| | 19 | 28 | 10 | 18 | b | c | | |
| 6 33 | | 29 | | | | o | | 5 27 |
| | | | | | | | *Leape yeere* | |

March hath xxxi. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gold. numb. | | Moone change h. m. | | Dom. letter | Fest. daies | Sunne settes. h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 6 21 | | 1 | | | d | | 5 39 |
| | 8 | 2 | 3 58 | a | e | | |
| | | 3 | | | f | | |
| | 16 | 4 | 0 44 | a | g | | |
| | | 5 | | | A | | |
| 6 14 | 5 | 6 | 1 19 | b | b | | 5 46 |
| | 2 13 | 7 | 5 39 | a | c | | |
| | | 8 | 10 37 | b | d | | |
| | 10 | 9 | 4 0 | b | e | | |
| | | 10 | | | f | *Sun* | |
| 6 0 | 18 | 11 | 9 5 | b | g | *in* | 6 0 |
| | | 12 | | | A | *Aries.* | |
| | 7 | 13 | 3 57 | b | b | | |
| | 15 | 14 | 8 25 | a | c | | |
| | | 15 | | | d | | |
| 5 51 | 4 | 16 | 11 3 | b | e | | 6 9 |
| | 12 | 17 | 6 7 | a | f | | |
| | | 18 | | | g | | |
| | 1 | 19 | 6 37 | b | A | | |
| | 9 | 20 | 10 7 | a | b | | |
| | | 21 | | | c | | |
| 5 39 | 17 | 22 | 8 26 | b | d | | 6 21 |
| | 6 | 23 | 11 29 | a | e | | |
| | | 24 | | | f | | |
| | 14 | 25 | 10 56 | b | g | An- | |
| | 3 | 26 | 6 24 | a | A | nun- | |
| | | 27 | | | b | cia- | |
| 5 27 | 11 | 28 | 2 56 | b | c | tion | 6 33 |
| | | 29 | | | d | of | |
| | 19 | 30 | 2 32 | b | e | Mary | |
| | 8 | 31 | 9 21 | a | f | | |

APRIL

April hath xxx. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Golden num. | | Moone change h. m. | | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies. | Sunne settes h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 5 11 | | 1 | | | g | | 6 49 |
| | | 2 | | | A | | |
| | 16 | 3 | 1 48 | b | b | | |
| | 5 | 4 | 11 52 | b | c | | |
| | 13 | 5 | 7 26 | a | d | | |
| | 2 | 6 | 4 20 | b | e | | |
| 5 1 | 10 | 7 | 5 13 | a | f | | 6 59 |
| | | 8 | | | g | | |
| | | 9 | | | A | | |
| | 18 | 10 | 2 10 | b | b | | |
| | 7 | 11 | 7 29 | a | c | *Sun in Taurus* | |
| | | 12 | | | d | | |
| 4 50 | 15 | 13 | 9 28 | b | e | | 7 10 |
| | 4 | 14 | 7 27 | a | f | | |
| | | 15 | | | g | | |
| | 12 | 16 | 2 50 | b | A | | |
| | 1 | 17 | 8 29 | a | b | | |
| | | 18 | | | c | | |
| | 9 | 19 | 2 12 | a | d | | |
| 4 38 | 17 | 20 | 10 41 | a | e | | 7 22 |
| | | 21 | | | f | | |
| | 6 | 22 | 11 13 | b | g | | |
| | 14 | 23 | 8 11 | a | A | Saint | |
| | | 24 | | | b | *George* | |
| 4 30 | 3 | 25 | 4 50 | b | c | Mark | |
| | 11 | 26 | 1 41 | a | d | Euan | 7 40 |
| | | 27 | | | e | gelist | |
| | 19 | 28 | 6 48 | a | f | | |
| | | 29 | | | g | | |
| | 8 | 30 | 1 33 | a | A | | |

## May hath xxxi. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Num. | | Moone change h. m. | | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies. | Sunne sette h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 4 7 | | 1 | | | b | Phi- | 7 5 |
| | 16 | 2 | 0 | 11 a | c | lip | |
| | 5 | 3 | 8 | 17 b | d | and | |
| | | 4 | | | e | Ia- | |
| | 2 13 | 5 | 3 | 54 a | f | cob. | |
| | | 6 | 3 | 21 b | g | | |
| 3 59 | 10 | 7 | 7 | 21 b | A | | 8 1 |
| | | 8 | | | b | | |
| | 18 | 9 | 5 | 29 a | c | | |
| | | 10 | | | d | | |
| | 7 | 11 | 8 | 33 b | e | | |
| | 15 | 12 | 7 | 45 a | f | | |
| | | 13 | | | g | *Sun in Gemini.* | 8 11 |
| 3 49 | 4 | 14 | 3 | 18 b | A | | |
| | 12 | 15 | 11 | 39 b | b | | |
| | | 16 | | | c | | |
| | 1 | 17 | 11 | 19 b | d | | |
| | | 18 | | | e | | |
| | 9 | 19 | 6 | 4 b | f | | |
| 3 36 | 17 | 20 | 10 | 28 b | g | | 8 24 |
| | 6 | 21 | 8 | 52 a | A | | |
| | | 22 | | | b | | |
| | 14 | 23 | 3 | 59 a | c | | |
| | 3 | 24 | 0 | 45 b | d | | |
| | | 25 | | | e | | |
| 3 30 | 11 | 26 | 1 | 34 b | f | | 8 30 |
| | | 27 | | | g | | |
| | 19 | 28 | 10 | 26 b | A | | |
| | | 29 | | | b | | |
| | 8 | 30 | 3 | 46 b | c | | |
| | 16 | 31 | 8 | 35 a | d | | |

## Iune hath xxx. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gol. num | | Moone change h, m. | | | Dom. letter. | Fest daies. | Sunne settes h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 3 24 | | 1 | | | | e | | 8 36 |
| | 5 | 2 | 3 | 41 | b | f | | |
| | 13 | 3 | 10 | 56 | b | g | | |
| | 2 | 4 | 4 | 42 | b | A | | |
| | 10 | 5 | 10 | 11 | a | b | | |
| | | 6 | | | | c | | |
| 3 22 | 18 | 7 | | | | d | | 8 38 |
| | 7 | 8 | 6 | 43 | b | e | | |
| | | 9 | 7 | 2 | a | f | | |
| | 15 | 10 | | | | g | | |
| | 4 | 11 | 4 | 11 | b | A | Saint Bar- | |
| | 12 | 12 | 1 | 13 | b | b | nab. | |
| | | 13 | 9 | 30 | a | c | *Sun* | |
| 3 21 | 1 | 14 | | | | d | *in* | 8 39 |
| | 9 | 15 | | | | e | *Can-* | |
| | 17 | 16 | 2 | 26 | b | f | *cer.* | |
| | | 17 | 9 | 10 | a | g | | |
| | 6 | 18 | 8 | 1 | a | A | | |
| | 14 | 19 | | | | b | | 8 37 |
| 3 23 | | 20 | 4 | 9 | b | c | | |
| | 3 | 21 | 11 | 7 | b | d | | |
| | | 22 | 11 | 26 | | e | | |
| | 11 | 23 | | | | f | | |
| | | 24 | 2 | 32 | a | g | Natiuitie | |
| | | 25 | | | | A | | |
| | 19 | 26 | | | | b | of | |
| 3 26 | 8 | 27 | 0 | 51 | b | c | Iohn | 8 34 |
| | 16 | 28 | 4 | 1 | a | d | Bap- | |
| | 5 | 29 | | | | e | tist. | |
| | | 30 | 3 | 49 | b | f | | |

## Iuly hath xxxi. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gol. num | | Moone change h, m. | | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies. | Sunne settes h. m |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | 5 | 1 | 10 54 | b | g | | 8 29 |
| 3 31 | 13 | 2 | 7 18 | a | A | | |
| | 2 | 3 | 6 41 | | b | | |
| | | 4 | | | c | | |
| | 10 | 5 | 1 23 | a | d | | |
| | | 6 | | | e | | |
| | 18 | 7 | 5 51 | a | f | Dog daies | 8 24 |
| 3 36 | 7 | 8 | 3 54 | b | g | be- | |
| | | 9 | | | A | gin. | |
| | 15 | 10 | 11 34 | b | b | | |
| | 4 | 11 | 8 12 | a | c | | |
| | | 12 | | | d | | |
| | 12 | 13 | 8 57 | b | e | | 8 11 |
| 3 49 | | 14 | | | f | *Sun* | |
| | 1 | 15 | 5 45 | a | g | *in* | |
| | | 16 | | | A | *Leo.* | |
| | 9 | 17 | 11 9 | b | b | | |
| | 17 | 18 | 4 6 | b | c | | |
| | 6 | 19 | 11 21 | b | d | | 8 1 |
| | 14 | 20 | 6 32 | a | e | | |
| 3 59 | | 21 | | | f | | |
| | 3 | 22 | 11 58 | b | g | Mary | |
| | | 23 | | | A | Mag- | |
| | 11 | 24 | 5 29 | b | b | da- | |
| | | 25 | | | c | lene. | |
| | 19 | 26 | 2 2 | a | d | Saint | |
| 4 9 | | 27 | | | e | *Iames* | 7 51 |
| | 8 | 28 | 2 35 | b | f | Apo- | |
| | 16 | 29 | 11 7 | b | g | stle. | |
| | 5 | 30 | 6 50 | a | A | | |
| | | 31 | | | b | | |

## Auguſt hath xxxi. dayes.

| Sunne riſeth h. m. | Gol. num. | | Moone change h. m. | Dom. letter. | Feſt. daies | Sunne ſettes. h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 4 23 | 13 | 1 | 5 1 b | c | Lam- | 7 37 |
| | 2 | 2 | 9 56 b | d | meſſe | |
| | | 3 | | e | day. | |
| | 10 | 4 | 4 38 b | f | | |
| | | 5 | | g | | |
| | 18 | 6 | 3 37 b | A | | |
| 4 32 | 7 | 7 | 11 53 b | b | | 7 28 |
| | 15 | 8 | 6 53 a | c | | |
| | | 9 | | d | | |
| | 4 | 10 | 7 7 b | e | | |
| | 12 | 11 | 10 26 a | f | Saint | |
| | | 12 | | g | Lau- | |
| 4 50 | | 13 | | A | réce. | 7 10 |
| | 1 | 14 | 8 36 b | b | *Sun* | |
| | 9 | 15 | 11 45 a | c | *in* | |
| | 17 | 16 | 11 51 b | d | *Virgo* | |
| | 6 | 17 | 6 50 a | e | Aſſũ- | |
| | | 18 | | f | ptiõ | |
| 5 4 | 14 | 19 | 3 13 b | g | of | 6 56 |
| | | 20 | | A | Mary | |
| | 3 | 21 | 2 35 b | b | | |
| | 11 | 22 | 9 19 a | c | Saint | |
| | | 23 | | d | Bar- | |
| | | 24 | | e | thol. | |
| | 19 | 25 | 1 51 b | f | Dog | |
| | 8 | 26 | 0 3 a | g | daies | 6 54 |
| 5 15 | 16 | 27 | 7 10 a | A | end. | |
| | | 28 | | b | Iohn | |
| | 5 | 29 | 4 27 b | c | be- | |
| | 13 | 30 | 5 7 a | d | hea- | |
| | | 31 | | e | ded | |

September hath xxx. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gol. num. | | Moone change h. m. | | Bom. letter. | Fest. daies | Sunne settes. h. m |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | 2 | 1 | 2 | 0 b | f | | 6 28 |
| | 10 | 2 | 7 | 22 a | g | | |
| | | 3 | | | A | | |
| | 18 | 4 | 0 | 33 a | b | | |
| | 7 | 5 | 7 | 43 a | c | | |
| | | 6 | | | d | Nat. | 6 19 |
| 5 41 | 15 | 7 | 3 | 1 b | e | of | |
| | 4 | 8 | 8 | 29 a | f | Mary | |
| | | 9 | | | g | | |
| | 12 | 10 | 2 | 4 a | A | | |
| | | 11 | | | b | | |
| | 1 | 12 | 10 | 47 a | c | | 6 0 |
| | | 13 | | | d | | |
| | 17 9 | 14 | 7 | 55 a | e | *Sun* | |
| | | 15 | 11 | 21 b | f | *in* | |
| | 6 | 16 | 3 | 38 | g | *Libra* | |
| | 14 | 17 | | | A | | |
| | | 18 | 1 | 52 a | b | | |
| 6 16 | 3 | 19 | | | c | | 5 44 |
| | | 20 | 6 | 54 | d | | |
| | 11 | 21 | 1 | 45 a | e | | |
| | | 22 | | | f | | |
| | 19 | 23 | 0 | 44 a | g | | |
| | 8 | 24 | 8 | 55 a | A | | |
| | | 25 | | | b | Saint | |
| | 16 | 26 | 4 | 43 b | c | Mi- | 5 32 |
| 28 | 5 | 27 | 4 | 27 a | d | chael | |
| | | 28 | | | e | An- | |
| | 13 | 29 | 7 | 55 b | f | gel. | |
| | 2 | 30 | 6 | 11 a | g | | |

October hath 31 d

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gol. num | | Moone change h. m. | | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies | Sunne settes h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 7 42 | | 1 | | | A | | 6 18 |
| | 10 | 2 | 9 | 21 b | b | | |
| | 18 | 3 | 9 | 19 a | c | | |
| | | 4 | | | d | | |
| | 7 | 5 | 4 | 23 b | e | | |
| | 15 | 6 | 0 | 45 b | f | | |
| 6 54 | | 7 | | | g | | 5 6 |
| | 4 | 8 | 0 | 31 a | A | | |
| | | 9 | | | b | | |
| | 12 | 10 | 7 | 25 b | c | *Sun* | |
| | | 11 | | | d | | |
| | 1 | 12 | 11 | 54 | e | *Scor-* | |
| | 9 | 13 | 9 | 57 a | f | *pio.* | |
| 7 9 | 17 | 14 | 5 | 5 b | g | | |
| | 6 | 15 | 2 | 29 a | A | | 4 51 |
| | | 16 | | | b | | |
| | 14 | 17 | 3 | 27 b | c | Saint | |
| | | 18 | | | d | | |
| | 3 | 19 | 0 | 40 | e | *Luke.* | |
| | | 20 | | | f | | |
| 7 25 | 11 | 21 | 6 | 0 b | g | | 4 53 |
| | 19 | 22 | 10 | 50 | A | | |
| | | 23 | | | b | | |
| | 8 | 24 | 6 | 6 b | c | Si- | |
| | 16 | 25 | 4 | 58 a | d | mon | |
| 7 36 | | 26 | | | e | and | |
| | 5 | 27 | 7 | 27 b | f | Iude | 4 24 |
| | | 28 | | | g | | |
| | 13 | 29 | 1 | 11 b | A | | |
| | 2 | 30 | 9 | 50 b | b | | |
| | 10 | 31 | 10 | 9 a | c | | |

NOVEMBER

## November hath xxx daves.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gol. num | | Moone change h. m. | | | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies | Sunne settes h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 7 51 | | 1 | 6 | 36 | b | d | 1 | 4 9 |
| | 18 | 2 | 2 | 31 | a | e | saint. | |
| | 7 | 3 | | | | f | | |
| | | 4 | 1 | 3 | b | g | | |
| | 15 | 5 | | | | A | | |
| | | 6 | 6 | 48 | b | b | | |
| 7 59 | 4 | 7 | | | | c | | 4 1 |
| | | 8 | 0 | 15 | b | d | | |
| | 12 | 9 | 11 | 54 | a | e | | |
| | 1 | 10 | | | | f | Saint | |
| | | 11 | | | | g | Mar | |
| | 17 9 | 12 | 4 | 8 | a | A | tin. | |
| | | 13 | 8 | 8 | b | b | *Sun* | |
| 8 11 | 6 | 14 | 4 | 9 | b | c | *in* | |
| | 14 | 15 | 7 | 56 | a | d | *S git.* | 3 49 |
| | | 16 | | | | e | | |
| | | 17 | | | | f | | |
| | 3 | 18 | 6 | 21 | b | g | | |
| | 11 | 19 | 9 | 14 | a | A | | |
| | | 20 | | | | b | | |
| 8 24 | | 21 | 8 | 46 | b | c | | 3 36 |
| | 19 | 22 | 4 | 0 | a | d | | |
| | 8 | 23 | | | | e | | |
| | | 24 | 7 | 58 | b | f | | |
| | 16 | 25 | | | | g | | 3 30 |
| 8 30 | | 26 | | 9 | b | A | | |
| | 5 | 27 | 1 | 7 | a | b | | |
| | 13 | 28 | 8 | | | c | | |
| | | 29 | | 4 | b | d | Saint | |
| | 2 | 30 | 0 | 58 | b | e | An- | |
| | 10 | | 9 | | | | dro. | |

DECEMBER

## December hath xxxi. dayes.

| Sunne riseth h. m. | Gold. numb | | Moone change h. m. | Dom. letter. | Fest. daies | Sunne settes h. m. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 8 35 | 18 | 1 | 5 4 a | f | | 3 25 |
| | | 2 | | g | | |
| | 7 | 3 | 2 52 b | A | | |
| | 15 | 4 | 4 8 a | b | | |
| | | 5 | | c | | |
| | | 6 | | d | | 3 22 |
| 8 38 | | 7 | | e | | |
| | 4 | 7 | 1 40 b | e | Con- | |
| | 12 | 8 | 6 57 a | f | cep- | |
| | | 9 | | g | tion | |
| | 1 | 10 | 11 5 b | A | of | |
| | 9 | 11 | 6 17 a | b | *Mary* | |
| 8 39 | 17 | 12 | 5 42 b | c | *Sun in Capric.* | 3 21 |
| | 6 | 13 | 8 37 a | d | | |
| | | 14 | | e | | |
| | 14 | 15 | 2 40 a | f | Luci | |
| | | 16 | | g | Vir- | |
| | 3 | 17 | 10 50 a | A | gine. | |
| | | 18 | | b | | |
| 8 37 | 11 | 19 | 10 56 b | c | | 3 23 |
| | 19 | 20 | 7 3 a | d | | |
| | | 21 | | e | Tho- | |
| | 8 | 22 | 3 14 b | f | mas | |
| | | 23 | | g | Apo- | |
| | 16 | 24 | 1 40 b | A | stle. | |
| | 5 | 25 | 8 27 a | b | Nat. | |
| 8 34 | | 26 | | c | of | 3 26 |
| | 13 | 27 | 3 8 a | d | our | |
| | 2 | 28 | 0 43 a | e | Lord | |
| | 10 | 29 | 8 43 a | f | | |
| | | 30 | | g | | |
| | 18 | 31 | 5 8 b | A | | |

# THE ORDER OF THE BOOKES of the NEW TESTAMENT, vvith *the number of their Chapters.*

| | |
|---|---|
| THe Gospel written by Matthew, Chap. | 28 |
| By Marke | 16 |
| By Luke | 24 |
| By Iohn | 21 |
| The Actes of the Apostles. | 28 |

## THE EPISTLES.

| | |
|---|---|
| PAVL to the Romanes hath Chapters | 16 |
| The first to the Corinthians | 16 |
| The second to the Corinthians | 13 |
| To the Galatians | 16 |
| To the Ephesians | 6 |
| To the Philippians | 4 |
| To the Colossians | 4 |
| The first to the Thessalonians | 5 |
| The second to the Thessalonians | 3 |
| The first to Timothie | 6 |
| The second to Timothie | 4 |
| To Titus | 3 |
| To Philemon | 1 |
| The Epistle to the Hebrewes. | 13 |
| The Epistle of Iames | 5 |
| The first Epistle of Peter | 5 |
| The second Epistle of Peter | 3 |
| The first Epistle of Iohn | 5 |
| The second Epistle of Iohn | 5 |
| The third Epistle of Iohn | 1 |
| The Epistle of Iude | 1 |
| The Reuelation of Iohn | 22 |

# THE GOSPEL OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOVR *IESVS CHRIST.*

## According to Saint MATTHEVV.

### CHAP. I.

1. The genealogie of Christ. 18. His conception and birth. 23. His names.

THe Booke of the generation of Iesus Christ, the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham.

2 Abraham begate Isaac, and Isaac begate Iacob, and Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren.

3 And Iudas begate Phares, & Zara of Thamar, and Phares begate Esrom, and Esrom begate Aram.

4 And Aram begate Aminadab, and Aminadab begate Naasson, and Naasson begate Salmon.

5 And Salmon begate Boos of Rachab, and Boos begate Obed of Ruth, and Obed begate Iesse.

6 And Iesse begate Dauid the King, and Dauid the King begate Solomon of her that had beene the wife of Urias.

7 And Solomon begate Roboam, and Roboam begate Abia, and Abia begate Asa.

8 And Asa begate Iosaphat, and Iosaphat begate Ioram, and Ioram begate Ozias.

9 And Ozias begate Joatham, and Joatham be-

gate Achas, and Achas begate Ezekias.

10 And Ezekias begate Manasses, and Manasses begate Amon, and Amon begate Iosias.

11 And Iosias begate Iechonias, and his brethren, about the time they were caried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Iechonias begate Salathiel, & Salathiel begate Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud, and Abiud begate Eliakim, and Eliakim begate Azor.

14 And Azor begate Sadoc, and Sadoc begate Achim, and Achim begate Eliud.

15 And Eliud begate Eliazar and Eliazar begate Matthan, and Matthan begate Iacob.

16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the hueband of Marie, of whom was borne Iesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourteene generations: & from Dauid vntil the carrying away into Babylon are fourteene generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon vnto Christ, are fourteene generations.

18 ¶ Now the birth of Iesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Marie was espoused to Ioseph (before they came together) shee was found with Childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded to put her away priuilie.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph thou sonne of Dauid, feare not to take vnto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 And shee shall bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt

thalt call his Name Iesus: for hee shall saue his people from their sinnes.

22 (Now all this was done, ỹ it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

23 Behold a Virgin shall bee with Child, and shall bring forth a Sonne, & they shall call his Name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with vs)

24 Then Ioseph, beeing raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and toke vnto him his wife:

25 And knew her not, till shee had brought forth her first borne Son, and hee called his Name Iesus.

## CHAP. II.

1. The wise men come to Christ. 11. and worship him. 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt.

NOw when Iesus was borne in Bethlehem of Iudea, in the dayes of Herode the king, behold, there came Wise men from the East to Hierusalem,

2 Saying: Where is hee that is borne King of the Iewes? for wee haue seene his Starre in the East, and are come to worshippe him.

3 When Herode the King had heard these things, hee was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chiefe Priests & Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should bee borne.

5 And they said vnto him, In Bethlehem of Iudea: For thus it is written by the Prophet.

6 And thou Bethlehem in the land of Iuda, art not the least amõg ỹ Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come a Gouernour, that shall rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herode, when hee had priuilie called the

Wise men enquired of them diligently what time the Starre appeared:

8 And hee sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Goe, & search diligently for the young Childe, and when yee haue found him, bring mee word againe, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the King, they departed and loe, the Starre which they saw in the East, went before them, till it came and stood ouer where the young Childe was.

10 When they saw the Starre, they rejoyced with exceeding great joye.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young Childe with Marie his mother, and fell downe and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented vnto him giftes, gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

12 And beeing warned of God in a dreame, that they should not returne to Herod, they departed vnto their owne countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold the Angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the young Childe, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and bee thou there vntill I bring thee word: for Herode will seeke the young Childe to destroy him.

14 When hee arose, hee tooke the young Childe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there vntill ỹ death of Herode, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of ỹ Lord by the Prophet saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my son.

16 ¶ Then Herode, when hee saw that hee was mocked of the Wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent

sent forth, and slew all the Children that were in Bethlem, and in all the coastes thereof from two yeeres olde and under, according to the time, which hee had diligently enquired of the Wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremie the Prophet, saying,

18 In Rama was there a voyce heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her Children, and would not bee comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herode was dead, behold an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dreame to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young Child, and his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the Childes life.

21 And hee arose, and tooke the young Child, and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Judea, in ỹ roome of his father Herode, he was afraid to goe thither: notwithstãding, being warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And hee came and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, Hee shall bee called a Nazarene.

## CHAP. III.

1. Iohn preacheth. 4 His apparell and meate. 5. He baptizeth. 8. The fruites of repentance. 13. Christ is baptized.

IN those dayes came Iohn the Baptist, preaching in the wilderneſſe of Iudea.

2 And saying, Repent yee: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is hee that was spoken of by the Pro-
phet Esaias, saying, The voyce of one crying in the
wildernesse, Prepare yee the way of the Lord, make
his paths straight.

4 And the same Iohn had his rayment of camels
haire and a leatherne girdle about his loynes, and
his meate was locusts and wilde honey.

5 Then went out to him Hierusalem, and all Iu-
dea, and all the region round about Iordane.

6 And were baptized of him in Iordane, confes-
sing their sinnes.

7 ¶ But when hee saw many of the Pharisees and
Sadducees come to his Baptisme, he said vnto them,
O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee
from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.

9 And thinke not to say within your selues, Wee
haue Abraham to our Father: For I say vnto you,
that God is able of these stones, to raise vp Children
vnto Abraham.

10 And now also the axe is laid to the roote of the
trees: Therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth
good fruits, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

11 I indeed baptize you with water vnto repen-
tance: but hee ỹ commeth after mee, is mightier than
I, whose shoes I am not worthie to beare, hee shall
baptize you with the holie Ghost, and with fire.

12 Whose fanne is in his hand, & he will throughlie
purge his floore, & gather his wheate into the garner:
but he will burne vp the chaffe w̃ vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Ior-
dane, vnto Iohn, to bee baptized of him.

14 But Iohn forbade him, saying, I haue need to

bee

bee baptized of thee, and commest thou to mee?

15 And Jesus answering, said vnto him, Suffer it to bee so now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse: Then hee suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when hee was baptized, went vp straight way out of the water: and loe, the heauens were opened vnto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a Doue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voyce from heauen, saying, This is my beloued Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Christ is tempted, and ouercommeth. 17. Beginneth to preach. 18. Calleth some to be Disciples.

THen was Jesus led vp of the Spirit into the wildernesse, to bee tempted of the deuill.

2 And when he had fasted fourtie dayes, and fourtie nights hee was afterwards an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, hee said, If thou bee the Sonne of God, command that these stones bee made bread.

4 But hee answered and said, It is written, Man shall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the Deuill taketh him vp into the holie Citie, and setteth him on a pinacle of the Temple.

6 And sayth vnto him, If thou bee the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: For it is written, hee shall giue his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone.

7 Jesus said vnto him, It is written againe, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Againe the Deuill taketh him vp into an exceeding high mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glorie of them:

9 And sayeth vnto him, All these things will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worshippe mee.

10 Then saith Iesus vnto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him alone shalt thou serue.

11 Then the Deuill leaued him, and behold Angels came and ministred vnto him.

12 ¶ Now when Iesus had heard that Iohn was cast into prison, hee departed into Galilee.

13 And leauing Nazareth, hee came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is vpon the Sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalie:

14 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalie, by the way of the Sea beyond Iordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sate in darkenesse, saw great light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow of death light is sprung vp.

17 ¶ From that time Iesus began to preach & to say, Repent, for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

18 ¶ And Iesus walking by the Sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers)

19 And hee said vnto them, Follow mee: and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straight-way left their nettes and followed him.

21 And

21 And going on from thence, hee saw other two brethren, James the sonne of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father mending their nets: and hee called them.

22 And they immediatelie left the ship and their nets, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Jesus went about al Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome and healing all manner of sickenesse, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went throwout all Syria: & they brought vnto him all sicke people ý were taken with diuers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie, and hee healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, & from Decapolis, and from Hierusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordane.

---

## CHAP. V.

3. Who are blessed. 13. The Apostles are the salt and light of the vvorld.

AND seeing the multitudes, hee went vp into a Mountaine: and when hee was set, his Disciples came vnto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, & taught them, saying,

3 Blessed are the poore in spirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.

4 Blessed are they that mourne: for they shall bee comforted.

5 Blessed are the meeke: for they shall inherite the earth.

6 Blessed are they which doe hunger and thirst af-

after righteousnesse: for they shall bee filled.

7 Blessed are the mercifull: for they shall obtain mercie.

8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousnesse sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.

11 Blessed are yee, when men shall reuile you, and persecute you, and shall say all maner of euill against you falsely for my sake.

12 Reioyce and bee exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heauen: For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you:

13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: But if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it bee salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to bee cast out, and to bee troden vnder foote of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill, cannot bee hid.

15 Neither doe men light a candle, and put it vnder a bushell, but on a candle-sticke, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in heauen.

17 ¶ Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets, I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

18 For verilie I say vnto you, Till heauen and earth passe, one iote, or tittle, shall in no wise passe from the Law, till all bee fulfilled.

19 Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least

least commandements, and shall teach men so, hee shall bee called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall doe, and teach them, the same shall bee called great in the kingdome of heauen.

20 For I say vnto you, That except your righteousnes shall exceede the righteousnes of the Scribes and Pharisees, yee shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heauen.

21 ¶ Yee haue heard that it was said by them of olde time, Thou shalt not kill: and, whosoeuer shall kill, shall bee in danger of the judgement.

22 But I say vnto you, ỹ whosoeuer is angrie with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoeuer shall say to his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of ỹ counsell: but whosoeuer shall say, Thou foole, shall bee in danger of hell fire.

23 Therfore if thou bring thy gift to ỹ Altar, & there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee:

24 Leaue there thy gift before the Altar, and goe thy way, first bee reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thine aduersarie quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the aduersarie deliuer thee to the judge, and the judge deliuer thee to the officer, and thou bee cast into prison.

26 Verilie I say vnto thee, thou shalt by no meanes come out thence, till thou hast payed the vttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Yee haue heard that it was said by them of olde time, thou shalt not commit adulterie.

28 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adulterie with her alreadie in his heart.

29 And

29 And if thy right eye offend thee plucke it out, and caſt it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members ſhould periſh, and not that thy whole bodie ſhould bee caſt into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and caſt it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members ſhould periſh, and not that thy whole bodie ſhould bee caſt into hell.

31 It hath beene ſaid, Whoſoeuer ſhall put away his wife, let him giue her a writting of deuorcement.

32 But I ſay vnto you, that whoſoeuer ſhall put away his wife, ſauing for the cauſe of fornication, cauſeth her to commit adulterie: and whoſoeuer ſhall marrie her that is diuorced, committeth adulterie.

33 ¶ Againe, ye haue heard that it hath beene ſaid by them of olde time, Thou ſhalt not forſweare thy ſelfe, but ſhalt performe vnto the Lord thine oathes.

34 But I ſay vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is Gods throne.

35 Nor by earth, for it is his foote-ſtoole: neither by Hieruſalem, for it is the citie of the great King.

36 Neither ſhalt thou ſweare by thine head, becauſe thou canſt not make one haire white or blacke.

37 But let your communication bee Yea, yea, Nay, nay: for whatſoeuer is more than theſe, commeth of euill.

38 ¶ Yee haue heard that it hath beene ſaid, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But I ſay vnto you, that ye reſiſt not euill: but whoſoeuer ſhall ſmite thee on the right cheeke, turne to him the other alſo.

40 And if any man will ſue thee at the Law, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloake alſo,

41 And

41 And whosoeuer shall compell thée to goe a mile, goe with him twaine.

42 Giue to him that asketh thée: and from him that would borrow of thée, turne not thou away.

43 ¶ Yée haue heard that it hath bæne said, That thou shalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemie.

44 But I say vnto you, Loue your enemies: blesse them that curse you, doe good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully vse you, and persecute you.

45 That yée may bée the children of your father which is in heauen: for hæ maketh the Sunne to rise on the euill and on the good, and sendeth raine on the just, and on the vnjust.

46 For if yæ loue them that loue you, what reward haue yee? Doe not euen the Publicanes the same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren onlie, what doe you more than others? Doe not euen Publicanes so?

48 Bée yée therefore perfect, euen as your Father which is in heauen is perfect.

## CHAP. VI.

1. Of almes. 5. Prayer. 14. Forgiuing. 19. Our treasure. 24. GOD and Mammon.

TAke heed that yée doe not your almes before men, to bée seene of them: otherwise yee haue no reward of your Father which is in heauen.

2 Therefore when thou doest thine almes, doe not sound a trumpet before thæ, as the hypocrites doe in the Synagogues, and in the streetes, that they may haue glorie of men. Verilie, I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth.

4 That thy almes may be in secret: And thy father which seeth in secret, himself shal reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not bee as the Hypocrites are: for they loue to pray standing in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streetes, that they may bee seene of men. Verilie I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray to thy father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when yee pray, vse not vaine repetitions, as the Heathen doe: for they thinke that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Bee not yee therefore like vnto them: for your Father knoweth what things yee haue neede of, before yee aske him.

9 After this manner therefore pray yee: Our Father which art in heauen, hallowed bee thy Name.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will bee done, in earth, as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our daylie bread.

12 And forgiue vs our debts, as wee forgiue our debters.

13 And lead vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill: For thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glorie, For euer Amen.

14 For if yee forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Father will also forgiue you.

15 But if yee forgiue not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgiue your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreouer, when ye fast, be not as the Hypocrites, of sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces,

faces, that they may appeare vnto men to fast: Verilie, I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, annoint thine head, and wash thy face,

18 That thou appeare not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openlie.

19 ¶ Lay not vp for your selues treasures vpon earth, where moth and rust doeth corrupt, and where Thieues doe not breake thorow, and steale.

20 But lay vp for your selues treasures in heauen, where neither moth nor rust doeth corrupt, and where Thieues doe not breake thorow nor steale.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart bee also.

22 The light of the bodie is the eye: If therefore thy eye be single, thy whole bodie shalbe full of light.

23 But if thine eye bee euill, thy whole bodie shall bee full of darknesse, If therefore the light that is in thee bee darknesse, how great is that darknesse?

24 ¶ No man can serue two Masters: for either hee will hate the one and loue the other, or else hee will hold to the one and despise the other. Yee can not serue God and Mammon.

25 Therefore I say vnto you. Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eate or what ye shall drinke, nor yet for your bodie what yee shall put on: Is not the life more than meate? and the bodie than raiment?

26 Behold the fowles of the aire: for they sow not, neither doe they reape, nor gather into barnes, yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

27 Which

27 Which of you, by taking thought, can ad one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why take yee thought for rayment? Co sider the Lillies of the field how they grow: they toy not, neither doe they spinne:

29 And yet I say vnto you, that euen Solom in all his glorie, was not arrayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore, if God so cloath the graſſe of ỹ fie which to day is, & to morrow is cast into ỹ ouen: sh hæ not much more cloathe you, O yee of little faith

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What sh wæ eate? or what shall wee drinke? or wherewi shall wee bee cloathed?

32 (For after all these thinges doe the Gentl seeke.) For your heauenly Father knoweth that y haue neede of all these things.

33 But seeke ye first ỹ kingdome of God, & his righ teousnes, & all these things shall be added vnto yo

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: f the morrow shall take thought for the thinges of selfe: sufficient vnto the day is the euill thereof.

## CHAP. VII.

1. Christ reproueth rash judgement. 6. Forbiddet to cast holy thinges to dogs. 13. The wide an straite gate.

IUdge not, that yee bee not judged.

2 For with what judgement yee iudge, yæ sha bee judged: and with what measure yee mete, it sha bæ measured to you againe.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in th brothers eye, but considerest not the beame that is i thine owne eye?

4 Or howe wilt thou say to thy brother, Let mee pull out the mote out of thine eye, and beholde, a beame is in thine owne eye?

5 Thou hypocrite first cast out the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Giue not ye which is holy vnto the dogs: neither cast yee your pearles before swine: lest they trample them vnder their feete, and turne againe and rent you.

7 ¶ Aske, and it shall bee giuen you: seeke, and yee shall finde: knocke, and it shall bee opened vnto you.

8 For euerie one that asketh, receiueth: and hee that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall bee opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his sonne aske bread, will hee giue him a stone?

10 Or if he aske a fish will hee giue him a serpent?

11 If yee then being euill, know how to giue good gifts vnto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heauen, giue good gifts to them that aske him?

12 Therefore all thinges whatsoeuer yee would that men should doe to you, doe ye euen so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

13 ¶ Enter yee in at the straite gate, for wide is the gate and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there bee which goe in thereat:

14 Because straite is the gate, & narrow is the way, which leadeth vnto life, and few there bee that find it.

15 ¶ Beware of false Prophetes which come to you in sheepes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruites. Doe men

gather grapes of thornes? or figs of thistles?

17 Euen so, euery good tree bringeth forth good fruite: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruite.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth euill fruite, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruite.

19 Euerie tree that bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not euerie one that sayth vnto mee, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heauen, but hee that doeth the will of my Father which is in heauen.

22 Manie will say to mee in that day, Lord, Lord, haue wee not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name, haue wee cast out deuils? and in thy Name done manie wonderfull workes?

23 And then will I professe vnto them, I neuer knew you: depart from me, yee that worke iniquitie.

24 ¶ Therefore whosoeuer heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him vnto a wise man, which built his house vpon a rocke.

25 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded vpon a rocke.

26 And euerie one that heareth these sayinges of mine, and doeth them not, shall bee likened vnto a foolish man, that built his house vpon the sand:

27 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beate vpon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine.

29 For hee taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

## CHAP. VIII.

2. Christ cleanseth the Leper. 28. The deuils driuen out of two men, 31. goe into the Swine.

WHen hee was come downe from the Mountaine, great multitudes followed him.

2 And behold, there came a leper, and worshipped him saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make mee cleane.

3 And Iesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Iesus sayth vnto him, See thou tell no man, but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimonie vnto them.

5 ¶ And when Iesus was entered into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him.

6 And saying, Lord, my seruant lyeth at home sicke of the palsie, and grieuously tormented.

7 And Iesus sayth vnto him, I will come, and heale him.

8 The Centurion answered, and said, Lord, I am not worthie y thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word only, and my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For I am a man vnder authoritie, hauing souldiers vnder mee: and I say to this man, Goe, and he goeth: and to another Come, and hee commeth: and to my seruant, doe this, and hee doeth it.

10 When Iesus heard it, hee marueiled, and said to them that followed, Verilie I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say vnto you, That many shall come from the East, and West, and shall sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of

heauen.

12 But the children of the kingdome shall bee ca
out into vtter darknesse: there shall bee weeping a
gnashing of teeth.

13 And Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Goe th
way, and as thou hast beleeued, so bee it done vn
thee, And the seruant was healed the selfesame hou

14 ¶ And when Iesus was come into Pete
house, hee saw his wiues mother laid, and sicke o
Feuer.

15 And hee touched her hand, and the Feuer le
her, and shee arose, and ministred vnto them.

16 ¶ When the Euen was come, they brough
vnto him manie that were possessed with deuils, an
hee cast out the spirits with his word, and hee heal
all that were sicke.

17 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoke
by Esaias the Prophet, saying, Himselfe tooke our i
firmities, and bare our sicknesses,

18 ¶ Now when Iesus saw great multitudes
bout him, hee gaue commandement to depart vnto t
other side.

19 And a certaine Scribe came, and said vnto hi
Master, I will follow thee whithersoeuer thou goes

20 And Iesus sayth vnto him, The Foxes ha
holes, and the birdes of the aire haue nests: but t
Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his Disciples said vnto hi
Lord, suffer mee first to goe and burie my father.

22 But Iesus sayd vnto him, Follow mee, and l
the dead burie their dead.

23 ¶ And when hee was entered into a Ship, h
Disciples followed him.

24 An

24 And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the shippe was couered with the waues: but hee was asleepe.

25 And his Disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, saue vs: wee perish.

26 And hee sayth vnto them, Why are yee fearefull, O ye of little faith? Then hee arose and rebuked the winds, and the sea, and there was a great calme.

27 But the men marueiled, saying, What manner of man is this, that euen the winds and the sea, obey him?

28 ¶ And when hee was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, comming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might passe by that way.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, What haue wee to doe with thee, Iesus thou Sonne of God? art thou come to torment vs before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them, an herde of manie Swine feeding.

31 So the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe away into the herde of swine.

32 And he said vnto them, Goe. And whē they were come out, they went into the herde of Swine: and behold, the whole herde of Swine ran violentlie downe a steepe place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their wayes into the citie, and tolde euerie thing and what was befallen to the possessed of the deuils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came out to meete Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him, that hee would depart out of their coastes.

2. Christe cureth the palsie. 9. Calleth Matthew. 10. Eateth with the publicanes and sinners.

AND hee entered into a ship, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

2 And behold, they brought to him a man sicke of the palsie, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, bee of good cheare, thy sinnes bee forgiuen thee.

3 And behold, certaine of the Scribes said within themselues, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore thinke yee euil in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise and walke?

6 But that yee may know that the Sonne of Man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (then sayth he to the sicke of the palsie,) Arise take vp thy bedde, and gde vnto thine house.

7 And hee arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw it, they marueiled, and glorified God, which hath giuē such power vnto men.

9 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, hee saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receit of custome: and hee sayth vnto him, Follow mee. And he arose and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to passe, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, beholde, many Publicanes and sinners, came and sate downe with him, and his Disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they sayde vnto his Disciples, Why eateth your Master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, hee said vnto them, They y be whole neede not a Physician, but they that are sicke.

13 But

13 But goe yee, and learne what that meaneth, I will haue mercie, and not sacrifice: I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the Disciples of Iohn, saying, Why doe wee and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy Disciples fast not?

15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourne, as long as the bride-groome is with them? But the dayes will come when the bride-groome shalbe taken from them, & then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth vnto an olde garment: for that which is put to fill it vp, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither doe men put new wine into olde bottels: else the bottels breake, and the wine runneth out, and the bottels perish: but they put new wine into new bottels, and both are preserued.

18 ¶ While hee spake these things vnto them, behold there came a certaine Ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is euen now dead: but come, and lay thine hand vpon her and shee shall liue.

19 And Iesus arose, and followed him, and so did his Disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For shee saide within her selfe, If I may touch his garment, I shall bee whole.

22 But Iesus turned him about, and when hee saw her, hee said, Daughter, bee of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre.)

23 And when Iesus came into the Rulers house,

and saw the minstrels & the people making a noyse,
24 Hee said vnto them, Give place for the maide is
not dead: but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne
25 But when the people were put forth, hee went
in, and tooke her by the hand, and the Maide arose.
26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all that
land.
27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blind
men, followed him, crying, and saying, Thou Sonne
of Dauid haue mercie on vs.
28 And when hee was come into the house, the
blind men came to him: and Jesus sayth vnto them,
Beleeue yee that I am able to doe this? They said vnto
to him, Yea, Lord.
29 Then touched hee their eyes, saying, According
to your faith, bee it vnto you.
30 And their eyes were opened: and Jesus straitly
charged them, saying, See that no man know it.
31 But they, when they were departed, spread a-
broad his fame in all that countrey.
32 ¶ As they went out, behold, they brought to
him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill.
33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumbe
spake, and the multitudes marueiled, saying, It was
neuer so seene in Israel.
34 But the Pharisees said, Hee casteth out deuils
through the prince of the deuils.
35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villa-
ges, teaching in their Synagogues and preaching the
Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickneſſe,
and euerie disease among the people.
36 ¶ But when he saw the multitude: hee was mo-
ued with compassiõ on them, because they fainted and
were

were scattred abroad, as sheepe hauing no shepheard.

37 Then sayth hee vnto his Disciples, The haruest truelie is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray yee therefore the Lord of the Haruest, that hee will send forth labourers into his Haruest.

## CHAP. X.

1. The Apostles are sent to doe miracles. 5. and to preach.

AND when hee had called vnto him his twelue Disciples, he gaue them power against vncleane spirites, to cast them out, and to heale all manner of sickenesse, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these: The first: Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the sonne of Zebedee, and John his brother.

3 Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas and Matthew the Publicane, James the sonne of Alpheus, and Lebbeus whose surname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Cannaanite, and Judas Iscariote, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentles, & into any citie of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

7 And as yee goe, preach, saying, The kingdome of heauen is at hand,

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out deuils, freelie yee haue receiued, freelie giue.

9 Prouide neither gold, nor siluer, nor brasse in your purses.

10 Nor

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coate
neither shoes, nor yet staues: (for the worke-man
worthie of his wages.)

11 And into whatsoeuer citie or towne yée sha
enter, enquire who in it is worthie, and there abi
till yee goe thence.

12 And when yée come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house bee worthie, let your pea
come vpon it: but if it bee not worthie let your pea
returne to you.

14 And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor hea
your words: when yee depart out of that house, or c
tie, shake off the dust of your feete.

15 Verilie I say vnto you, it shall bee more tolera
ble for the land of Sodome and Gomorrha in the da
of judgement, than for that citie.

16 ¶ Beholde, I send you foorth as sheepe in th
midst of wolues: bee yée therefore wise as Serpents
and harmlesse as Doues.

17 But beware of men: for they will deliuer yo
vp to the Counsels, and they will scourge you in thei
Synagogues:

18 And yée shall bee brought before Gouernours
and Kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them,
and the Gentiles.

19 But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought,
how or what yée shall speake: for it shall bee giuen yo
in that houre what yée shall speake.

20 For it is not yée that speake, but the Spirit o
your Father which speaketh in you.

21 And the brother shall deliuer vp the brother t
death, and the father the child: and the children shall
rise vp against their parents, and cause them to be put
to death.

22 And

22 And ye shall bee hated of all men for my Names sake: but hee that endureth to the end shall bee saued.

23 But when they persecute you in this Citie, flee ye into another: For verilie I say vnto you, ye shall not haue gone ouer the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of Man bee come.

24 The Disciple is not aboue his Master, nor the seruant aboue his Lord.

25 It is enough for the Disciple that hee bee as his Master, and the seruant as his Lord: If they haue called the Master of the house Beelzebub, howe much more shall they call them of his house-holde?

26 Feare them not therefore: for there is nothing couered that shall not bee reuealed: and hid, that shall not bee knowne.

27 What I tell you in darkneſſe, that speake yee in light: and what yee heare in the eare, that preach ye vpon the house toppes.

28 And feare them not which kill the bodie, but are not able to kill the soule: but rather feare him which is able to destroy both soule and bodie in hell.

29 Are not two sparrowes solde for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall to the ground without your Father.

30 But the verie haires of your head are al numbred.

31 Feare yee not therefore, yee are of more value than many sparrowes.

32 Whosoeuer therefore shall confesse mee before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen.

33 But whosoeuer shall denie mee before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heauē.

34 Thinke not that I am come to send peace on earth:

earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes shall bee they of his owne house-hold.

37 Hee that loueth father or mother more than mee, is not worthie of mee: and hee that loueth sonne or daughter more than mee, is not worthie of mee.

38 And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after mee, is not worthie of mee.

39 Hee that findeth his life, shall lose it; and hee that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

40 ¶ Hee that receiueth you, receiueth mee: and hee that receiueth mee, receiueth him that sent mee.

41 Hee that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall receiue a Prophets reward: and he that receiueth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receiue a righteous mans reward.

42 And whosoeuer shall giue to drinke vnto one of these little ones, a cup of colde water onelie, in the name of a Disciple, verilie I say vnto you, hee shall in no wise lose his reward:

## CHAP. XI.

1. Iohn sendeth to Christ. 7. Christs answere.

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had made an end of commanding his twelue Disciples, he departed thence, to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 Nowe when Iohn had heard in the prison the workes of Christ, hee sent two of his Disciples,

3 And saide vnto him, Art thou hee that should come? or doe wee looke for another?

4 Jesus answered, and saide vnto them, Goe and shewe Iohn againe those thinges which yee doe heare and see:

5 The blind receiue their sight, and the lame walke, the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare, the dead are raised vp, and the poore haue the Gospel preached to them.

6 And blessed is hee whosoeuer shall not bee offended in mee.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus beganne to say vnto the multitudes concerning Iohn, What went yee out into the Wildernesse to see? A reede shaken with the wind?

8 But what went yee out for to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? Behold, they that weare soft cloathing are in Kings houses.

9 But what went yee out for to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say vnto you, more than a Prophet.

10 For this is hee, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my Messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verilie I say vnto you, Among them that are borne of women, there hath not risen a greater than Iohn the Baptist: Notwithstanding, hee that is least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater than hee.

12 And from the dayes of Iohn the Baptist, vntill now, the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the Prophets, and the Lawe prophesied vntill Iohn.

14 And if yee will receiue it, this is Elias which was for to come.

15 Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 ¶ But

16 ¶ But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto children sitting in the Markets, and calling vnto their fellowes.

17 And saying, Wee haue piped vnto you, and yee haue not danced: wee haue mourned vnto you, and yee haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, Hee hath a deuill.

19 The Sonne of Man came eating and drinking; and they say Behold a man, gluttenous, and a wine bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners: but wisedome is iustified of her children.

20 ¶ Then began he to vpbraid the cities wherein most of his mightie workes were done, because they repented not.

21 Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mightie workes which were done in you, had beene done in Tyre and Sidon, they would haue repented long agoe in sackcloath and Ashes.

22 But I say vnto you, It shall bee more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of Iudgement, than for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which are exalted vnto heauen, shalt bee brought downe to hell: For if the workes which haue beene done in thee, had beene done in Sodome, it would haue remained vntill this day.

24 But I say vnto you, That it shall bee more tolerable for the land of Sodome, in the day of iudgement, than for thee.

25 ¶ At that time Iesus answered, and said, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these thinges from the wise, and

prudent

prudent, and hast reuealed them vnto babes.

26 Euen so, Father for it seemeth good in thy sight.

27 All thinges are deliuered vnto mee of my Father: and no man knoweth the Sonne but the Father: neither knoweth anie man the Father, saue the Son, and hee to whomsoeuer the Sonne will reueale him.

28 ¶ Come vnto mee all yee that labour, and are heauie laden, and I will giue you rest.

29 Take my yoke vpon you, and learne of mee, for I am meeke and lowlie in heart: and yee shall finde rest vnto your selues.

30 For my yoke is easie and my burden is light.

## CHAP. XII.

1. The Disciples plucke the eares of corne on the Sabbath. 31. Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.

AT that time, Iesus went on the Sabbath day thorow the Corne, and his Disciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of Corne, and to eate.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said vnto him, Behold, thy Disciples doe that which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath day.

3 But hee saide vnto them, Haue yee not reade what Dauid did when hee was an hungered, and they that were with him,

4 How hee entred into the house of God, and did eate the shew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him, but onelie for the Priests.

5 Or haue yee not reade in the Law, how that on the Sabbath dayes the Priestes in the Temple prophane the Sabbath, and are blamelesse?

6 But

6 But I say vnto you, That in this place is
greater than the Temple.

7 But if yee had knowne what this meaneth,
will haue mercie and not sacrifice, yee would
haue condemned the guiltlesse.

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord euen of the Sa
bath day.

9 And when hee was departed thence, hee w
into their Synagogue.

10 ¶ And beholde, there was a man which
his hand whithered, and they asked him, saying,
it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath dayes? that t
might accuse him.

11 And hee said vnto them, What man shall th
bee among you, that shall haue one sheepe, and if it
into a pit on the Sabbath day, will hee not lay hold
it, and lift it out.

12 How much then is a man better than a Shee
Wherefore is it not lawfull to doe well on the Sa
bath dayes.

13 Then saith hee to the man, Stretch forth th
hand: and hee stretched it forth, and it was reste
whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and held
counsell against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when Iesus knew it, hee with-drew hi
selfe thence: and great multitudes followed him, a
hee healed them all,

16 And charged them, that they should not ma
him knowne.

17 That it might bee fulfilled which was spok
by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

18 Behold, my seruant whom I haue chosen,
belo

beloued, in whom my soule is well pleased: I will put my Spirit vpon him, and hee shall shewe iudgement to the Gentiles.

19 Hee shall not striue nor cry, neither shall any man heare his voyce in the streetes.

20 A bruised reede shall hee not breake, and smoaking flaxe shall hee not quench, till hee send forth iudgement vnto victorie.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

22 Then was brought vnto him one possessed with a deuill, blind, and dumbe, and hee healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumbe both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and sayd, Is this the Sonne of Dauid?

24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they saide This Fellow doeth not cast out deuils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the deuils.

25 And Iesus knew their thoughts, and said vnto them, Euerie kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and euerie citie or house diuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 And if Sathan cast out Sathan, hee is diuided against himselfe: how shall then his kingdome stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shall bee your Iudges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdome of heauen is come vnto you.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoyle his goods, except hee first binde the strong man? and then hee spoyle his house.

30 Hee that is not with mee, is against mee: and hee that gathereth not with mee, scattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I say vnto you, All manner of sinne and blasphemie shall bee forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemie against the holie Ghost shall not bee forgiuen vnto men.

32 And whosoeuer speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shalbe forgiuen him: but whosoeuer speaketh against the holie Ghost, it shall not bee forgiuen him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruite good; Or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruite corrupt; For the tree is knowne by his fruite.

34 O generation of vipers, howe can yee, being euill, speake good things? For out of aboundance of the heart, the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an euill man out of the euill treasure, bringeth forth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, That euery idle word that men shall speake, they shall giue accompt thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy wordes thou shalt bee justified, and by thy words thou shalt bee condemned.

38 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes, and of the Pharisees, answered, saying, Master, wee would see a signe from thee.

39 But hee answered, and said to them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe bee giuen to it, but the signe of the Prophet Jonas.

40 For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales bellie: so shall the Sonne of Man bee three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineue shall rise in judgement with

with this generation, and shall condemne it because they repented at the preaching of Jonas: and behold a greater than Jonas is heere.

42 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for shee came from the vttermost parts of the earth to heare the wisedome of Solomon: and beholde a greater than Solomon is heere.

43 When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, hee walketh through drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then hee sayth, I will returne into mine house from whence I came out: And when hee is come: hee findeth it emptie, swept and garnished.

45 Then goeth hee, and taketh with him seuen other spirits more wicked than himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: And the last state of that man is worse than the first. Euen so shall it bee also vnto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While hee yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him.

47 Then one said vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee.

48 But hee answered, and said vnto him that tolde him, Who is my mother? And who are my brethren?

49 And hee stretched forth his hand toward his Disciples, and saide, Beholde, my mother and my brethren!

50 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of my Father, which is in heauen, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

## CHAP. XIII.

3. Of the ſower and the ſeede. 24. Diuers other parables. 34. Why Chriſt ſpake in parables.

THe ſame day went Ieſus out of the houſe, and ſate by the ſea ſide.

2 And great multitudes were gathered togethe vnto him, ſo that hee went into a Shippe, and ſate and the whole multitude ſtood on the ſhore.

3 And hee ſpake manie things vnto them in para bles, ſaying, Behold, a ſower went forth to ſow:

4 And whē he ſowed, ſome ſeedes fell by the waye ſide, and the fowles came and deuoured them vp.

5 Some fell vpon ſtonie places, where they had no much earth: and forth-with they ſprung vp, becau they had no deepneſſe of earth.

6 And when the Sun was vp, they were ſcorche and becauſe they had no roote, they withered away.

7 And ſome fell among thornes, and the thorne ſprung vp, and choked them.

8 But others fell on good ground, and brought fort fruite, ſome an hundreth folde, ſome thirtie folde.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And the Diſciples came, and ſaide vnto him Why ſpeakeſt thou vnto vs in parables?

11 Hee anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Becauſe i is giuen vnto you to know the myſteries of the king dome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

12 For whoſoeuer hath, to him ſhall be giuen, an hee ſhall haue more aboundance: but whoſoeuer ha not, from him ſhall be taken away, euen that he hat

13 Therefore ſpeake I to them in parables: b cauſe ſeeing, they ſee not: and hearing, they heare no neither doe they vnderſtand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Eſaias

which saith, By hearing ye shall heare, & shall not vnderstand: and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, & their eares are dull of hearing & their eyes they haue closed, lest at any time they should see w̄ their eyes, & heare with their eares, & should vnderstand with their heart, and should bee conuerted, and I should heale them.

16 And blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your eares for they heare.

17 For verilie I say vnto you, y̆ many Prophets, and righteous men haue desired to see those thinges which yee see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which yee heare, & haue not heard them.

18 ¶ Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the worde of the kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, then commeth the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sowne in his heart: this is hee which receiueth seede by the way side.

20 But hee that receiued the seed into stonie places, the same is hee that heareth the worde, and anone with ioye receiueth it.

21 Yet hath hee not roote in himselfe, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by hee is offended.

22 Hee also that receiueth seede among thornes, is hee that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choke the worde, and hee becommeth vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued seed into the good ground, is hee that heareth the worde, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruite, and bringeth forth some an hundreth folde, some sixtie, some thirtie.

24 ¶ Another parable put hee forth vnto them saying, The Kingdome of heauen is likened vnto man which sowed good seede in his fielde.

25 But while the men slept, his enemie came an sowed tares among the Wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and brough forth fruite, then appeared the tare also.

27 So the seruantes of the house-holder came an said vnto him, Sir, didst not thou sowe seede in th fielde? from whence then hath it tares?

28 Hee said vnto them, An enemie hath done thi The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that w goe and gather them vp?

29 But hee said, Nay: lest while yee gather vp t tares, yee roote vp also the Wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together vntill the harueſt: & in t time of harueſt I will say to the reapers, Gather y together first the tares and binde them in bundles burne them: but gather the Wheat into my barne.

31 ¶ Another parable put hee forth vnto them saying, The Kingdome of heauen is like to a graine mustard-seed, which a man tooke, & sowed in his fiel

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but wh it is growne, it is the greatest among herbes, and b commeth a tree, so that the birdes of the aire come a lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ Another parable spake hee vnto them, T Kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a w man tooke and hid in three measures of meale, till t whole was leauened.

34 All these thinges spake Iesus vnto the mult tude in parables, and without a parable spake hee n vnto them.

35 Th

35 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, I will vtter things which hath beene kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Iesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house, & his Disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs this parable of the tares of the field.

37 Hee answered, and said vnto them, Hee that soweth the good seede, is the Sonne of man,

38 The field is the world: The good seede are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

39 The enemie that sowed them, is the deuill. The harueſt is the end of the world. And the reapers are the Angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire, so shall it bee in the end of this world.

41 The Sonne of Man shall send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie.

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall bee wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the Sunne, in the kingdome of their Father. Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto treasure hidde in a field: the which when a man hath found, hee hideth, and for ioye thereof goeth and selleth all that hee hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a Merchant man seeking goodly pearles:

46 Who when hee had found one pearle of great price, he went and sold all that hee had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe, the Kingdome of heauen is like vnto a net that was cast into the Sea, and gathered of euerie kind:

48 Which when it was full, they drew to shore and sate downe, and gathered the good in vessels but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it bee at the ende of the worlde: the Angels shall come forth, and seuer the wicked from among the just.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire there shall bee wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith vnto them, Haue yee vnderstood all these things? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is instructed vnto the Kingdome of Heauen, is like vnto a man that is an house-holder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and olde.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these parables, hee departed thence.

54 And when hee was come into his owne Countrey, hee taught them in their Synagogues, insomuch that they were astonished, and saide, Whence hath this man this wisedome, and these mightie workes?

55 Is not this the Carpenters Sonne? Is not his mother called Marie? and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56 And his Sisters, are they not all with vs? Whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said vnto them, A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne Countrey, and in his owne house.

58 And hee did not many mightie workes there because of their vnbeliefe.

CHA

# CHAP. XIIII.

1. Herods opinion of Christ. 10. Iohn Baptist beheaded. 17. Fiue loaues and two fishes.

AT that time, Herode the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus,

2 And said vnto his seruants, This is Iohn the Baptist, hee is risen from the dead, and therefore mightie workes doe shew forth themselues in him.

3 ¶ For Herod had laide hold on Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.

4 For Iohn said vnto him, It is not lawfull for thee to haue her.

5 And when hee would haue put him to death, hee feared the multitude, because they counted him as a Prophet.

6 But when Herodes birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herode.

7 Wherevnto hee promised with an oath, to giue her whatsoeuer shee would aske.

8 And shee, beeing before instructed of her mother, said, Giue mee heere Iohn Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorie: neuertheless for the oathes sake, and them which sate with him at meate, hee commanded it to bee giuen her.

10 And hee sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger and giuen to the Damsel: and shee brought it to her mother.

12 And his Disciples came, and toke vp the bodie, and buried it, and went, and tolde Iesus.

13 ¶ When Iesus heard it, hee departed thence by ship, into a Desert place apart: & when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foote, out of the cities.

14 And

14 And Iesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moued with compassion toward them: and hee healed their sicke.

15 ¶ And when it was euening, his Disciples came to him, saying, This is a desart place, and the time now past: sende the multitude away, that they may goe into the villages, and buy themselues victuals.

16 But Iesus said vnto them, They neede not depart: giue them to eate.

17 And they saide vnto him, Wee haue heere but fiue loaues, and two fishes.

18 Hee said, Bring them hither to mee.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grasse, and toke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes: and loking vp to heauen he blessed, and brake and gaue the loaues to his Disciples, and the Disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eate, and were filled: and they toke vp of the fragments that remained twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were aboue fiue thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Iesus constrained his Disciples to get into a shippe, and to goe before him vnto the other side, while hee sent the multitudes away.

23 And when hee had sent the multitudes away, he went vp into a Mountaine apart to pray, and when the euening was come, hee was there alone:

24 But the shippe was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waues: for the winde was contrarie.

25 And in the fourth Watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the Sea.

26 And when the Disciples saw him walking on

the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit: and they cryed out for feare.

27 But straightway Jesus spake vnto them, saying, Bee of good cheare, It is I, bee not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him, saying, Lord, if it be thou, bid mee come vnto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the Shippe, hee walked on the water to goe to Jesus.

30 But when hee saw the wind boisterous, he was afraide: and beginning to sinke, hee cryed, saying, Lord, saue mee.

31 And immediatelie Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said vnto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the Shippe, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the Shippe, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth, thou art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone ouer, they came into the land of Genesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought him all that were diseased.

36 And besought him that they might onelie touch the hemme of his garment: and as manie as touched, were made perfectly whole.

## CHAP. XV.

3. Gods commandements and mens traditions. 18. What defileth a man, and what not.

THen came to Jesus Scribes, & Pharisees which

were

were of Hierusalem, saying,

2 Why doe thy Disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eate bread.

3 But hee answered and said vnto them, Why do you also transgresse the Commandement of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother, And hee that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

5 But yee say, Whosoeuer shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift by whatsoeuer thou mightest bee profited by mee.

6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall bee free. Thus haue yee made the Commandement of God of none effect, by your tradition.

7 Yee Hypocrites, well did Esaias prophecie of you, saying,

8 This people draweth nigh vnto mee with their mouth, and honoureth mee with their lips: but their heart is farre from mee.

9 But in vaine they doe worshippe mee, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

10 ¶ And hee called the multitude, and sayd vnto them, Heare and vnderstand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man.

12 Then came his Disciples, and saide vnto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

13 But he answered, and said, Euery plant which my heauenly Father hath not planted, shall bee roote vp.

14

14 Let them alone: they bee blind leaders of the blind. And if the blinde leade the blind both shall fall into the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Declare vnto vs this parable.

16 And Iesus said, Are yee also yet without vnderstanding?

17 Doe not yee yet vnderstand that whatsoeuer entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the bellie, and is cast into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 For out of the heart proceede euill thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thifts, false witnesse, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man: But to eate with vnwashen hands defileth not the man.

21 ¶ Then Iesus went thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cryed vnto him, saying, Haue mercie on mee, O Lord, thou Sonne of Dauid, my daughter is grieuously vexed with a deuill.

23 But hee answered her not a word, and his Disciples came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for shee cryeth after vs.

24 But hee answered and said, I am not sent but vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

25 Then came shee and worshipped him, saying, Lord, helpe mee.

26 But hee answered, and said, It is not meete to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to the dogs.

27 And she said, Trueth, Lord, yet the dogs eate of the

the crummes which fall from their Masters table.
28 Then Jesus answered, and saide vnto her, O woman! great is thy faith; bee it vnto thee euen as thou wilt. And her Daughter was made whole the verie houre.
29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh vnto the Sea of Galilee, and went vp into a Mountaine, and sate downe there.
30 And great multitudes came vnto him, hauing with them those that were lame, blind, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them downe at Jesus feete, and hee healed them.
31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred, when they saw the dumbe to speake, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walke, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.
32 ¶ Then Jesus called his Disciples vnto him, and said, I haue compassion on the multitude, because they continue with mee now three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.
33 And his Disciples say vnto him, Whence should wee haue so much bread in the wildernesse, as to fill so great a multitude.
34 And Jesus saith vnto them, How many loaues haue ye? And they said, Seauen, and a few litle fishes.
35 And hee commanded the multitude to sit downe on the ground.
36 And hee tooke the seauen loaues, and the fishes, and gaue thankes, and brake them, and gaue to his Disciples, and the Disciples to the multitude.
37 And they did all eate, and were filled: & they tooke vp of the broken meat y was left, seauen baskets full.
38 An

38 And they that did eate, were foure thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And hee sent away the multitude, and tooke shippe, and came into the coastes of Magdala.

## CHAP. XVI.

The signe of Ionas. 6. The leauen of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 21. Christ foreshewth his death.

THe Pharisees also, with the Sadducees came, and tempting, desired him that hee would shewe them a signe from heauen.

2 Hee answered, and said vnto them, When it is euening, ye say, It will be fair weather for y sky is red.

3 And in the morning, It will bee foule weather to day, for the skie is red and lowring: O ye Hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, but yee can not discerne the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe bee giuen vnto it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas. And hee left them, and departed.

5 And when his Disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then said Iesus vnto them, Take heed & beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, It is because wee haue no bread.

8 Which when Iesus perceiued, hee saide vnto them, O yee of little faith, why reason yee among your selues, because yee haue brought no bread?

9 Doe yee not yet vnderstand, neither remember the fiue loaues of the fiue thousand, and howe many baskets yee tooke vp?

10 Neither

10 Neither the seuen loaues of the foure thou
and how many baskets toke yee vp?

11 Howe is it that yee doe not vnderstand, t
spake it not to you concerning bread, that yee
beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the
ducees?

12 Then vnderstood they how that hee bade
not beware of the leauen of bread: but of the doc
of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Iesus came into the coastes of C
rea Philippi, hee asked his Disciples, saying, W
doe men say that I the Sonne of man am?

14 And they said, Some say that thou art
the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias
one of the Prophets.

15 Hee sayth vnto them, But whom say ye
16 And Simon Peter answered, and saide,
art Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

17 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Bl
are thou Simõ Bar-jona: for flesh & blood hath no
uealed it vnto thee, but my Father, which is in he

18 And I say vnto thee, That thou art Peter,
vpon this rocke I will build my Church: and the
of hell shall not preuaile against it.

19 And I will giue vnto thee the keyes of the
dome of Heauen, and whatsoeuer thou shalt bin
earth, shalt bee bound in heauen: whatsoeuer thou
lose on earth shall bee loosed in heauen.

20 Then charged he his Disciples that they sh
tell no man, that hee was Iesus that Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth beganne Iesu
shew vnto his Disciples, howe that hee must goe
Hierusalem, and suffer many thinges of the El

and chiefe Priestes and Scribes, and bee killed, and bee raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter toke him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Bee it farre from thee, Lord; this shall not bee vnto thee.

23 But hee turned and said vnto Peter, Get thee behind mee Satan, thou art an offence vnto mee: for thou sauourest not the thinges that bee of God, but those that bee of men.

24 ¶ Then saide Iesus vnto his Disciples, If any man will come after mee, let him deuie himselfe, and take vp his crosse and follow mee.

25 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if hee shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule? Or what shall a man giue in exchange of his soule?

27 For the Sonne of Man shall come in the glorie of his Father, with his Angels: and then hee shall reward euerie man according to his workes.

28 Verilie I say vnto you, There bee some standing heere, which shall not taste of death till they see the Sonne of Man comming in his kingdome.

## CHAP. XVII.

2. The transfiguratiō of Christ. 14. He healeth ỹ lunatike. 22. Foretelleth his passion. 24. Payeth tribute.

AND after sixe dayes Iesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them vp into an high Mountaine apart.

2 And was transfigured before them, & his face did shine as ỹ Sun, & his rayment was white as ỹ light.

3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them Moses,

and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and saide vnto Jesus Lord, it is good for vs to bee heere: If thou wilt, let us make heere three tabernacles: one for Thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud ouer shadowed them: and beholde, a voyce out of the cloude, which sayde, This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare yee him.

6 And when the Disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and bee not afraid.

8 And when they had lift vp their eyes, they saw no man, saue Jesus onely.

9 And as they came downe from the Mountaine, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, vntill the Sonne of Man bee risen againe from the dead.

10 And his Disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?

11 And Jesus answered and said vnto them, Elias truelie shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say vnto you, That Elias is come alreadie, and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they listed: Likewise shall also the Sonne of Man suffer of them.

13 Then the Disciples vnderstood that hee spake vnto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude there came to him a certaine man, kneeling downe to him, and saying,

15 Lord, haue mercie on my sonne, for hee is lunatike, and sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth in the

fire, and oft-times in the water.

16 And I brought him to thy Disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered, and said, O faithlesse and peruerse generation, how long shall I bee with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to mee.

18 And Jesus rebuked the deuill, and hee departed out of him: & the child was cured from y verie houre.

19 Then came the Disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not wee cast him out?

20 And Jesus said vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe: for verilie I say vnto you, If ye haue faith as a grain of mustard seed yee shall say vnto this Mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place: and it shall remoue, and nothing shall bee vnpossible vnto you.

21 Howbeit, this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said vnto them. The Sonne of Man shall bee betrayed into the hands of men.

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day hee shalbe raised againe: And they were exceeding sorie.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued tribute money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your Master pay Tribute?

25 Hee sayth, Yes. And when hee was come into the house, Jesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom doe the Kinges of the earth take custome or Tribute? of their owne children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith vnto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith vnto him. Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest wee should offend them,

goe thou to the Sea, and caſt an Hooke, and take vp the fiſh that firſt commeth vp: and when thou haſt opened his mouth, thou ſhalt finde a piece of money: that take, and giue vnto them for mee, and thee.

## CHAP. XVIII.

1. Chriſt teacheth to bee humble. 7. Touching offences. 21. And forgiuing one another.

AT that ſame time came the Diſciples vnto Jeſus, ſaying, Who is the greateſt in the Kingdome of heauen.

2 And Jeſus called a little Childe vnto him, and ſet him in the midſt of them.

3 And ſaid, Verilie I ſay vnto you, Except yee bee conuerted, and become as little children, yee ſhall not enter into the Kingdome of heauen.

4 Whoſoeuer therefore ſhall humble himſelfe as this Childe, the ſame is the greateſt in the Kingdome of heauen.

5 And who ſo ſhall receiue one ſuch little Childe in my Name, receiueth mee.

6 But who ſo ſhall offend one of theſe little ones which beleiue in mee, it were better for him that a mil-ſtone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the Sea.

7 ¶ Woe vnto the world, becauſe of offences: for it muſt needes bee that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence commeth.

8 Wherefore if thine hand or thy foote offend thee, cut them off, and caſt them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt, or maimed, rather than hauing two hands, or two feete, to bee caſt into euerlaſting fire.

9 And

9 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out, and caſt it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than hauing two eyes, to bee caſt into hell fire.

10 Take heede that yee deſpiſe not one of theſe little ones: for I ſay vnto you, that in heauen their Angels doe alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen.

11 For the Sonne of Man is come to ſaue that which was loſt.

12 Howe thinke yee? if a man haue an hundreth Sheepe, and one of them be gone aſtray, doeth hee not leaue the nintie and nine, and goe into the Mountaines, and ſeeke that which is gone aſtray.

13 And if ſo bee hee finde it, verilie I ſay vnto you, hee reioyceth more of that Sheepe, than of the nintie and nine, which went not aſtray.

14 Euen ſo, it is not the will of your Father which is in heauen that one of theſe little ones ſhould periſh.

15 ¶ Moreouer if thy brother, ſhall treſpaſſe againſt thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if hee ſhall heare thee, thou haſt gained thy brother.

16 But if hee will not heare thee, then take with thee, one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witneſſes, euerie word may bee eſtabliſhed.

17 And if hee ſhall neglect to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: But if hee neglect to heare the Church, let him bee vnto thee as an heathen man, & a Publicane.

18 Verilie I ſay vnto you, Whatſoeuer ye ſhall binde on earth, ſhall bee bound in heauen: and whatſoeuer ye ſhall loſe on earth, ſhall bee loſed in heauen.

19 Againe, I ſay vnto you, That if two of you

shall agrée on earth, as touching anie thing that they shall aske, it shall bee done for them of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and saide, Lord, howe oft shall my brother sinne against mee, and I forgiue him? till seuen times?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, I say not vnto thee, Vntill seuen times, but, Vntill seuentie times seuen.

23 ¶ Therefore is the Kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine King, which would take accompt of his seruants.

24 And whé he had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 But forasmuch hee had not to pay, his lord commanded him to bee solde, and his wife, and children, and all that hee had, and payment to bee made.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, haue patience with mee, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the Lord of that seruant was moued with compassion, and loosed him, and forgaue him the debt.

28 But the same seruant went out, and found one of his fellow-seruantes which ought him an hundreth pence: and hee laide handes on him, and tooke him by the throate, saying, Pay mee that thou owest.

29 And his fellow-seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Haue patience with mee, and I will pay thee all.

30 And hee would not, but went and cast him into prison, till hee should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-seruantes sawe what was

done, they were verie sorie, and came, and told vnto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that hee had called him, sayd vnto him, O thou wicked seruant, I forgiue thee all that debt because thou desiredst mee:

33 Shouldst thou not also haue had compassion on thy fellow-seruant, Euen as I had pittie on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, & deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So likewise shall mine heauenlie Father doe also vnto you, if yee from your hearts forgiue not euerie one his brother their trespasses.

## CHAP. XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sicke. 3. and 7. Touching diuorcement. 16. How to attaine eternall life.

AND it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayinges, hee departed from Galilee, and came into the coastes of Iudea, beyond Iordane:

2 And great multitudes followed him, and hee healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came vnto him, tempting him, and saying vnto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for euerie cause?

4 And hee answered and sayde vnto them, Haue yee not read, that hee which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And said, For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shall cleaue vnto his wife: and they twaine shall bee one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. What therefore God had ioyned together, let no man put asunder.

7 They say vnto him, Why did Moses thē comma- 18
to giue a writting of dimorcement, & to put her awa halt
8 Hee saith vnto them, Moses, because of the hard-
nesse of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wit
wiues: but from the beginning it was not so. 19
9 And I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall put awa halt
his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry 20
another, committeth adulterie, and whosoeuer mar
rieth her which is put away, doeth commit adulte 21
10 ¶ His Disciples say vnto him, If the case stand
the man bee so with his wife, it is not good to marry
11 But hee sayd vnto them, All men cannot rece 22
this saying, saue they to whom it is giuen.
12 For there are some Eunuches, which were 22
borne from their mothers wombe: and there are some
Eunuches, which were made Eunuches of men: and
there bee some Eunuches, which haue made them 22
nes Eunuches for the kingdome of heauens sake. He
that is able to receiue it, let him receiue it.
13 ¶ Then there were brought vnto him lit 22
Children, that hee should put his hands on them, and
pray, and his Disciples rebuked them.
14 But Iesus said, Suffer little Children, and for
bidde them not to come vnto mee: for of such is
kingdome of heauen.
15 And hee laide his hand on them, and depar
thence.
16 ¶ And beholde, one came and saide vnto him,
Good Master, what good thing shall I doe, that I
may haue eternall life?
17 And hee saide vnto him, Why callest thou me
good? there is none good but One, that is God, but
thou wilt enter into life, keepe the Commandements

18 Hee saith vnto him, Which? Iesus saide, Thou shalt doe no murder. Thou shalt not commit adulterie, thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse.

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The young man sayth vnto him, All these things haue I kept from my youth vp: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt bee perfect, goe and sell all ỹ thou hast, & giue to the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen: and come and follow mee.

22 And when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowfull: for hee had great possessions.

23 Then sayd Iesus to his Disciples, Verilie I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of Heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdome of GOD.

25 When his Disciples heard it, they were exceedinglie amazed, saying, Who then can bee saued?

26 But Iesus beheld them, and saide vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ Then answered Peter and saide vnto him, Behold, wee haue forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall wee haue therefore.

28 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Verilie I say vnto you, that yee which haue followed mee, in the regeneration, when the Sonne of Man shall sit in the Throne of his glorie, yee shall sit vpon the twelue Thrones, iudging the twelue tribes of Israel.

29 And euerie one that hath forsaken houses, or

bre-

brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, shall receive an hundreth folde, and inherite euerlasting life.

30 But many that are first shall bee last: and the last shall bee first.

## CHAP. XX.

1. Of the labourers in the Vine-yarde. 20. Christ teacheth his Disciples to bee lowlie.

FOr the Kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man that is an house-holder, which went out earlie, in the morning to hyre labourers into his Vine-yarde.

2 And when hee had agreed with the labourers for a pennie a day, hee sent them into his Vine-yarde.

3 And hee went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market place.

4 And said vnto them, Goe yee also into my Vine-yarde and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you. And they went their way.

5 Againe hee went out about the sixth, and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleuenth houre, hee went out, and found others standing idle, and saith vnto them, Why stand yee here all the day idle?

7 They say vnto him, Because no man hath hyred vs, hee saith vnto them, Goe yee also into the Vine-yard, and whatsoeuer is right, that shall yee receiue.

8 So when Euen was come, the Lord of the Vineyard saith vnto his Steward, Call the labourers, and giue them their hyre, beginning from the last, vnto the first.

9 And when they came that were hyred about the eleuenth houre, they receiued euery man a pennie.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that

should haue receiued more, and they likewise re-
ed euerie man a pennie.
11 And when they had receiued it, they murmu-
against the Good-man of the house.
12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one
re, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which
e borne the burden, and heate of the day.
13 But hee answered one of them, and said Friend,
oe thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with mee
a pennie?
14 Take that thine is, and goe thy way: I will
e vnto the last, euen as vnto thee.
15 Is it not lawfull for mee to doe what I will with
ine owne? is thine eye euill, because I am good?
16 So the last shall bee first, and the first last: for
anie bee called, but few chosen.
17 ¶ And Iesus going vp to Hierusalem, tooke the
elue Disciples apart in the way, & said vnto them,
18 Beholde, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and the
onne of Man shall bee betrayed vnto the chiefe
riests, & vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne
im to death.
19 And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke,
nd to scourge, and to crucifie him: and the third day
e shall rise againe.
20 ¶ Then came to him the mother of Zebedees
ildren, with her sonnes, worshipping him, and
esiring a certaine thing of him.
21 And hee said vnto her, What wilt thou? Shee
ith vnto him, Grant, that these my two sonnes may
t, the one at thy right hand, and the other on thy left,
thy kingdome.
22 But Iesus answered, and saide, Yee know not

what

what yee aske. Are yée able to drinke of the cuppe
I shall drinke of? and to bee baptized with the
time that I am baptized with? They said vnto
Wée are able.

23 And hée sayth vnto them, Yée shall drink
deede of my cup, and bee baptized with the bapt
that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right h
and on my left, is not mine to giue, but it shall
giuen to them for whom it is prepared of my Fa

24 And when the ten heard it, they were m
with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said,
knowe that the princes of the Gentiles exercise d
nion ouer them, and they that are great, exercise
thoritie vpon them.

26 But it shall not bee so among you: But wh
euer will be great amóg you, let him be your Min

27 And whosoeuer will bee chiefe among you
him bee your seruant.

28 Euen as the Sonne of Man came not to
ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his
a ransome for many.

29 And as they departed from Hiericho, a g
multitude followed him.

30 ¶ And beholde, two blind men sitting b
way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by,
out, saying, Haue mercie on vs, O Lord, thou Son
of Dauid.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because
should holde their peace: but they cryed more, say
Haue mercie on vs, O Lord, thou Sonne of Dau

32 And Iesus stode still, and called them,
said, What will yee that I shall doo vnto you?

33 They saye vnto him, Lord, that our eyes may
be opened.
34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and tou-
ched their eyes: and immediatelie their eyes receiued
sight, and they followed him.

## CHAP. XXI.

Christ rideth to Hierusalem on an Asse, 12. And
casteth out the buyers and sellers in the Temple.

ANd when they drew nigh vnto Hierusalem, and
were come to Bethphage, vnto the Mount of
Olives, then sent Jesus two Disciples.
2 Saying vnto them, Goe into ỹ village ouer against
you, and straightway ye shall find an Asse tyed, and a
colt with her: loose them, and bring them vnto mee.
3 And if any man say ought vnto you, yee shall say,
The Lord hath neede of them, and straightway hee
will send them.
4 All this was done, that it might bee fulfilled
which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,
5 Tell yee the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King
commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an Asse,
and a Colt, the Foale of an Asse.
6 And the Disciples went, and did as Jesus com-
manded them.
7 And brought the Asse, and the Colt, and put on
them their cloathes, and they set him thereon.
8 And a verie great multitude spread their gar-
ments in the way: others cut downe branches from
the trees, and strawed them in the way,
9 And the multitudes that went before, and that
followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, to the Son of Da-
uid: Blessed is hee that commeth in the Name of the
Lord,

Lord; Hosanna, in the highest.

10 And when hee was come into Hierusalem, the Citie was moued, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Iesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that solde Doues,

13 And said vnto them, It is written, Mine house shall bee called the house of prayer, but yee haue made it a denne of Thieues.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the Temple, and hee healed them.

15 And when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the wonderfull thinges that hee did, and the Children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they were sore displeased.

16 And said vnto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Iesus saith vnto them, Yea: haue yee neuer read; Out of the mouth of Babes and Sucklings thou hast perfected thy praise?

17 And hee left them, and went out of the citie to Bethania, and hee lodged there.

18 Nowe in the morning, as hee returned into the citie, hee hungred.

19 And when hee saw a figtree in the way he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaues onely, and said vnto it, Let no fruite grow on thee henceforward for euer. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

20 And when the Disciples saw it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the fig-tree withered away?

21 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Verily

ay vnto you, if yée haue faith and doubt not, yée shall not onely doe this which is done to the fig-tree, but also if ye shall say vnto this Mountaine, Be thou removed, and bée thou cast into the Sea, it shall bee done.

22 And all thinges whatsoeuer yee shall aske in prayer beléeuing, yée shall receiue.

23 ¶ And when hee was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priestes and the Elders of the people came vnto him as hée was teaching, and said, By what authoritie doest thou these thinges? and who gaue thée this authoritie.

24 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I also will aske you one thing, which if yée will tell mée, I in likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The Baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If wée shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did yée not then beléeue him.

26 But if wée shall say, Of men, wée feare the people, for all held Iohn as a Prophet.

27 And they answered Iesus, and sayd, Wée cannot tell. And hee said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie doe I these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke you? A certaine man had two sonnes, and hee came to the first, and saide, Son, goe worke in my Vine-yarde.

29 Hée answered, and saide, I will not: but afterward hee repented, and went.

30 And hée came to the second, and sayd likewise: and hée answered, and said, I goe Sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his Father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus saith vnto

them

them, Verilie I saye vnto you, that the Publica
and the Harlots goe into the Kingdome of God be
you.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righte
nesse, & yee beleeued him not: but the Publicans
Harlots beleeued him. And yee when ye had seen
repented not afterward, that yee might beleeue hi

33 ¶ Heare another Parable. There was a
taine house-holder, which planted a Vineyard,
hedged it round about, and digged a wine presse i
and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen,
went into a farre countrey.

34 And when the time of fruite drewe neare,
sent his seruants to the husbandmen, that they mi
receiue the fruites of it.

35 And the husbandmen tooke the seruantes,
beate one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe hee sent other seruantes, moe than
first, and they did vnto them likewise.

37 But last of all, hee sent vnto them his Son
saying, They will reuerence my Sonne.

38 But when the Husbandmen sawe the Son
they said among themselues, This is the Heire, co
let vs kill him, and let vs seaze on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of
Vineyarde, and slew him.

40 When the Lord therefore of the Vineyarde c
meth, what shall hee doe vnto the Husbandmen?

41 They say vnto him, Hee will come and des
those wicked men, and let out his Vineyarde
other husbandmen, which shall render him fruit
their seasons.

42 Iesus saith vnto them, Did yee neuer read

the Scriptures, The stone which the builders refected, the same is made the head of the corner? This is the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

43 Therefore I say vnto you, The kingdome of God shall bee taken from you, and giuen to a Nation bringing forth the fruites thereof.

44 And whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, shall bee broken: but on whomsouer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceiued that hee spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay handes on him, they feared the multitude because they toke him for a Prophet.

## CHAP. XXII.

1. The marriage of the Kinges Sonne. 9. The calling of the Gentiles. 11. The wedding garment.

AND Iesus answered, and spake vnto them againe by parables, and said,

2 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine King, which made a marriage for his Sonne.

3 And sent forth his seruants to call them y were bidden to the wedding, and they would not come.

4 Againe, he sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Beholde, I haue prepared my dinner: mine oxen, and my fatlings are killed, and all thinges are readie, come vnto the Marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, another to his merchandize:

6 And the remnant toke his seruants, and intreated them spitefullie, and slew them.

7 But when the King heard thereof hée wa
wroth, and hée sent forth his armies, and destroye
those murderers, and burnt vp their Citie.

8 Thẽ saith he to his seruants, The wedding is rea
die, but they which were bidden were not worthie.

9 Goe yée therefore into the high wayes, and a
manie as yée shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those seruants went out into the high way
and gathered together as many as they found, bot
badde and good, and the Wedding was furnishe
with Guestes.

11 ¶ And whẽ the King came to sée the Guestes, h
saw there a man, which had not on a wedding garmẽ

12 And hée saith vnto him, Friend, how camest
thou in hither, not hauing a wedding garment? An
hée was speachlesse.

13 Then said the King to the seruants, Bind him
hand & foote, and take him away, & cast him into vtte
darknes, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

15 ¶ Then went the Pharisees, and tooke counsell, how they might intangle him in his talke.

16 And they sent vnto him their Disciples, with
the Herodians, saying, Master, wee know that thou
art true, and teachest the way of God in trueth, nei
ther carest thou for any man: for thou regardest no
the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it
lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?

18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednesse, and
said, Why tempt yée mee, yée Hypocrites?

19 Shewe mee the tribute money: And they
brought vnto him a pennie.

20 And hée sayth vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

21 They say vnto him, Cesars. Then sayth he vnto them, Render therefore vnto Cesar, the things which are Cesars: and vnto God, the thing which are Gods.

22 When they had heard these wordes, they marueiled, and left him, and went their wayes.

23 ¶ The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say, That there is no resurrection, & asked him,

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die hauing no Children, his brother shall marrie his wife, and raise vp children to his brother.

25 Now there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first when hee had married a wife, deceased, and hauing no issue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, vnto the seuenth.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection: whose wife shall shée bée of the seuen? for they all had her.

29 Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Yée doe erre, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection, they neither marrie, nor are giuen in marriage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, haue yee not read that which was spoken vnto you, by God, saying,

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iaacob: God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them which were a Lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great Commandement in the Law?

37 Jesus said vnto him, Thou shalt loue thy Lord thy God, with all thine heart, and with all thy soule and with all thy minde.

38 This is the first and great Commandement.

39 And the second is like vnto it, Thou shalt loue thy Neighbour as thy selfe.

40 On these two Commandements hang all the Law and the Prophets.

41 ¶ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them.

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ, whose Sonne is hee? They say vnto him, The Sonne of Dauid.

43 Hee saith vnto them, Howe then doeth Dauid in the Spirit call him, Lord, saying,

44 The Lord sayd vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot-stoole.

45 If Dauid thē call him Lord, How is he his Sonne?

46 And no man was able to answere him a word, neither durst any man (from that time forth) aske him any moe questions.

## CHAP. XXIII.

2. The Scribes & Pharisees good doctrine, but euil example of life. 34. The destruction of Ierusalem.

THen spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his Disciples,

2 Saying,

2 Saying, The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses seat:

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe, but doe not ye after their workes: for they say, and doe not.

4 For they bind heauie burdens, and grieuous to bee borne, & lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moue them with one of their fingers.

5 But all their workes they doe, but to bee seene of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments.

6 And loue the vppermost roomes at feastes, and the chiefe seates in the Synagogues.

7 And grætings in the markets, and to bée called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 But bee not yee called Rabbi: for one is your Master, euen Christ, and all yee are brethren.

9 And call no man your father vpon the earth: for one is your Father which is in heauen.

10 Neither bée yee called Masters: for one is your Master, euen Christ.

11 But hée that is greatest among you, shall bée your seruant.

12 And whosoeuer shall exalt himselfe, shall bée abased: and he ỳ shall humble himselfe, shall be exalted.

13 ¶ But woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for yee shut vp the Kingdome of Heauen against men: For yee neither goe in your selues, neither suffer yee them that are entring, to goe in.

14 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for yée deuoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayers; therefore yée shall receiue the greater damnation.

15 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites; for yee compasse Sea and land to make one Proselyte, and when hee is made, yee make him tw folde more the childe of hell than your selues.

16 Woe vnto you, yee blinde guides, which say Whosoeuer shall sweare by the Temple, it is nothing but whosoeuer sweareth by the golde of the Temple hee is a debter.

17 Yee fooles and blinde: for whether is greate the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoeuer shall sweare by the Altar, it nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the gift that upon it, is guiltie.

19 Yee fooles and blinde: for whether is greater t gift, or the Altar that sanctifieth the gift.

20 Who so therefore shall sweare by the Altar sweareth by it, and by all thinges thereon.

21 And who so shall sweare by the Temple, swe reth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And hee that shall sweare by heauen, sweare by the Throne of God, & by him that sitteth thereon

23 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites, for ye pay tith of mint, & annise, and cummin and haue omitted the weightier matters of the Law judgement, mercie, and faith, these ought yee to ha done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

24 Yee blinde guides, which straine at a gnat, an swallow a camel.

25 Woe vnto you Scribes, & Pharisees, hypocrites for yee make cleane the outside of the cup, & of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excesse.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup & platter, that the out-side of them

may bee cleane also.

27 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites, for yée are like vnto whited sepulchres, which indéed appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all vncleannesse.

28 Euen so, yée also outwardlie appeare righteous vnto mé, but within ye are ful of hypocrisie & iniquity.

29 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites, because ye build the Tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous.

30 And say, If wée had bœne in the dayes of our fathers, wée would not haue bœne partakers with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 Wherefore yée bee witnes vnto your selues ý yée are the children of them which killed the Prophetes.

32 Fill yee vp then the measure of your fathers.

33 Yee serpentes, yée generation of vipers, How can yée escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherfore behold, I send vnto you, Prophets, and wisemen, and Scribes, and some of them yée shall kill & crucifie, & some of them shall yee scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute them from citie to citie.

35 That vpõ you may come all the vnrighteous blood shed vpon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, vnto the blood of Zacharias sonne of Barachias, whom yée slew betweene the Temple and the Altar.

36 Verilie I say vnto you, All these things shall come vpon this generation.

37 O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, thou that killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent vnto thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, euen as an henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and yee would not?

38 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate.
39 For I say vnto you, Yee shall not see mee hence forth, till yee shall say, Blessed is hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

1. The destruction of the Temple, 4. Of Christ comming to Iudgement.

AND Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his Disciples came to him, for to shew him the buildings of the Temple.
2 And Iesus said vnto them, See yee not all these thinges? Verilie I say vnto you, There shall not be left heere one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwne downe.
3 ¶ And as hee sate vpon the Mount of Olives, the Disciples came vnto him priuatelie, saying, Tell vs when shall these thinges bee? and what shall bee the signe of thy comming? and of the end of the world?
4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Take heede that no man deceiue you.
5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue manie.
6 And yee shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: See that yee bee not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.
7 For Nation shall rise against Nation, and Kingdome against Kingdome: and there shall bee famines and pestilences, and earth-quakes in diuerse places.
8 All these are the beginning of sorrowes.
9 Then shall they deliuer you vp to bee afflicted, and shall kill you: and yee shall bee hated of all Nations for my Names sake.

10 And

10 And then shall many bee offended, and shall betray one another, and hate one another.

11 And many false Prophetes shall rise, and shall deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shall abound, the loue of manie shall ware colde.

13 But hee that shall endure vnto the ende, the same shall bee saued.

14 And this Gospel of the Kingdome shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse vnto all Nations: and then shall the end come.

15 Whē ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, stād in the holie place, (who so readeth, let him vnderstand.)

16 Then let them which bee in Iudea, flee into the Mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house toppe, not come downe, to take any thing out of his house.

18 Neither let him which is in the fielde returne backe, to take his cloathes.

19 And woe vnto them that are with child, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray yee that your flight bee not in the Winter, neither on the Sabbath day.

21 For then shall bee great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time: no, nor euer shall bee.

22 And except those dayes should bee shortned, there should no flesh bee saued: but for the Electes sake, those dayes shall bee shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there: beleeue it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs and false prophets,

phets, and shall shew great signes and wonders: in
much that (if it were possible,) they shall deceiue
verie Elect.

25 Behold I haue tolde you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say vnto you, Beh
hée is in the Desert, goe not forth: Beholde, hée i
the secret chambers, belieue it not.

27 For as the lightning commeth out of the E
and shineth euen vnto the West: so shall also the co
ming of the Sonne of Man bee.

28 For wheresoeuer the carkeise is, there will
Eagles bee gathered together.

29 ¶ Immediatelie after the tribulation of th
dayes, shall the Sunne bée darkened, and the Mo
shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall fro
heauen, and the powers of heauen shall bee shaken.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Son
Man in heauen, & then shall all the Tribes of the ear
mourne, & they shall sée the Sonne of man commi
in the cloudes of heauen, with power and great glor

31 And hée shall send his Angels with a great sou
of a trũpet, & they shall gather together his Elect fro
the foure windes, from one end of heauen to the othe

32 Now learne a parable of the fig-trée: when hi
branches is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, y
know that Summer is nigh.

33 So likewise yee, when yee shall see all the
things, know that it is euen at the dores.

34 Verilie I say vnto you, This generation sha
not passe, till all these things bée fulfilled.

35 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but m
words shall not passe away,

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man,

no not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onelie.
37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of Man bee.
38 For as in the dayes that were before the floode, they were eating, and drinking, marrying and giuing in marriage, vntill the day that Noe entred in the Arke.
39 And knew not vntill the floode came, and tooke them all away: so shall the comming of the Sonne of Man bee.
40 Then shall bee two in the field, the one shall bee taken away, and the other left.
41 Two women shall bee grinding at the mill: the one shall bee taken, and the other left.
42 ¶ Watch therefore, for yee know not what houre your Lord shall come.
43 But knowe this, that if the Good-man of the house had knowne at what watch the Thiefe would come, hee would haue watched, and would not haue suffred his house to bee broken vp.
44 Therefore bee yee also readie: for in such an houre as yee thinke not, the Sonne of Man commeth.
45 Who then is a faithfull and a wise seruant, whom his Lord hath made ruler ouer his house-holde, to giue them meate in due season?
46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when hee commeth, shall finde so doing.
47 Verilie I say vnto you, That hee shall make him ruler ouer all his goods.
48 But and if that euill seruant shall saye in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming.
49 And shall begin to smite his fellow-seruantes, and to eate and drinke with the drunken,

50 The

50 The Lord of that seruant shall come in a day when hee looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of:

51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth.

## CHAP. XXV.

1. The parables of the ten Virgines. 14. and of the Talentes. 31. The last Iudgement described.

THen shall the kingdome of heauen bee likened vnto ten Virgines, which tooke their Lampes, and went forth to meete the Bridegrome.

2 And fiue of them were wise, & fiue were foolish.

3 They that were foolish, tooke their Lampes, and tooke none oyle with them.

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels, with their Lampes.

5 While the Bridegrome tarried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at mid-night there was a cry made, Behold, the Bridegrome commeth, goe yee out to meete him.

7 Then all those Virgines arose, and trimmed their Lampes.

8 And the foolish saide vnto the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our Lampes are gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there bee not enough for vs and you: but goe yee rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.

10 And while they went to buy, the Bridegrome came, and they that were readie, went in with him to the marriage, and the doores was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other Virgines, saying,

Lord,

Lord, Lord, open vnto vs.

12 But hee answered, and said, Verilie I say vnto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for yee know neither the day, nor the houre, wherein the Sonne of Man commeth.

14 ¶ For the Kingdome of heauen is as a man trauailing into a farre countrey, who called his owne seruants, and deliuered vnto them his goods.

15 And vnto one he gaue fiue Talents, to another two, and to another one, to euerie man according to his seuerall abilitie, and straighway tooke his journey.

16 Then hee that had receiued the fiue Talentes, went and traded with the same, and made them other fiue Talentes.

17 And likewise hee that had receiued two, hee also gained other two.

18 Then hee that had receiued one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time, the Lord of those seruantes commeth and reckoneth with them.

20 And so hee that had receiued fiue Talents, came and brought other fiue Talents, saying, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto mee fiue Talentes, behold, I haue gained besides them, fiue Talentes moe.

21 His Lord said vnto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull seruant, thou hast beene faithfull ouer a few thinges, I will make thee ruler ouer manie things: enter thou into the ioye of thy Lord.

22 He also ỹ had receiued two Talents, came & said, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto mee two Talentes, behold, I haue gained two other Talentes besides them.

23 His Lord said vnto him, Well done, good and faithfull seruant; thou hast beene faithfull ouer a few

things

things, I will make thee ruler ouer manie things: e
ter thou into the ioye of thy Lord.

24 Then hee which had receiued the one Talen
came and said, Lord, I knowe that thou art an ha
man reaping where thou hast not sowne, and gath
ring where thou hast not strawed.

25 And I was afraid, and went, & hid thy Tale
in the earth: loe, there thou hast that is thine owne.

26 His Lord answered, and said vnto him, Th
wicked, and sloathfull seruaut, thou knowest that
reape where I sowed not, and gather where I ha
not strawed:

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my mon
to the exchangers, and then at my comming I shou
haue receiued mine owne with vsurie.

28 Take therefore the Talent from him, and giu
it vnto him which haue ten Talentes.

29 For vnto euery one that hath, shall bee giuen
and hee shall haue aboundance: but from him that hat
not, shall bee taken away, euen that which hee hath.

30 And cast yee the vnprofitable seruant into vtte
darknes, there shall bee weeping & gnashing of teeth

31 ¶ When the Sonne of Man shall come in hi
glorie, and all the holie Angels with him, then shal
hee sit vpon the Throne of his glorie.

32 And before him shall bee gathered all Nations
and hee shall separate them from another, as a shep
heard diuideth his sheepe from the goates.

33 And hee shall set the sheepe on his right hand
but the goates on the left.

34 Then shall the King say vnto them on his right
hand, Come yee blessed of my Father, inherite the
Kingdome prepared for you from the foundation o
the world.

35 Fo

35 was
rang
36 e vi
37 ord,
hirst
38 n?
39 me
40 Heri
nto
one
41 and
re,
42 neat
43 ed,
nd
44 he
er
uff
45 sa
e
46

35 For I was an hungred, and yée gaue mée meat, I was thirstie, and yée gaue mée drinke: I was a ranger, and yee tooke mée in.

36 Naked, and yee cloathed mée: I was sicke, and ée visited mee: I was in prison, & yée came vnto mée,

37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, ord, when saw wée thée an hungred, and fedde thee: hirstie, and gaue thée drinke?

38 When saw wée thée a stranger, and tooke thee n? or naked, and cloathed thée?

39 Or when saw wee thée sicke, or in prison, and me vnto thée?

40 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them, erilie I say vnto you, Inasmuch as yee haue done it nto one of the least of these my brethren, yee haue one it vnto mée.

41 Then shall hee say also vnto them on the left and Depart from mée, yée cursed, into euerlasting re, prepared for the Deuill and his Angels:

42 For I was an hungred, and yée gaue mée no eate: I was thirstie, and yée gaue mee no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and yée tooke mée not in, naed, and yée cloathed mee not, sicke, and in prison, nd yée visited mee not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord, hen saw wée thée an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall hee answere them, saying, Verilie say vnto you, in as much as yee did it not to one of e least of these, yee did it not to mee.

46 And these shall goe away into euerlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XXVI.

1. The rulers conspire against Christ. 14. Iuda
leth him. 17. The Passeouer. ✝ R

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had finishe
these sayings, hee said vnto his Disciples.

2 Yee know that after two dayes is the feast o
Passeouer, and the Sonne of Man is betrayed t
crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chiefe Priests,
the Scribes, and the Elders of the people, vnto th
lace of the high Priest, who was called Caiaphas

4 And consulted that they might take Iesus by
tilitie and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest ther
an vproare among the people.

6 Now when Iesus was in Bethania, in the h
of Simon the leper.

7 There came vnto him a woman, hauing an
baster bore of verie costly oyntment, and powred
his head, as hee sate at meat.

8 But when his Disciples saw it, they had in
nation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this oyntment might haue beene solde
much, and giuen to the poore.

10 When Iesus vnderstood it, hee said vnto th
Why trouble yee the woman? for shee hath wrou
a good worke vpon mee.

11 For yee haue the poore alwayes with you,
mee yee haue not alwayes.

12 For in that shee hath powred this oyntmen
my bodie, shee did it for my buriall.

13 Verilie I say vnto you, Whereseuer, this Go
shall bee preached in the whole world, there shall
this, that this woman hath done, to be tolde for a
me

riall of her.

14 ¶ Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,

15 And saide vnto them, What will yee giue mee, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they couenanted with him for thirtie pieces of Siluer.

16 And from that time hee sought opportunitie to betray him.

17 ¶ Now the first day of the feast of vnleauened bread, the Disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that wee prepare for thee to eate the Passeouer?

18 And hee said, Goe into the citie to such a man, and say vnto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand, I will keepe the Passeouer at thine house with my Disciples.

19 And the Disciples did as Iesus had appointed them: and they made readie the Passeouer.

20 Now when the Euen was come, hee sate downe with the twelue.

21 And as they did eate, hee said, Verilie I say vnto you, That one of you shall betray mee.

22 And they were exceeding sorowfull, and began euerie one of them to say vnto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And hee answered and said, Hee that dippeth his hand with mee in the dish, the same shall betray mee.

24 The Sonne of Man goeth as it is written of him: but woe vnto that man by whom the Sonne of Man is betrayed: it had beene good for that man, if hee had not beene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered, and said, Master, Is it I? Hee said vnto him, Thou hast said.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, Iesus tooke bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gaue it to the Disciples, and said, Take eate, this is my Bodie.

27 And hee tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and gaue it to them, saying, Drinke yee all of it.

28 For this is my Blood of the newe Testament, which is shed for manie for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say vnto you, I will not drinke henceforth of this fruite of the Vine, vntill that day when I drinke it with you in my Fathers Kingdome.

30 And when they had sung a hymne, they went out into the Mount of Oliues.

31 Then saith Iesus vnto them, All yee shall be offended because of mee this night: For it is written, I will smite the Shepheard, and the Sheepe of the flocke shall bee scattered abroad.

32 But after I am risen againe, I will goe before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered, and said vnto him, Though all men should bee offended because of thee, yet will I neuer bee offended.

34 Iesus said vnto him, Verilie I say vnto thee, that this night before the Cocke crow, thou shalt denie mee thrise.

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with Thee, yet will I not denie thee. Likewise also said all the Disciples.

36 ¶ Then commeth Iesus with them vnto a place called Gethsemane, and saith vnto the Disciples, Sit yee heere, while I goe and pray yonder.

37 And hee tooke with him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedee, and began to bee sorrowfull, and verie heauie.

38 Then

38 Then saith hee vnto them, My soule is exce-
ding sorrowfull, euen vnto death: tarie yee heere, and
atch with mee.

39 And hee went a little further, and fell on his
ce, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it bee pos-
ble, let this cup passe from mee: neuertheless, not
s I will but as thou wilt.

40 And hee commeth vnto the Disciples, and fin-
eth them asleepe, and saith vnto Peter, What, could
ee not watch with mee one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that yee enter not into temp-
ation: The spirit indeede is willing, but the flesh is
eake.

42 Hee went away againe the second time, and
ayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe
way from mee, except I drinke it, thy will bee done.

43 And hee came and found them asleepe againe,
r their eyes were heauie.

44 And hee left them, and went away againe, and
ayed, the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then commeth hee to his Disciples, and saith
nto them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest: behold,
e houre is at hand, and the Sonne of Man is betra-
d into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs be going: behold, hee is at hand that
eth betray mee.

47 ¶ And while hee yet spake, loe, Iudas one of
e twelue came, and with him a great multitude
ith swords and staues, from the chiefe Priests and
lders of the People.

48 Now hee that had betrayed him, gaue them a
gne, saying, whosoeuer I shall kisse, that same is
e, hold him fast.

49 And forth-with hee came to Jesus, and saide Haile Master, and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said vnto him, Friend, Wherefo art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on J sus, and tooke him.

51 And behold one of them which were with Jesu stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stro a seruant of the high Priests, and smote off his eare

52 Then said Jesus vnto him, Put vp againe t sword into his place: for all they that take the swo shall perish with the sword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot nowe pray to m Father, and hee shall presentlie giue mee more th twelue legions of Angels?

54 But how then shall the Scriptures bee fulfille that thus it must bee?

55 In that same houre said Jesus to the multitude Are ye come out as against a Thiefe with swords an staues for to take mee? I sate daylie with you tea hing in the Temple, and yee laid no hold on mee.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures the Prophets might bee fulfilled, Then all the Di ciples forsoke him, and fled:

57 ¶ And they that had laide holde on Jesus, l him away to Caiaphas the high Priest, where t Scribes and the Elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afarre off, vnto t high Priestes palace, and went in, and sate with t seruantes, to see the end.

59 Now the chiefe Priests and Elders, and all t counsell, sought false witnesse against Jesus to p him to death.

60 And found none: yea, though many false wi

nesse

nesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses.

61 And said, This Fellow said, I am able to destroy this Temple of God, & to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high Priest arose, and said vnto him, Answerest thou nothing? What is it, which these witnesse against thee.

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the high Priest answered, and said vnto him, I adiure thee by the liuing GOD, that thou tell vs, whether thou bee the Christ the Sonne of GOD.

64 Iesus saith vnto him, Thou hast said, Neuertheless I say vnto you, Hereafter shall yee see the Sonne of Man sitting on the right hand of power, and comming in the cloudes of heauen.

65 Then the high Priest rent his cloathes, saying, Hee hath spoken blasphemie: what further neede haue we of witnesses, Behold, now yee haue heard his blasphemie.

66 What thinke yee? They answered, and said, Hee is guiltie of death.

67 Then did they spitte in his face, and buffet him, and others smote him with the palmes of their hands.

68 Saying, Prophecie vnto vs, thou Christ, who is hee that smote thee?

69 ¶ Now Peter sate without, in the palace: and a Damsell came vnto him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galilee.

70 But hee denyed before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And whē he was gone out into the porch, another Maide saw him, and said vnto them that were there, This Fellow was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe, hee denied with an oath, I doe n
know the man.

73 And after a while came vnto him they that st
by, and saide to Peter, Surelie thou also art one
them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse, and to sweare, saying
I know not the man, & immediatelie the Cocke crew

75 And Peter remembred the words of Iesus, whi
he said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt d
nie mee thrise, And hee went out, and wept bitterli

## CHAP. XXVII.

1. Christ deliuered to Pilate. 3. Iudas hangeth him-
selfe. 35. Christ is crucified.

WHen the morning was come, all the chief
Priestes and Elders of the people, tooke coun
sell against Iesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away
and deliuered him to Pontious Pilate the gouernour

3 ¶ Then Iudas which had betrayed him, when
hee saw that hee was condemned, repented himselfe
and brought againe the thirtie pieces of siluer to the
chiefe Priestes and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned in that I haue betrayed
the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to
vs: see thou to that.

5 And hee cast downe the pieces of siluer in the
Temple, & departed, and went and hanged himselfe

6 And the chiefe Priests take the siluer pieces and
said, It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the trea-
surie because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them
the potters field, to burie strangers in.

8 Where

8 Wherefore that fielde was called, the fielde of blood vntill this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremie the Prophet, saying, And they toke the thirtie pieces of siluer, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the Children of Israel did value.

10 And gaue them for the potters fielde, as the Lord appointed mee.)

11 And Jesus stood before the Gouernour, and the Gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And Jesus said vnto him, Thou sayest,

12 And when hee was accused of the chiefe Priests and Elders, hee answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And hee answered him to neuer a word; insomuch that the Gouernour marueiled greatly.

15 Now at that feast the Gouernour was wont to release vnto the people a prisoner, whome they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, Whom will ye ỹ I release vnto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 For hee knew that for enuy they had deliuered him.

19 ¶ When hee was set downe on the Iudgement seat, his wife sent vnto him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame, because of him.

20 But the chiefe Priests, and Elders perswaded the multitude that they should aske Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The Gouernour answered, and said vnto th
Whether of the twaine will yee that I release
you, They said, Barrabas.

22 Pilate said vnto them, What shall I doe
with Iesus, which is called Christ? They all said
to him, Let him bee crucified.

23 And the Gouernour said, Why? what euill h
hee done? But they cryed out the more, saying,
him bee crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate sawe that hee could preu
nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, hee to
water, and washed his handes before the multitu
saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust perso
see yee to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and saide,
blood bee on vs and on our Children.

26 ¶ Then released he Barrabas vnto them,
when hee had scourged Iesus, hee deliuered him
bee crucified.

27 Then the Souldiers of the Gouernour toke
sus into the common hall, and gathered vnto him
whole band of Souldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a sc
let Robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crowne
thornes, they put it vpon his head, and a reede in
right hand, and they bowed the knee before him, a
mocked him, saying, Haile King of the Iewes.

30 And they spitte vpon him, and toke his Ree
and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they to
the robe off from him, and put his owne rayment
him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32. A

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to beare his Crosse.

33 And when they were come vnto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, A place of a skuls.

34 ¶ They gaue him Vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: and when hee had tasted thereof, hee would not drinke.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garmẽts, casting lots: that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet. They parted my garmentes among them, and vpon my vesture did they cast lots.

36 And sitting downe, they watched him there:

37 And set vp ouer his head, his accusation written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEVVES.

38 Then were there two Theeues crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reuiled him wagging their heads.

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: If thou bee the Sonne of God, come downe from the Crosse.

41 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking him, with the Scribes and Elders, said,

42 Hee saued others, himselfe hee cannot saue, If hee bee the King of Israel, let him nowe come downe from the Crosse, and wee will beleeue in him.

43 Hee trusted in God, let him deliuer him now if he will haue him: for hee said, I am the Son of God.

44 The Theeues also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

45 Nowe from the sixe houre there was darkenesse ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre.

46 And

46 And about the ninth houre, Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Eli, Eli, Lamasabachthanie: that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straight-way one of them ranne, and took a spunge, and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke.

49 The rest said, Let bee, let vs see whether Elias will come to saue him.

50 So Iesus, when hee had cryed againe with a loude voyce, yeelded vp the ghost.

51 And behold, the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the toppe to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the Rockes rent.

52 And the graues were opened, and many bodies of Sainctes, which slept, arose.

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy citie, and appeared vnto manie.

54 Now when the Centurion, and they that were with him, watching Iesus, saw the earth-quake, and those thinges that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truelie this was the Sonne of God.

55 And manie women were there, (beholding afarre off) which followed Iesus from Galilee, ministring vnto him.

56 Among which was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

57 When the Euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathia, named Joseph, who also himself was Iesus Disciple.

58 Ha

58 Yee went to Pilate, and begged the bodie of Iesus: then Pilate commaunded the bodie to bee deliuered.

59 And when Ioseph had taken the bodie, hee wrapped it in a linnen cloath,

60 And laid it in his owne Tombe, which hee had hewen out in the Rocke: and hee rolled a great stone to the dooze of the Sepulchze, and departed.

61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie, sitting ouer against the Sepulchze.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chiefe Priestes, and Pharisees came together vnto Pilate.

63 Saying, Sir, wee remember that that deceiuer said while hee was yet aliue, After three dayes I will rise againe.

64 Commaund therefoze that the Sepulchze bee made sure vntill the third day, lest his Disciples come by night, and steale him away, and say vnto the people, Hee is risen from the dead: so the last errour shall bee woorse than the first.

65 Pilate said vnto them, Yee haue a watch, goe your way, make it as sure as yes can.

66 So they went, and made the Sepulchze sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

1. Christes resurrection 9. Hee appeareth to the women, 16. And to the Disciples. 19. And sendeth them to teach, and baptize.

IN the end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawne, towardes the first day of the weeke, came Marie Magdalene, & the other Marie, to see the Sepulchze.

2 And

2 And behold, there was a great earth-quake, for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, & came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his rayment white as snow.

4 And for feare of him the Keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the Angel answered, and said vnto the women, Feare not yee: For I know that yee seeke Jesus which was crucified.

6 Hee is not heere, for he is risen, as he said, Come see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And goe quicklie, and tell his Disciples that he is risē from the dead. And behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall yee see him: loe I haue tolde you.

8 And they departed quicklie from the Sepulchre with feare and great ioye, and did runne to bring his Disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his Disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All haile. And they came, and held him by the feete, and worshipped him.

10 Then saide Jesus vnto them, Bee not afraide: Goe tell my brethren, that they goe into Galilee, and there shall they see mee.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the Citie, and shewed vnto the chiefe Priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsell, they gaue large money vnto the Souldiers,

13 Saying, Say yee, His Disciples came by night, and stole him away, while wee slept.

14 And if this come to the Gouernours eares, we

will perſwade him, and ſecure you.

15 So they tooke the Money, and did as they were taught: And this ſaying is commonlie reported among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen Diſciples went away into Galilee, into a Mountaine where Ieſus had appointed them.

17 And when they ſaw him, they worſhipped him: but ſome doubted.

18 And Ieſus came, and ſpake vnto them, ſaying, All power is giuen vnto mee in heauen and in earth:

19 ¶ Goe yee therefore, and teach all Nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghoſt.

20 Teaching them to obſerue all thinges, whatſoeuer I haue commanded you: And loe, I am with you alway, euen to the end of the world. Amen.

# THE GOSPEL OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOVR *IESVS CHRIST.*

According to Saint MARKE.

## CHAP. I.

1. Iohn Baptiſts office. 9. Ieſus is baptized. 12. Tempted. 14. Preacheth. 16. Calleth Peter, and others. 23. And cureth manie.

THe beginning of the Goſpel of Ieſus Chriſt, the Sonne of GOD.

2 As it is writtē in the Prophets, Behold, I ſend my meſſēger before thy face which ſhall prepare thy way before thee

3 The voyce of one crying in the wildernesse, Pre
pare yee the way of the Lord: make his paths strai
4 Iohn did baptize in the wildernesse, and pre
the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sin
5 And there went out vnto him all the land of Iu
dea, and they of Hierusalem, and were all baptized
him in the riuer of Iordane, confessing their sinnes.
6 And Iohn was cloathed with Camels haire, a
with a girdle of skinne about his loynes: and hee
eate locusts and wilde honey.
7 And preached, saying, There commeth One mig
tier than I after mee, the latchet of whose shoes I a
not worthie to stoupe downe, and vnloose.
8 Indeed I haue baptized you with water: but h
shall baptize you with the holie Ghost.
9 And it came to passe in those dayes, that Iesu
came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized
Iohn in Iordane.
10 And straight-way comming vp out of the wa
ter, hee saw the heauens opened, and the Spirit lik
a Doue, descending vpon him.
11 And there came a voyce from heauen, saying,
Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whom I am wel
pleased.
12 And immediatelie, the Spirit driueth him in
to the wildernesse.
13 And hee was there in the wildernesse fourtie
dayes tempted of Sathan, and was with the wilde
beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him.
14 Now after that Iohn was put in prison, Iesus
came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the King
dome of God.
15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, & the Kingdome
of

God is at hand: repent yee, and beliene the Gospel.
16 Now as hee walked by the sea of Galilee, hee
saw Simon and Andrew his brother, casting a nette
into the Sea, (for they were fishers.)
17 And Jesus said vnto them, Come yee after me,
and I will make you to become fishers of men.
18 And straightway they forsooke their nettes, and
followed him.
19 And when he had gone a little further thence, hee
saw James the son of Zebedee, & John his brother,
who also were in the Shippe, mending their nettes.
20 And straight-way, hee called them: and they
left their father Zebedee in the Shippe with the hyred
seruants, and went after him.
21 And they went into Capernaum, and straight-
way on the Sabbath day hee entred into the Synago-
gue, and taught.
22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for
he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not
as the Scribes.
23 And there was in their Synagogue a man with
an vncleane spirit, and hee cryed out.
24 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue we to doe with
thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy
vs? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.
25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy
peace, and come out of him.
26 And when the vncleane spirit had torne him,
and cryed with a loud voyce: hee came out of him.
27 And they were all amazed, in so much, that they
questioned among themselues, saying, What thing
is this? What new doctrine is this? For with au-
thoritie commaundeth hee euen the vncleane spirits,

and

and they doe obey him.

28 And immediatelie his fame spread ab
throughout all the Region round about Galilee.

29 And forthwith, when they were come
the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Si
and Andrew, with James, and John.

30 But Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a fe
and anone they tell him of her.

31 And hæ came and toke her by the hand, an
her vp: and immediatelie the Feuer left her, an
ministred vnto them.

32 And at Euen when the Sunne did set,
brought vnto him all that were diseased, and
that were possessed with deuils.

33 And all the Citie was gathered togeth
the doze.

34 And hæ healed manie that were sicke of d
diseases, and cast out many deuils, and suffered
the diuels to speake, because they knew him.

35 And in the morning, rising vp a great
before day, hæ went out, and departed into a soli
place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with h
followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they saide
him, All men seeke for thee.

38 And hæ said vnto them, Let vs goe into the
townes, that I may preach there also, for there
came I forth.

39 And hæ preached in their Synagogues, thro
out all Galilee, and cast out deuils.

40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching
and kneeling downe to him, and saying vnto

if thou wilt, thou canst make mée cleane.

41 And Iesus moued with compassion, put forth his hand and touched him, and saith vnto him, I will, bee thou cleane.

42 And assoone as hee had spoken, immediatelie the leprosie departed from him, and hee was cleansed.

43 And hee straitelie charged him, and forthwith sent him away,

44 And sayth vnto him, See thou tell nothing to any man, but goe thy way, shew thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer for thy cleaning those things which Moses commanded for a testimonie vnto them.

45 But hee went out, and beganne to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter: in so much that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desart places: and they came to him from euerie quarter.

## CHAP. II.

1. Christ healeth one sicke of the palsie. 14. Calleth Matthew. 15. And eateth with publicanes & sinners.

AND againe, he entred into Capernaum, after some dayes, & it was noysed that hee was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, in so much that there was no roome to receiue them, no not so much as about the doore: and hee preached the word vnto them.

3 And they came vnto him, bringing one sicke of the palsie, which was borne of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh vnto him for the preasse, they vncouered the roofe where hee was: and when they had broken it vp, they let downe the bed wherein the sicke of the palsie lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, hee said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sins bee forgiuen thee.

6 But there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts.

7 Why doeth this man thus speake blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes, but God onelie?

8 And immediatelie when Jesus perceiued in his Spirit, that they reasoned within themselues, he said vnto them, Why reason yee these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, thy sinnes bee forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed and walke?

10 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (hee saith to the sicke of the palsie,)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and goe thy way into thine owne house.

12 And immediatelie hee arose, tooke vp his bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And hee went forth againe by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted vnto him, & he taught them.

14 And as hee passed by, hee saw Leui, the sonne of Alpheus, sitting at the receit of Custome, and said vnto him, Follow mee. And hee arose and followed him.

15 And it came to passe, that as Jesus sate at meate in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate also together with Jesus, and his Disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eate with Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his

Disciples

sciples, How is it that hee eateth and drinketh with
blicanes and sinners?
17 When Iesus heard it, hee saith vnto them,
ey that are whole haue no neede of the Physician,
they that are sicke: I came not to call the righte-
, but sinners to repentance.
18 And the Disciples of Iohn, and of the Phari-
s, vsed to fast, and they come, and say vnto him,
hy doe the Disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees,
, but thy Disciples fast not?
19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of
bride-chamber fast while the Bride-groome is with
m? As long as they haue the Bride-groome with
m, they can not fast.
20 But the dayes will come, when the Bride-
me shall bee taken away from them, and then shall
y fast in those dayes.
21 No man also seweth a piece of new cloath on an
garment: else the new piece that filleth it vp, ta-
away from the old, and the rent is made worse.
22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottels,
the new wine doeth burst the bottels, and the wine
illed, and the bottels will bee marred: But new
e must bee put into new bottels.
23 And it came to passe, that hee went thorow the
e fieldes on the Sabbath day, and his Disciples
an as they went, to plucke the eares of corne.
24 And the Pharisees said vnto him, Behold, why
they on the Sabbath day ẏ which is not lawfull?
25 And hee said vnto them, Haue yee neuer read
at Dauid did, when hee had neede, and was an
gred, hee and they that were with him?
How hee went into the house of God, in the dayes

of Abiathar the high Priest, and did eate the
bread, which was not lawfull to eate, but
Priests, and also gaue to them which were with
27 And hee said vnto them, The Sabbath
was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.
28 Therefore the Sonne of Man is Lord also
Sabbath.

## CHAP. III.

1. The vvithered hand healed. 13. The twelue
postles chosen. 31. Who are Christes bro
sister, and mother.

AND he entred againe into the Synagogue,
was a man there which had a withered han
2 And they watched him, whither hee would
him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse
3 And hee saith vnto the man which had the w
red hand, Stand forth.
4 And hee saith vnto them, Is it lawfull t
good on the Sabbath dayes: or to doe euill? to sau
or to kill? but they helde their peace.
5 And when hee had looked round about on
with anger, being grieued for the hardnesse of
heartes, Hee saith vnto the man, Stretch forth
hand, And hee stretched it out: and his hand w
stored whole as the other.
6 And the Pharisees went foorth, and straigh
toke counsell with the Herodians against him,
they might destroy him.
7 But Iesus with-drew himselfe with his
ples, to the Sea: and a great multitude from G
followed him, and from Iudea.
8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea

m beyond Iordane, and they about Tyre and Sy-
, a great multitude, when they had heard what
ngs hee did, came vnto him.
9 And hæ spake to his Disciples that a small ship
uld wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they
uld throng him.
0 For he had healed many, insomuch ỹ they preassed
on him, for to touch him, as many as had plagues.
11 And vncleane spirits, when they saw him, fell
one before him, and cryed, saying, thou art the
nne of God.
12 And hæ straitly charged them, that they should
make him knowne.
13 And hæ goeth vp into a Mountaine, and called
s him whom hee would: and they came vnto him.
14 And hæ ordained twelue, ỹ they should bee with
, and that hee might send them forth to preach.
15 And to haue power to heale sicknesses, and to
out deuils.
16 And Simon hæ surnamed Peter.
17 And James the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn the
ther of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges:
ch is, The sonnes of thunder)
18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew.
Matthew, and Thomas, and James the sonne of
heus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite.
19 And Iudas Iscariot, which also afterward be-
ed him, and they went into an house.
20 And the multitude commeth together againe,
at they could not so much as eate bread.
21 And when his Friends heard of it, they went
to lay holde on him, for they said, hæ is beside
selfe.

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came downe fr
Hierusalem, said, Hee hath Beelzebub, and by
prince of the deuils casteth hee out deuils.

23 And hee called them vnto him, and saide v
them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan

24 And if a kingdome bee diuided against it sel
that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if an house bee diuided against it selfe, t
house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan, rise vp against himselfe, and
diuided, hee cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans hou
and spoile his goodes, except hee will first binde
strong man, and then hee will spoile his house.

28 Verilie I say vnto you, All sinnes shall bee
giuen vnto the sonnes of men, and blasphemies, w
with soeuer they shall blaspheme.

29 But hee that shall blaspheme against the h
Ghost, hath neuer forgiuenesse, but is in danger o
ternall damnation.

30 Because they said, hee hath an vncleane spi

31 ¶ There came then his brethren, and his
ther, and standing without, sent vnto him, calling h

32 And the multitude sate about him, and t
said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy breth
without seeke for thee.

33 And hee answered them, saying, Who is
mother, or my brethren?

34 And hee looked round about on them which
about him, and, said Beholde, my mother and
brethren.

35 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of GOD,
same is my brother, and my sister and mother.

CH

# CHAP. IIII.

The parable of the sower. 14. The meaning thereof. 26. Of the seede growing secretlie. 30. Of the mustarde seede.

AND hee began againe to teach by the Sea: and there was gathered vnto him a great multitude, that hee entered into a shippe, and sate on the Sea, and the whole multitude was by the Sea on the land.

2 And hee taught them manie thinges by parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sowe:

4 And it came to passe, as hee sowed, some fell by the way side, and the foules of the aire came, and deboured it vp.

5 And some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth: and immediatelie it sprung vp, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the Sunne was vp, it was scorched, and because it had no roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among Thornes, and the Thornes grew vp, and chocked it, and it yeelded no fruite.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeelde fruite that sprang vp, and increased, & brought forth some thirtie, and some sixtie, and some an hundreth.

9 And hee said vnto them, Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when hee was alone, they that were about him, with the twelue, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said vnto them, Vnto you it is giuē to know the misterie of the Kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all these things are done in parables.

12 That seeing they may see, and not perceiue, and hearing they may heare, and not vnderstand, lest at anie time they should bee conuerted, and their

sinnes should bee forgiuen them.

13 And hee said vnto them, Know yee not this parable? And how then will yee know all parables.

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sowen, but when they haue heard, Satan commeth immediately, and taketh away the word that was sowne in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sowne on stonie ground, who when they haue heard the word immediately receiue it with gladnesse.

17 And haue no roote in themselues, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sowen among thornes: such as heare the word.

19 And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lustes of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becommeth vnfruitfull.

20 And these are they which are sowen in good ground, such as heare the word, and receiue it, and bring forth fruite, some thirtie fold, some sixtie, and some an hundreth.

21 ¶ And hee said vnto them, Is a candle brought to bee put vnder a bushell, or vnder a bed? and not to bee set on a candle sticke?

22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man haue eares to heare let him heare.

24 And hee saide vnto them, take heede what ye heare: With what measure ye met, it shall bee mea-

ed to you: And vnto you ỳ heare shall more bee giuen.
25 For hee that hath to him shall bee giuen: and hee that hath not, from him shall bee taken, euen that which hee hath.
26 ¶ And hee saide, So is the Kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seede into the ground.
27 And should sleepe, & rise night and day, & the seed should spring, and grow vp, hee knoweth not how.
28 For the earth bringeth forth fruite of her selfe, first the blad, then the eare, after that the full corne in the eare.
29 But whē the fruit is brought forth, immediately hee putteth in the sickle, because the haruest is come.
30 ¶ And hee saide, Wherevnto shall wee liken the Kingdome of GOD? Or with what comparison shall wee compare it?
31 It is like a graine of Mustard-seede: which when it is sowen in the earth, is lesse than all the seedes that be in the earth.
32 But when it is sowen it groweth vp, and becommeth greater than all herbes; and shooteth out great branches, so that the foules of the aire may lodge vnder the shadow of it.
33 And with many such parables spake hee the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.
34 And without a parable spake hee not vnto them: and when they were alone, hee expounded all things to his Disciples.
35 And the same day when the Euen was come, hee saith vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.
36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they tooke him euen as hee was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And

37 And there arose a great stormе of wind, and the
waues beate into the Shippe, so that it was now full.
38 And hee was in the hinder part of the Shippe,
sleepe on a pillow, and they awake him, and say vn
to him, Master, carest thou not that wee perish?
39 And hee arose, and rebuked the winde, and sa
vnto the Sea, Peace, bee still: and the winde ceased
and there was a great calme.
40 And hee said vnto them, Why are yee fearefu
How is it that yee haue no faith?
41 And they feared exceedinglie, and said one to
nother, What manner of man is this, that euen
winde and the sea obey him?

## CHAP. V.

1. Christ deliuering the possessed of the legion of d
uils. 13. They enter into the Swine. 35. Iai
his Daughter.

AND they came ouer vnto the other side of the S
into the countrey of the Gadarens.
2 And when hee was come out of the Shippe, im
mediatelie there met him out of the Tombes, a m
with an vncleane spirit.
3 Who had his dwelling among the Tombes
and no man could bind him, no not with chaines:
4 Because that hee had beene often bound with fe
ters and chaines, and the chaines had beene pluck
asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: n
ther could any man tame him.
5 And alwayes night and day, hee was in t
Mountaines, and in the Tombes, crying, and cutti
himselfe with stones.
6 But when hee sawe Iesus afarre off, hee ca

and worshipped him.

7 And cryed with a loud voyce, & said, What haue I to doe with thée, Iesus, thou Sonne of the most high God? I adjure thée by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For hæ saide vnto him, Come out of the man thou vncleane spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And hæ besought him much, that hæ would not send them away out of the countrie.

11 Now there was there nigh vnto the Mountaines a great Herd of Swine, fæding.

12 And all the Deuils besought him, saying, Send vs into the Swine, that wæ may enter into them.

13 And forth-with Iesus gaue them leaue. And the vncleane spirites went out, and entered into the Swine: and the Herd ranne violently downe into the place into the Sea, (they were about two thousand) and were chocked in the Sea.

14 And they that fed the Swine fled, and told it in the citie, and in the countrey. And they went out to sée what was it that was done.

15 And they came to Iesus, and sée him that was possessed with the deuill, & had the Legion, sitting, and cloathed, and in his right minde, & they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, tolde them how it befell to him that was possessed with the deuill, and also concerning the Swine.

17 And they beganne to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when hæ was come into the Shippe, hæ that had bæne possessed with the deuill, prayed him that hæ might bæ with him.

19 How-

19 Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but saith vnto him, Goe home to thy Friendes, and tell them howe great thinges the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And hee departed, and beganne to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marueile.

21 And when Jesus was passed ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, much people gathered vnto him, and was nigh vnto the Sea.

22 And behold, there commeth one of the Rulers of the Synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him, hee fell downe at his feete.

23 And besought him greatlie, saying, My little Daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee, come and lay thine hand on her, that shee may be healed, and shee shall liue.

24 And Jesus went with him, and much people, followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certaine woman, which had an issue of blood, twelue yeeres.

26 And suffered many thinges of manie Physicians, and had spent all that shee had, and nothing bettered but rather grew worse.

27 When shee had heard of Jesus, came in the preasse behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For shee said, If I might touch but his cloathes, I shall bee whole.

29 And straightway the fountaine of her blood was dried vp: and shee felt in her bodie that shee was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immediately knowing in himselfe vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preasse,

preasse, and said, Who hath touched my cloathes?

31 And his Disciples saide vnto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched mee?

32 And hee looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done to her, came, and fell downe before him, and tolde him all the trueth.

34 And hee saide vnto her, Daughter thy faith hath made thee whole, Goe in peace, and bee whole of thy plague.

35 While hee yet spake, there came from the Ruler of the Synagogues house, certaine which said, Thy Daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoone as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, hee saith vnto the Ruler of the Synagogue, Bee not afraide, onelie believe.

37 And hee suffered no man to follow him, saue Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And hee commeth to the house of the Ruler of the Synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatlie.

39 And when hee was come in, hee saith vnto them, Why make yee this adoe, and weepe? the Damosell is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorne. But when hee had put them all out, hee taketh the father, and mother of the Damosell, and them that were with him, and entred where the Damosell was lying.

41 And hee tooke the Damosell by the hand, and said vnto her, Talitha cumi: which is being interpreted,

prefed, Damosell, (I say vnto thée) Arise.

42 And straightway the Damosell arose, and walked, for shée was of the age of twelue yéeres. And they were astonished with great astontishment.

43 And hée charged them straitlie, that no man should know it: and commaunded that some thing should bée giuen her to eate.

## CHAP. VI.

1. Christ is contemned of his countrie-men. 13. Iohn Baptist is beheaded. 45. Christ walketh on the Sea.

AND hée went out from thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his Disciples followed him.

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, hée began to teach in the Synagogue: & many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisedome is this which is giuen vnto him, that euen such mightie workes are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the Carpenter, the sonne of Marie, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon,? And are not his Sisters hére with vs? And they were offended at him.

4 But Jesus saide vnto them, A Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kinne, and in his owne house,

5 And he could there doe no mighty worke saue y he laid his hands vpon a few sicke folke, & healed them.

6 And hée marueiled because of their vnbeliefe. And hée went round about the villages, teaching.

7 ¶ And hée calleth vnto him the twelue, and began to send them forth, by two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits.

8 And commaunded them that they should take
hing for their journey, saue a staffe onelie: no scrip,
bread, no money in their purse:
9 But bee shoode with Sandales: and not put on
coates.
10 And hee said vnto them, In what place soeuer
enter into an house, there abide till yee depart from
t place.
11 And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare
, when yee depart thence, shake off the dust vn-
your feete, for a testimonie against them: Verilie
ay vnto you, It shall bee more tolerable for Sodome
Gomorrha in the day of judgement, than for
t citie.
12 And they went out, and preached that men
uld repent.
13 And they cast out many deuiles, and anointed
th oyle many that were sicke, and healed them.
14 And King Herode heard of him, (for his name
as spread abroad:) and he said, That Iohn the Bap-
was risen from the dead, and therefore mightie
kes doe shew forth themselues in him.
15 Others said, That it is Elias, And others said,
at it is a Prophet, or as one of the Prophets.
16 But when Herode heard thereof, he said, It is
hn whom I beheaded, hee is risen from the dead.
17 For Herode himselfe had sent forth & laide holde
Iohn, & bound him in prison, for Herodias sake,
brother Philips wife, for hee had married her.
18 For Iohn had said vnto Herode, It is not law-
l for thee to haue thy brothers wife.
19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrell against him,
would haue killed him, but shee could not.

20 For Herode feared Iohn, knowing that
was a iust man, and an holie, and obserued him:
when hee heard him, hee did manie thinges, and h
him gladlie.

21 And when a conuenient day was come,
Herode on his birth-day made a Supper to his lo
high captaines, and chiefe estates of Galilee.

22 And when the Daughter of the saide Hero
came in, and daunced, & pleased Herode and them
sate with him, the King said vnto the Damosell,
of mee whatsoeuer thou wilt, and I will giue it
23 And hee sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou
aske of mee, I will giue it thee, vnto the halfe o
kingdome.

24 And shee went forth, and said vnto her mo
What shall I aske? And shee said, The head of
the Baptist.

25 And shee came in straightway with haste,
the King, and asked, saying, I will that thou giu
by and by in a Charger, the head of Iohn the Bap
26 And the King was exceeding sorie: yet fo
oath sake, and for their sakes which sate with
hee would not reiect her.

27 And immediatelie the king sent an executi
and commanded his head to bee brought: and hee
and beheaded him in the prison.

28 And brought his head in a charger, & gaue
the Damosell, and the Damosell gaue it to her mo
29 And when his Disciples heard of it, they
and tooke vp his corpse, and laid it in a tombe.

30 And the Apostles gathered themselues t
ther vnto Iesus and tolde him all thinges, both
they had done, and what they had taught.

31

31 And hæ ſaid vnto them, Come yée your ſelues apart into a deſart place, and reſt a while. For there were manie comming and going, and they had no leaſure ſo much as to eate.

32 And they departed into a deſart place by ſhippe priuatelie.

33 And the people ſaw them departing, and many knew him, and ranne afoote thither out of all cities, out-went them, and came together vnto him.

34 And Jeſus when hæ came out, ſaw much people, and was moued with compaſſion toward them, becauſe they were as ſhœpe not hauing a ſhepheard: and hæ beganne to teach them manie things.

35 And when the day was now farre ſpent, his Diſciples came vnto him, and ſaid, This is a deſart place, and now the time is farre paſſed:

36 Send them away, that they may goe into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themſelues bread: for they haue nothing to eate.

37 Hæ anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Giue yée them to eate. And they ſay vnto him, Shall wæ goe and buy two hundreth pennie-worth of bread, and giue them to eate?

38 And hæ ſaith vnto them, Howe many loaues haue yée? goe, and ſæ. And when they knew, they ſay, Fiue, and two fiſhes.

39 And hee commanded them to make all ſit down by companies vpon the greene graſſe.

40 And they ſate downe in rankes, by hundreths, and by fifties.

41 And when hæ had taken the fiue loaues, and the two fiſhes, hæ looked vp to heauen, and bleſſed, and brake the loaues, & gaue them to his Diſciples to

set before them, & ỳ two fishes diuided he amõg them all.

42 And they did all eate, and were filled.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eate of the leaues, were about fiue thousand men.

45 And straightway hee constrained his Disciples to get into the shippe, and to goe to the other side before vnto Bethsaida, while hee sent away the people.

46 And when hee had sent them away, hee departed into a Mountaine to pray.

47 And when the Euen was come, the shippe was in the midst of the Sea, and hee alone on the land.

48 And hee saw them toyling in rowing (for the wind was contrarie vnto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, hee commeth vnto them, walking vpon the Sea, and would haue passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking vpon the Sea, they supposed it had beene a spirit, and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) and immediatelie hee talked with them, and saith vnto them, Bee of good cheare, It is I, bee not afraide.

51 And hee went vp vnto them into the Ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselues, beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaues, for their hearts was hardened.

53 And when they had passed ouer, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the Shore.

54 And when they were come out of the Shippe, straightway they knew him,

55 And ranne through that whole region round about, and began to carrie about in beds, those that

were sicke, where they heard hæ was.

56 And whithersoeuer hæ entered, into vailages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sicke in the stræts, and besought him, that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him, were made whole.

## CHAP. VII.

1. The Pharisees finde fault vvith the Disciples, for eating vvith vnwashen handes, 14. Meate defileth not the man.

THē came together vnto him ye Pharisees, & certain of the Scribes, which came from Hierusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his Disciples eate bread with defiled (that is to say, with vnwashen hands) they found fault.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Iewes except they wash their handes oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders.

4 And when they come from the Market, except they wash, they eate not. And many other thinges there bee, which they haue receiued to holde, as the washing of cups & pottes, brasen vessels, & of tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walke not thy Disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate bread with vnwashen hands?

6 Hee answered, and said vnto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth mæ with their lippes but their heart is farre from mæ.

7 Howbeit in vaine doe they worshippe mee, teaching for doctrines the commandements of men.

8 For laying aside the Commandement of God, yee

hold the tradition of men, as the washing of the pots and cups: and manie other such like thinges yee doe.

9 And hee said vnto them, Full well yee reject the Commandement of God, that yee may keepe your owne tradition.

10 For Moses saide, Honour thy father and thy mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death..

11 But yee say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, A gift, by whatsoeuer thou mightest bee profited by mee: hee shall bee free.

12 And yee suffer him no more to doe ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which yee haue deliuered: and manie such like things doe yee.

14 ¶ And when hee had called the people vnto him, hee saide vnto them, Hearken vnto mee euerie one of you, and vnderstand.

15 There is nothing from without a man, that entring into him, can defile him: but the thinges which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And whē he was entred into the house from the people, his Disciples asked him cōcerning the parable.

18 And hee saith vnto them, Are yee so without vnderstanding also? Doe yee not perceiue that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him.

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the bellie, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meates?

20 And

20 And hee said, That which commeth out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed euill thoughts, adulteries, fornicatiõs, murthers,

22 Thefts, couetousnes, wickednes, deceit, lasciuiousnesse, an euill eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse.

23 All these euill thoughtes come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ And from thence hee arose, and went into the borders of Tyre & Sidon, & entred into an house, and would haue no man know it, but he could not bee hid.

25 For a certaine woman, whose young Daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feete.

26 (The woman was an Greeke, a Syrophenician by nation:) and shee besought him that hee would cast forth the deuill out of her Daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first bee filled: for it is not meete to take the Childrens bread, and to cast it vnto the Dogges.

28 And shee answered, and saide vnto him, Yes, Lord, yet the Dogges vnder the Table eate of Childrens crummes.

29 And hee saide vnto her, For this saying, goe thy way, the Deuill is gone out of thy Daughter.

30 And whē shee was came to her house, she found the deuill gone out, and her Daughter layed vpon the bed.

31 ¶ And againe departing from the coastes of Tyre and Sidon, hee came vnto the Sea of Galilee, through the midst of the Coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring vnto him one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speach: and they beseech him to put his hand vpon him.

33 And hee toke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his eares, and hee spit, and touched his tongue:

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and saith vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, bee opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened and the string of his tongue was loosed, & he spake plaine.

36 And hee charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deale they published it.

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, Hee hath done all thinges well: hee maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake.

## CHAP. VIII.

1. Christ feedeth the people miraculously. 10. And refuseth to giue a signe to the Pharisees.

IN those dayes the multitude being verie great, and hauing nothing to eate, Iesus called his Disciples vnto him, and saith vnto them.

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now beene with mee three dayes: and haue nothing to eate.

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they will faint by the way: for diuers of them came from farre.

4 And his Disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread heere in the wildernesse?

5 And hee asked them, How many loaues haue yee? And they said, Seuen.

6 And hee commanded the people to sit downe on the ground: and hee toke the seuen loaues, and gaue thankes

thankes, and brake them, and gaue to his Disciples to set before them, & they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and hee blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eate, and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meat ỳ was left, seuen baskets full.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand and hee sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway hæ entred into a ship with his Disciples & came into the partes of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen tempting him.

12 And hæ sighed deepelie in his Spirit, and saith, Why doe this generation seeke after a signe, Verilie I say vnto you, There shall no signe bee giuen vnto this generation.

13 And hee left them, and entring into the shippe againe, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ Nowe the Disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the shippe with them more than one loafe.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take hæde, beware of the leauẽ of the Pharisees, & of the leauen of Herode.

16 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, It is, because wee haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew it, hæ saith vnto them, Why reason yee, because yee haue no bread? Perceiue yæ not yet, neither vnderstand? Haue yæ your heart yet hardened?

18 Hauing eyes, see yæ not? and hauing eares, heare yee not? and doe yee yet not remember?

19 When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thou-

sand, howe many basketes full of fragments tooke
vp? They said vnto him, Twelue.
20 And when the seauen among foure thousa
Howe many baskets full of fragmentes tooke yæ
And they said, Seuen.
21 And hæ said vnto them, How is it that yé
not vnderstand?
22 ¶ And hæ commeth to Bethsaida and they b
a blinde man vnto him, & besought him to touch h
23 And hæ tooke the blind man by the hand,
led him out of the towne, and when hee had spitt
his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, hæ asked h
hæ saw ought.
24 And he looked vp, & said, I sée mẽ as trées walki
25 After that hæ put his hands againe vpon his e
and made him looke vp: and hæ was restored,
saw euerie man clearelie.
26 And he sent him away to his house, saying
ther goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in the to
27 ¶ And Iesus went out, & his Disciples into
town of Cesarea Philippi: & by ỹ way he asked his
ciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe mẽ say ỹ I
28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but s
say, Elias: and others one of the Prophets.
29 And he saith vnto them, But whom say ye
I am? And Peter answered, and saide vnto h
Thou art the Christ.
30 And hee charged them that they should tell
man of him.
31 And hee began to teach them, that the Son
of Man must suffer manie thinges, and bee reiecte
the Elders, and of the chiefe Priestes, and Scrib
and bee killed, and after three dayes rise againe.

32 And hee spake that saying openlie. And Peter
oke him, and began to rebuke him.
33 But when hee had turned about, and looked on
is Disciples, hee rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee
ehinde mee Satan: for thou sauoureſt not the things
hat bee of God, but the thinges that bee of men.
34 ¶ And when hee had called the people vnto
im, with his Disciples also, hee saide vnto them,
Whosoeuer will come after mee, let him denie him-
elfe, and take vp his crosse and follow mee.
35 And whosoeuer shall saue his life, shall lose it,
ut whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the
Gospels the same shall saue it.
36 For what shall it profite a man, if hee shall
aine the whole world, and lose his owne soule?
37 Or what shall a mã giue in exchange of his soule?
38 Whosoeuer therefore shalbe ashamed of me, & of
y words in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of
m also shall the Son of Man bee ashamed, when hee
meth in the glory of his Father w̃ the holy Angels.

## CHAP. IX.

Iesus is transfigured. 30. Hee fortelleth his death, resurrection. 33. And giueth diuerse instructions to his Disciples.

AND hee said vnto them, Verilie I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which all not taste of death, till they haue seene the Kingdome of God come with power.
2 And after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them vp into an high Mountaine apart by themselues: and hee was transfigured before them.

3 And

3 And his rayment became shining, exceeding, w
as snow: so as no Fuller on earth can white them.
4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with
ses: and they were talking with Jesus.
5 And Peter answered, and saide to Jesus,
ster, it is good for vs to bee heere, and let vs make t
Tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses,
one for Elias.
6 For hee wist not what to say, for they were
afraid.
7 And there was a cloude that ouer-shadowed
and a voyce came out of the cloude saying, This is
beloued Sonne: heare him.
8 And suddenly when they had looked round a
they saw no man any more, saue Jesus onelie
themselues.
9 And as they came downe from the Mounta
hee charged them that they should tell no man,
thinges they had seene, till the Sonne of Man
risen from the dead.
10 And they kept that saying with themsel
questioning one with another, what the rising
the dead should meane.
11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say
Scribes, that Elias must first come?
12 And hee answered, and told them, Elias ve
commeth first, and restoreth all thinges, and ho
is written of the Sonne of Man, that hee must s
many things and bee set at naught.
13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is indeed c
and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they li
as it is written of him.
14 ¶ And when hee came to his Disciples, he

ltitude about them, and the Scribes questioning them.

And straightway all the people, when they be- him, were greatlie amazed, and running to him, ted him.

6 And hee asked the Scribes, What question yee them?

7 And one of the multitude answered, and said, ter, I haue brought vnto thee my sonne, which a dumbe spirit.

8 And whereſoeuer hee taketh him, hee teareth , and hee foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, pineth away: and I spake to thy Disciples, that should cast him out, and they could not.

9 Hee answered him and said, O faithlesse gene- on, how long shall I bee with you? how long shall fer you? bring him vnto mee.

10 And they brought him vnto him: and when hee him, straightway the spirit tare him, and hee fell e ground, and wallowed, foaming.

11 And hee asked his father, How long is it agoe this came vnto him? And hee said, Of a Childe.

12 And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst doe thing, haue compassion on vs, and helpe vs?

13 Jesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleeue, all gs are possible to him that beleeueth.

14 And straightway the father of the Childe cryed and said with teares, Lord, I beleeue, helpe thou vnbeliefe.

15 Whē Jesus saw ý the people came rūning toge- he rebuked the foule spirit, saying vnto him, Thou e, & deafe spirit, I charge thee come out of him, & no moze into him.

26 And

26 And the ſpirit cryed, and rent him ſore, and came out of him, and hee was as one dead, inſomuch that many ſaid, Hee is dead.

27 But Jeſus tooke him by the hand, and lift him vp, and hee aroſe.

28 And when hæ was come into the houſe his Diſciples aſked him priuatelie, Why could not we caſt him out?

29 And hæ ſaid vnto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and faſting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and paſſed through Galilee, & he would not that any man ſhould know it.

31 For hæ taught his Diſciples, and ſaid vnto them, The Sonne of Man is deliuered into the hands of men, and they ſhall kill him, and after hee is killed, hæ ſhall riſe the third day.

32 And they vnderſtood not that ſaying, and were afraid to aſke him.

33 ¶ And hee came to Capernaum, and being in the houſe, hee aſked them, What was it that yee diſputed among your ſelues by the way?

34 But they held their peace: For by the way they had diſputed among themſelues, who ſhould be the greateſt.

35 And hee ſate downe, and called the twelue, and ſaith vnto them: If any man deſire to bee firſt, the ſame ſhall bee laſt of all, and ſeruant of all.

36 And hee tooke a Child, and ſet him in the midſt of them: and when hee had taken him in his Armes, hee ſaid vnto them,

37 Whoſoeuer ſhall receiue one of ſuch children in my Name, receiueth mee: and whoſoeuer ſhall receiue mee, receiueth not mee, but him that ſent mee.

38 ¶

38 ¶ And Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and hee followed not vs, and wee forbade him, because hee followed not vs.

39 But Iesus said, Forbid him not, for there is no man, which shall doe a miracle in my Name, that can lightly speake euill of mee.

40 For hee that is not against vs, is on our part.

41 For whosoeuer shall giue you a cuppe of water to drinke in my Name, because yee belong to Christ, verilie, I say vnto you, hee shall not lose his reward.

42 And whosoeuer shall offend one of these little ones that beleeue in mee, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and hee were cast into the Sea.

43 And if thine hand offend thee, cut it off: It is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than hauing two hands, to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shall bee quenched.

44 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foote offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than hauing two feete, to be cast into hell in the fire ỹ neuer shall bee quenched:

46 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdome of God with one eye, than hauing two eyes to bee cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For euerie one shall bee salted with fire, and euerie sacrifice shall bee salted with salt.

50 Salt is good: but if the Salt haue lost his
nesse, wherewith will you season it? Haue
your selues, and haue peace one with another.

## CHAP. X.

2. Touching diuorcement. 13. Little Ch
brought to Christ. 23. The danger of riche

AND hee rose vp from thence, and comme
the coastes of Iudea, by the farther side o
dane: and the people resorted vnto him againe,
as hee was wont hee taught them againe.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and
him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his
tempting him.

3 And hee answered, and saide vnto them,
did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a
diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them
the hardnesse of your heart hee wrote you this p

6 But from the beginning of the creation,
made them male, and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leaue his Fath
Mother, and cleaue to his Wife.

8 And they twaine shall bee one flesh: so then
are no more twaine, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned togethe
no man put asunder.

10 And in the house his Disciples asked h
gaine of the same matter.

11 And hee saith vnto them, Whosoeuer sha
away his wife, and marrie another, committeth
terie against her.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and bee married to another, she committeth adultery.

13 ¶ And they brought young children to him, that hee should touch them: and his Disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Jesus saw it, hee was much displeased, and said vnto them, Suffer the little children to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of GOD.

15 Verilie I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little child, hee shall not enter therein.

16 And hee tooke them vp in his Armes, put his hands vpon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ And when hee was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I doe that I may inherite eternall life?

18 And Jesus said vnto him, Why callest thou mee good? There is no man good, but one, that is, God.

19 Thou knowest the Commandementes, Doe not commit Adulterie, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Speake not beare false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy Father and Mother.

20 And hee answered, and said vnto him, Master, all these things I haue obserued from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loued him, and said vnto him, One thing thou lackest, Goe thy way, sell whatsoeuer thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, take vp the crosse, and follow mee.

22 And hee was sad at that saying, and went away grieued; for hee had great possessions.

23 ¶ And

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and vnto his Disciples, How hardlie shall they that riches enter into the Kingdome of God.

24 And the Disciples were astonished at his w But Jesus answereth againe, and saith vnto Children, how hard is it for them that trust in r to enter into the Kingdome of God?

25 It is easier for a camel to go thorow ẏ eye of dle, thã for a rich mã to enter into ẏ kingdome of

26 And they were astonished out of measure ing among themselues, Who then can bee saued

27 And Jesus looking vpon them, saith, men it is impossible, but not with God: For wit all thinges are possible.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say vnto him, L haue left all, and followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered, and said, Verilie vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, thren or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, o dren, or lands, for my sake, and the Gospels,

30 But hee shall receiue an hundreth folde this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, a thers, and children, and lands with persecution in the world to come eternall life:

31 But many that are first, shalbe last: ⁊ ẏ la

32 ¶ And they were in the way going vp t rusalem, and Jesus went before them, and the amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid hee tooke againe the twelue, and beganne to tel what things should happen vnto him,

33 Saying, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusale the Sonne of Man shall bee deliuered vnto the Priests, and vnto the Scribes: ⁊ they shall con

him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles.
34 And they shall mocke him, and shall scourge him, and shall spitte at him, and shall kill him: and the third day hee shall rise againe.
35 ¶ And Iames and Iohn, the sonnes of Zebedee, came vnto him, saying, Master, wee would that thou shouldest doe for vs whatsoeuer wee shall desire.
36 And hee said vnto them, What would yee that I should doe for you?
37 They saide vnto him, Grant vnto vs, that wee may sit one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glorie.
38 But Iesus said vnto them, Yee know not what ye aske: Can yee drinke of the cup that I drinke of? and bee baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?
39 And they said vnto him, Wee can. And Iesus said vnto them, Yee shall indeede drinke of the Cuppe that I drinke of: and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall yee bee baptized:
40 But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to giue: but it shall bee giuen to them for whom it is prepared.
41 And when the ten heard it, they beganne to bee much displeased with Iames and Iohn.
42 But Iesus called them to him, and saith vnto them, Yee know that they which are accompted to rule ouer the Gentiles, exercise lordship ouer them: and their great ones exercise authoritie vpon them.
43 But so shall it not bee among you: but whosoeuer will bee great among you: shall bee your minister,
44 And whosoeuer of you will bee the chiefest, shall bee seruant of all.

45 For euen the Sonne of Man came not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many.

46 ¶ And they came to Iericho: and as hee went out of Iericho with his Disciples: and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus the sonne of Timeus sate by the high wayes side begging.

47 And when hee heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, hee beganne to cry out, and say, Iesus, thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on mee.

48 And many charged him, that hee should hold his peace: but hee cryed the more a great deale, Thou Sonne of Dauid haue mercie vpon mee.

49 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they called the blinde man, saying vnto him, Bee of good comfort, rise, hee calleth thee.

50 And hee casting away his garment, rose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I shall doe vnto thee? The blinde man said vnto him, Lord, that I might receiue my sight.

52 And Iesus said vnto him, Goe thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole: And immediatelie hee receiued his sight, and followed Iesus in the way.

## CHAP. XI.

1. Christ rideth with triumph into Hierusalem. 12. Hee curseth the fruitlesse leasie tree. 15. Hee purgeth the Temple.

AND when they came nigh to Hierusalem, vnto Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the Mount of Oliues, hee sendeth forth two of his Disciples.

2 And saith vnto them, Goe your way into the

lage ouer against you, and as soone as yée bée entred into it, yée shall find a Colt tyed, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why doe yée this? say yée, That the Lord hath nœde of him: and straight way hée will send him thither.

4 And they went their way, and found the Colt tyed by the Doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certaine of them that stoode there, said vnto them, What doe yée loose the Colt?

6 And they said vnto them euen as Iesus had commanded: and they let them goe.

7 And they brought the Colt to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and hée sate vpon him.

8 And manie spread their garmentes in the way: and others cut downe branches off the trees, and strowed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, blessed is hée that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed bée the Kingdome of our Father Dauid, that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna, in the highest.

11 And Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple: and when hée had looked round about vpon all thinges, and now the Euen-tide was come, hee went out vnto Bethanie, with the twelue.

12 ¶ And on the Morrow, when they were come from Bethanie, hée was hungrie.

13 And seeing a fig-trée a farre off, hauing leaues, hée came, if haplie hée might finde any thing thereon, and when hée came to it, hée found nothing but

leaues: for the time of figges was not yet.

14 And Iesus answered, and said vnto it. No man eate fruite of thee hereafter for euer. And his Disciples heard it.

15 And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and beganne to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouer-threw the Tables of the Money-changers, and the seates of them that solde Doues,

16 And would not suffer that any man should carrie any vessell thorow the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, Mine House shall bee called of all nations the House of prayer: But ye haue made it a denne of Theeues.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe Priestes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when Euen was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ And in the Morning, as they passed by, they saw the figge-tree dryed vp from the rootes.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saieth vnto him, Master, beholde the figg-tree which thou cursedst is withered away:

22 And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Haue faith in God.

23 For verilie I say vnto you, That whosoeuer shall say vnto this Mountaine, Be thou removed, & be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall belieue that those thinges which hee saith shall come to passe; hee shall haue whatsoeuer hee saith.

24 Therefore I say vnto you, What thinges soeuer ye desire when ye pray, belieue that ye receiue

them, and yée shall haue them.

25 And when yée stand praying, forgiue, if yee haue ought against any: that your Father also which is in heauen, may forgiue your trespasses.

26 But if yée doe not forgiue, neither will your Father which is in heauen forgiue your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they came againe to Hierusalem, and as hée was walking in the Temple, there came to him the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders.

28 And say vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? And who gaue thée this authoritie to doe these things?

29 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske of you one question, and answere mee, and I will tell you by what authoritie I doe these thinges.

30 The Baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? Answere mée.

31 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If wée shall say, From heauen, hée will say, Why then did not yée belieue him?

32 But if wée shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted Iohn that hée was a Prophet indéede.

33 And they answered, & said vnto Iesus, We cãnot tell. And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Neither doe I tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

## CHAP. XII.

1. The parable of the Vine-yarde. 12. Touching the paying of tribute. 18. And the resurrection. The Widow, and her two mites.

AND he began to speake vnto them by parables. A certaine man planted a Vine-yarde, and set an

hedge about it, and digged a place for the Wine fat, and built a Towre, and let it out to Husband-men, and went into a farre countrey.

2 And at the season, hee sent to the Husband-men a seruant, that hee might receiue from the Husbandmen of the fruite of the Wine-yarde.

3 And they caught him, and beate him, and sent him away emptie.

4 And againe hee sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefullie handled.

5 And againe, hee sent another, and him they killed: and many others, beating some, & killing some.

6 Hauing yet therefore one Son, his wel-beloued, hee sent him also last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my Sonne.

7 But those Husband-men said among themselues, This is the Heire, come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shall bee ours.

8 And they toke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the Wine-yarde.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the Wine-yarde doe? Hee will come and destroy the Husband-men, and will giue the Wine-yarde vnto others.

10 And haue yee not read this Scripture: The stone which the builders reiected, is become the heade of the Corner.

11 This was the Lordes doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew y' hee had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ And they send vnto him certaine of the Pharisees,

lees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.
14 And when they were come, they say vnto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God, in trueth. Is it lawfull to giue Tribute to Cesar, or not?
15 Shall wee giue, or shall wee not giue? But hee knowing their hypocrisie, said vnto them, Why tempt you mee? Bring mee a pennie, that I may see it.
16 And they brought it: and hee saith vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said vnto him, Cesars.
17 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Render to Cesar, the things that are Cesars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marueiled at him.
18 ¶ Then came vnto him the Sadducees, which say, There is no resurrection, and they asked him, saying,
19 Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If a mans brother die, and leaue his wife behind him, and leaue no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.
20 Now there were seuen brethren: and the first tooke a wife, and dying, left no seede.
21 And the second tooke her, and dyed, neither left hee any seede, and the third likewise.
22 And the seuen had her and left no seede: last of all the woman dyed also.
23 In the resurrection therefore when they shall rise, whose wife shall shee bee of them? for the seuen had her to wife.
24 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Doe yee not therefore erre, because yee know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they
ther marrie, nor are giuen in marriage: but ar
Angels which are in Heauen.
26 And as touching the dead, that they rise, h
yee not reade in the booke of Moses, howe in the
God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of A
ham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob
27 Hee is not the God of the dead, but the G
the liuing, yee therefore doe greatlie erre.
28 ¶ And one of the Scribes came, and ha
heard them reasoning together, and perceiuing
hee had answered them well, asked him which i
first Commandement of all.
29 And Iesus answered him, The first of all C
mandements is, Heare O Israel, the Lord our
is one Lord:
30 And thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with
thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all
minde, and with all thy strength: This is the
Commandement.
31 The second is like, namelie this, Thou s
loue thy Neighbour as thy selfe: there is none o
Commandement greater than these.
32 And the Scribe said vnto him, Well M
thou hast said the trueth, for there is one God,
there is none other but hee.
33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with
the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with
the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe
more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices
34 And when Iesus saw y he answered discreet
hee said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the K
dome of God, And no man after that durst aske
any question.

35 A

35 ¶ And Iesus answered, and saide, while hée
aught in the Temple, Howe say the Scribes that
hrist is the Sonne of Dauid?
36 For Dauid himselfe saide, by the holie Ghost,
e Lord, said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,
ll I make thine enemies thy foote-stoole.
37 Dauid therefore himselfe calleth him Lord, and
hence is hee then his Sonne? And the common peo-
le heard him gladlie.
38 ¶ And hée said vnto them in his doctrine, Be-
are of the Scribes, which loue to goe in long cloat-
ing, and loue salutations in the Market places,
39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and
he vppermost roomes at feasts:
40 Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a pre-
tence make long prayers: These shall receiue grea-
er damnation.
41 ¶ And Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie,
nd beheld how the people cast money into the trea-
urie: and many that were rich, cast in much.
42 And there came a certaine poore Widow, and
hée threw in two mites, which make a farthing.
43 And hée called vnto him his Disciples, and
aith vnto them: Verilie I say vnto you, That this
poore widow hath cast more in, than all they which
haue cast into the treasurie.
44 For all they did cast in of their abundãce: but she
of her wãt, did cast in all ỹ she had, euen all her liuing.

## CHAP. XIII.

1. The destruction of the Temple. 9. Persecution for the Gospel. 14. Great calamities to the Iewes. 15. Christes comming to judgement.

And

AND as hée went out of the Temple, one of his Disciples saith vnto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are heere.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not bée left one stone vpon another, that shall not bee throwen downe.

3 And as hée sate vpon the Mount of Oliues, ouer against the Temple, Peter, Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him priuately.

4 Tell vs when shall these things bée? And what shall be the signe whē all these things shalbe fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answering them, began to say, Take héed lest any man deceiue you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

7 And when yée shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres, bée yée not troubled: for such things must néedes bée, but the end shall not bee yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall bée earthquakes in diuerse places, and there shall bée famines and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrowes.

9 ¶ But take héede to your selues, for they shall deliuer you vp to the Counsels, and in the Synagogues ye shalbe beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them.

10 And the Gospel must first bée published among all Nations.

11 But when they shall leade you and deliuer you vp, take no thought before hand what yée shall speake, neither doe yée premeditate: but whatsoeuer shall be giuen you in that houre, that speake yée: for it is not yée that speake, but the holy Ghost.

ow the brother shall betray the brother to death,
ather the son, & the children shall rise vp against
arents, & shall cause them to bee put to death.
nd yee shall bee hated of all men for my Names
but hee that shall endure to the end, the same
hee saued.

¶ But whē ye shall see the abominatiō of desola-
oken of by Daniel, the Prophet, standing where
ght not, (let him that readeth vnderstand) then
em that bee in Iudea flee to the Mountaines:
And let him that is on the house tope, not goe
into the house, neither enter therein to take any
out of his house.
And let him that is in the field, not turne backe
e for to take vp his garment.
But woe to them that are with childe and to
that giueth sucke in those dayes.
And pray ye ỹ your flight be not in the winter.
For in those dayes shall bee affliction, such as
not from the beginning of the creation, which
created vnto this time, neither shall bee.
And except that the Lord had shortned those
s, no flesh should be saued: but for the Elects sake
hee hath chosen, hee hath shortned those dayes.
And then, if any man shall say to you, Loe, here
rist, or loe, hee is there: beleeue him not.
For false Christs and false prophets shall rise,
shall shewe signes and wonders, to seduce, if it
possible, euen the Elect.
But take yee heede: behold, I haue foretold you
ings.

¶ But in those dayes, after that tribulation, the
ne shalbe darkned, & the Mone shall not giue her

25 And

25 And the Starres of Heauen shall fall, powers that are in heauen shall bee shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of M[an] ming in the cloudes, with great power and gl[ory]

27 And then shall hee send his Angels, a[nd] gather together his Elect from the foure winde[s] the vttermost part of the earth, to the vtterm[ost] of heauen.

28 Now learne a parable of the figge-tree, her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth lea[ves] know that Summer is neere.

29 So yee in like manner, when yee shall s[ee] thinges come to passe, know that it is nigh, e[ven] the dores.

30 Verilie I say vnto you, that this Gen[eration] shall not passe, till all these things bee done.

31 Heauen and Earth shall passe away: b[ut] words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that houre kn[oweth] no man, no not the Angels which are in heauen[s] ther the Sonne, but the Father.

33 Take yee heede, watch and pray: for yee not when the time is.

43 For the Sonne of man is as a man takin[g] iourney, who left his house, and gaue authoritie seruants, and to euerie man his worke, and com[man]ded the porter to watch:

35 Watch yee therefore (for yee know not the Master of the house commeth, at Euen, or a[t] night, or at cocke-crowing, or in the morning)

36 Lest comming suddenly, hee find you slee[ping]

37 And what I say vnto you, I say vnt[o] Watch.

CH

nſpiracie againſt Chriſt. 3. A woman powreth
e on his head. 10. Iudas ſelleth him. 43. Be-
yeth him. 66. Peter denieth him.

Fter two dayes was the feaſt of the Paſſeouer,
and of vnleauened bꝛead: and the chiefe Pꝛieſtes,
he Scribes ſought how they might take him by
, and put him to death.

But they ſaid, Not on the feaſt day, leſt there bee
ꝛoꝛe of the people.

¶ And beeing in Bethanie, in the houſe of Si-
the leper, as hee ſate at meate, there came a wo-
bauing an Alabaſter boꝛe, of oyntment of ſpike-
verie pꝛecious, and ſhe bꝛake the boꝛe, and pow-
t on his head.

And there were ſome that had indignation with-
emſelues, and ſaid, Why was this waſte of the
ment made?

Foꝛ it might haue beene ſolde foꝛ moꝛe than thꝛee
ꝛeth pence, and haue beene giuen to the pooꝛe: and
murmured againſt her.

And Ieſus ſaid, Let her alone, why trouble you
Shee hath wꝛought a good woꝛke on mee.

Foꝛ ye haue the pooꝛe with you alwayes, and
ſoeuer ye will ye may doe them good: but mee
aue not alwayes.

She hath done what ſhee could: ſhee is come a-
hand to annoynt my bodie to the burying.

Uerilie I ſay vnto you, Whereſoeuer this Go-
ſhall bee pꝛeached thꝛoughout the whole woꝛld,
alſo that ſhee hath done, ſhall bee ſpoken of foꝛ a
moꝛiall of her.

¶ And Iudas Iſcariot, one of the twelue, went
the chiefe Pꝛieſts, to betray him vnto them.

11 And

11 And when they heard it, they were gl… promised to giue him money. And hee sought … might conuenientlie betray him.

12 ¶ And the first day of vnleauened bre… they killed the Passeouer, his Disciples said vn… Where wilt thou that wee goe, and prepare, th… mayest eate the Passeouer?

13 And hee sendeth forth two of his Disci… saith vnto them, Goe yee into the citie, and the… met you a mã bearing a pitcher of water: follo…

14 And wheresoeuer hee shall goe in, say ye … good man of the house, The Master saith, W… the Guest-chamber, where I shall eate the pa… with my Disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large vpper room … nished, and prepared: there make readie for vs.

16 And his Disciples went forth, and cam… the citie, and found as hee had saide vnto them … they made readie the Passeouer.

17 And in the euening he cõmeth with the t…

18 And as they sate and did eate, Iesus said, … I say vnto you, One of you which eateth with … shall betray mee.

19 And they began to be sorrowfull, and to s… to him one, by one, Is it I? And another said, I…

20 And hee answered, and saide vnto them, … one of the twelue, that dippeth with mee in the …

21 The Sonne of Man indeede goeth, as it is … ten of him: but woe to that man by whom the … of man is betrayed: Good it were for that man, … had neuer beene borne.

22 ¶ And as they did eate, Iesus tooke … and blessed, and brake it, and gaue to them, and …

ke, eate, this is my bodie.
3 And hee toke the cup, and when hee had giuen
nkes, hæ gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it.
4 And hee said vnto them, This is my Blood of
new Testament, which is shed for many.
5 Uerilie I say vnto you, I will drinke no more
he fruite of the Uine, vntill that day that I drinke
w in the Kingdome of God.
6 ¶ And when they had sung an Hymne, they
t out into the Mount of Oliues.
7 And Iesus saith vnto them, All yée shall bee of-
ed because of mæ this night, for it is writtẽ, I will
te the Shepeheard, & the shæpe shall be scattered.
8 But after that I am risen, I will goe before
into Galilee.
9 But Peter saide vnto him, Although all shall
offended, yet will not I.
0 And Iesus saith vnto him, Uerilie I say vnto
e, That this day, euen in this night, before the
ke crow twise, thou shalt denie mæ thrise.
1 But hee spake the more vehementlie, If I should
with thæ, I will not denie thæ in any wise: Like-
e also said they all.
2 And they came to a place which was named
thsemanie, and hee saith to his Disciples, Sit yée
e, while I shall pray.
And hee taketh with him Peter, & James, & John,
began to bæ sore amazed, and to be verie heauie.
4 And saith vnto them, My soule is exceeding sor-
full euen vnto the death: tarie heere and watch.
5 And hee went forward a little, and fell on the
nd, and prayed, that if it were possible, the houre
ht passe from him.

36 And

36 And hee ſaid, Abba Father, all thinges ar
ſible vnto thée, take away this cup from mée : N
theleſſe, not that I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And hée commeth, and findeth them ſléep
and ſaith vnto Peter, Simon, ſléepeſt thou? Co
not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch yée and pray, leſt yée enter into te
tion: The ſpirit truelie is ready, but the fleſh is

39 And againe hée went away, and prayed,
ſpake the ſame words.

40 And when hée returned, hee found them a
againe, (for their eyes were heauie) neither wiſt
what to anſwere him.

41 And hee commeth the third time, and ſait
to them, Sleepe hence on now, and take you reſt
enough, the houre is come, beholde, the Sonne of
is betrayed into the hands of ſinners.

42 Riſe vp, let vs goe, Loe, hée that betrayeth
is at hand.

43 ¶ And immediatelie, while hée yet ſpake
meth Judas, one of the twelue, and with him a
multitude with ſwordes and ſtaues, from the
Prieſts, and the Scribes, and the Elders.

44 ¶ And hée that betrayed him, had giuen th
token, ſaying, Whomſoeuer I ſhall kiſſe, that
is hée, take him, and leade him away ſafelie.

45 And aſſoone as hée was come, hee goeth ſtra
way to him, and ſaith, Maſter, Maſter, & kiſſed

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, & took

47 And one of them that ſtood by, drew a ſword
ſmote a ſeruant of the high Prieſt, & cut off his

48 And Jeſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them
yée come out againſt a Thiefe, with ſwords, a
ues to take mée?

49 I was daylie with you in the Temple, teaching
ye toke me not; but the Scripture must be fulfilled.
50 And they all forsooke him, and fled.
51 And there followed him a certaine young man
auing a linnen cloth cast about his naked bodie, and
e young men laide hold on him.
52 And he left ẏ linnē cloath, & fled from them naked.
53 ¶ And they led Jesus away to the high Priest,
nd with him were assembled all the chiefe Priestes,
nd the Elders and the Scribes.
54 And Peter followed him afarre off, euen into
e Palace of the high Priest, and hee sate with the
uants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.
55 And the chiefe Priestes, & all the coūsell sought for
ttnes against Jesus, to put him to death & foūd none.
56 For manie bare false witnesse against him,
t their witnesse agreed not together.
57 And there arose certaine, and bare false wit-
sse against him, saying,
58 Wee heard him say, I will destroy this Temple
at is made with hands, and within three dayes I
ill builde another made without hands.
59 But neither so did their wittnes agree together.
60 And the high Priest stood vp in the mids and as-
d Jesus saying, Answerest thou nothing? What is
which these witnesse against thee?
61 But hee held his peace, and answered nothing.
gaine, the high Priest asked him, and said vnto him,
t thou the Christ the Sonne of the Blessed?
62 And Jesus sayde, I am: And ye shall see the
nne of Man sitting on the right hand of power, and
mming in the clouds of heauen.
63 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, and

saith, What neede wee anie further witnesses?

64 Yee haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke ye? And they all condemned him, to bee guiltie of death.

65 And some beganne to spitte on him, and to co his face, and to buffet him, and to say vnto him, P phecie: and the seruantes did strike him with the mes of their hands.

66 ¶ And as Peter was beneath in the Pala there commeth one of the Maides of the high Pri

67 And when shee saw Peter warming himse shee loked vpon him, and saide, And thou also with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But hee denied, saying, I know not, nei vnderstand I what thou sayest. And hee went out to the Porch, and the Cocke crew.

69 And a Maide saw him againe, and beganne say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it againe. And a little after the stood by said againe to Peter, Surely ye art one of th for thou art a Galilian: & thy speach agreeth there

71 But hee began to curse, and to sweare, say I know not this man of whom yee speake.

72 And the second time the cocke crew: and P called to minde the word that Jesus saide vnto h Before the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt denie thrise, And when hee thought thereon, hee wept.

## CHAP. XV.

1. Jesus brought bound, and accused before Pil
15. deliuered to be crucified, 27. Hangeth betw
two Theues, 43, and is honourablie buried.

AND straightway in the morning the chiefe Pri
helde a consultation with the Elders & Scri

and the whole counsell, and bound Iesus, and carried him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And hee answering, saide vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chiefe Priestes accused him of manie things, but hee answered nothing.

4 And Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? beholde howe manie thinges they witnesse against thee.

5 But Iesus yet answered nothing, so that Pilate marueiled.

6 Now at that Feast, hee released vnto them one prisoner, whomsoeuer they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murther in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude cryed aloude, began to desire him to doe as hee had euer done vnto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will yee that I release vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 (For hee knew that the chiefe Priests had deliuered him for enuie.)

11 But the chiefe Priests moued the people, that hee should rather release Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and saide againe vnto them, What will yee then that I shall doe vnto him whom yee call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cryed out againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said vnto them, Why? what euill hath he done? And they cryed out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate, willing to content the people,

released Barabbas vnto them, and deliuered Iesus, when hee had scourged him, to bee crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Prætorium, & they called together the whole band.

17 And they cloathed him with purple, and platted a crowne of Thornes, and put it about his head.

18 And beganne to salute him, Haile King of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head, with a Reede, and did spitte vpon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke off the Purple from him, and put his owne cloathes on him, and led him out, to crucifie him.

21 And they compell one Simon, a Cyrenian, who passed by comming out of the Countrie, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to beare his Crosse.

22 And they bring him vnto the place Golgotha, which is being interpreted, the place of a Skull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke, wine mingled with myrrhe: but hee receiued it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lottes vpon them, what euerie man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, & they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written ouer, THE KING OF THE IEWES.

27 And with him they crucifie two Theeues, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And hee was numbred with the transgressours.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest

the

the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes.

30 Saue thy selfe, & come downe from the Crosse.

31 Likewise also the chiefe Priests, mocking, said among themselues with the Scribes, Hee saued others, himselfe hee cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel, descend nowe from the Crosse, that wee may see, and beleeue: And they that were crucified with him, reuiled him.

33 And when the sixt houre was come, there was darknes ouer the whole land vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre, Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Eloi, Eloi, Lamasabacthani? which is, beeing interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken mee?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, hee calleth Elias.

36 And one ran and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let alone, let vs see whether Elias will come to take him downe.

37 And Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the toppe to the bottome.

39 And when the Centurion, which stoode ouer against him, saw that hee so cryed out, and gaue vp the ghost, hee said, Truelie this man was the Sonne of God.

40 Where were also women loking on afarre off, Among whom was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of James the lesse, and of Ioses, and Salome:

41 Who also when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministred vnto him: and manie other women

which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem.

42 ¶ And now when the Euen was come, (because it was the Preparatiõ, ỹ is, the day before the Sabbath,

43 Ioseph of Arimathea, an honourable Counseller, which also waited for the kingdome of God, came and went in boldlie vnto Pilate, and craued the Bodie of Iesus.

44 And Pilate marueiled if hée were alreadie dead, and calling vnto him the Centurion, hée asked him whether hée had béene any while dead.

45 And when hee knew it of the Centurion, hée gaue the bodie to Ioseph.

46 And hee bought fine linnen and toke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen and laid him in a Sepulchre, which was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the Doore of the Sepulchre.

47 And Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Ioses, beheld where hée was laide.

## CHAP. XVI.

1. Christs resurrection. 9. Hee appeareth to Marie Magdalene, and others. 15. Sendeth foorth his Apostles, 19. and ascendeth into heauen.

AND when the Sabbath was past, Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and Saloine, had bought sweete spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 And verie earlie in the morning, the first day of the weeke they came vnto the Sepulchre, at the rising of the Sunne.

3 And they said among themselues, Who shall roll vs away the stone from the doore of the Sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was

was rolled away) for it was verie great.

5 And entring into the Sepulchre, they sawe a young man sitting on the right side, cloathed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And hee saith vnto them Bee not affrighted, yee seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: hee is risen, hee is not heere: beholde the place where they laide him.

7 But goe your way, tell his Disciples, and Peter, that hee goeth before you into Galilee, there shall yee see him, as hee said vnto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the Sepulchre, for they trembled, and were amazed neither said they anie thing to anie man, for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when Iesus was risen earlie, the first day of the weeke, hee appeared first to Marie Magdalene, out of whom hee had cast seuen deuils.

10 And shee went, and tolde them that had beene with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that hee was aliue, and had beene seene of her, beleeued not.

12 ¶ After that, hee appeared in another forme vnto two of them, as they walked and went into the Countrey.

13 And they went, and told it vnto the residue, neither beleeued they them.

14 ¶ Afterward hee appeared vnto the eleuen, as they sate at meate, and vpbraided them with their vnbeliefe, and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not them, which had seene him after hee was risen.

15 And hee saide vnto them, Goe yee into all the world, and preach the Gospel to euerie creature.

16 Hæ that beleueth, and is baptized, shall
saued: but hæ that beleueth not, shall bee damned.
17 And these signes shall follow them that beli
In my Name they shall cast out deuils, they
speake with new tongues.
18 They shall take vp Serpents, and if they
drinke any deadlie thing, it shall not hurt them,
shall lay hands on the sicke, and they shall recouer
19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken
them, hee was receiued vp into Heauen, and sat
the right hand of God.
20 And they went forth, and preached eue
where, the Lord working with them, and confirm
the word with signes following. Amen.

# THE GOSPEL OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOVR *IESVS CHRIST.*

## According to Saint LVKE.

### CHAP. I.

1. Lukes Preface. 5. The conception of Iohn Ba
tist. 26. and of Christ. 57. The nativitie and c
cumcision of Iohn.

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in ha
to set forth in order a declaration
those things which are most surelie b
leeued among vs.
2 Euen as they deliuered them vn
vs, which from the beginning were eye witnesses, a
ministers of the word.
3 It seemed good to me also, hauing had perf
vnder

derstanding of things from the verie first, to write
nto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus.
4 That thou mightest know the certainetie of those
ings wherein thou hast bene instructed.
5 ¶ There was in the dayes of Herode the king
of Judea, a certaine Priest named Za-
arias, of the course of Abia, and his Wife was of
e daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.
6 And they were both righteous before God, wal-
ng in all the commandementes and ordinances of
e Lord, blamelesse.
7 And they had no childe, because that Elizabeth
as barren, and they were both nowe well striken in
eres.
8 And it came to passe, that while hee executed the
riests office before God, in the order of his course.
9 According to the custome of the Priestes office,
s lot was to burne incense, when hee went into the
emple of the Lord.
10 And the whole multitude of the people were
aying without, at the time of incense.
11 And there appeared vnto him an Angel of the
rd, stãding on the right side of the Altar of incense.
12 And when Zacharias saw him, hee was trou-
d, and feare fell vpon him.
13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not Zacha-
s, for thy prayer is heard, & thy wife Elizabeth shall
are thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.
14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and ma-
shall reioyce at his birth.
15 For hee shall bee great in the sight of the Lord, and
ll drinke neither wine nor strong drinke, and hee
ll bee filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mo-
rs wombe.

16 And

16 And manie of the Children of Israel shall
turne to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall goe before him in the spirit & po
of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the
dren, and the disobedient to the wisedme of the jus
make readie a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whe
shall I know this? For I am an olde man, and
wife well stricken in yeeres.

19 And the Angel answering, said vnto him, I
Gabriel, that stand in the presence of GOD, and
sent to speake vnto thee, and to shewe thee these
tydinges.

20 And behold, thou shalt bee dumbe, and not
to speake, vntill the day that these things shall be
formed, because thou believest not my wordes, w
shall bee fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and m
ueiled that hee tarried so long in the Temple.

22 And when hee came out, hee could not spe
vnto them: and they perceiued that hee had seene a
sion in the Temple: for hee beckned vnto them,
remained speachlesse.

23 And it came to passe, that assoone as the da
of his ministration were accomplished, hee depa
to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elizabeth
ceiued, and hid her selfe fiue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with mee in the da
wherein hee loked on mee, to take away my repr
among men.

26 And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel
sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Na
reth.

To a Virgine espoused to a man whose name
Ioseph of the house of Dauid, and the Virgines
was Marie.

And the Angell came vnto her, and saide,
thou that are highlie fauoured, the LORD is
thee: Blessed art thou among women.

And when shee saw him, shee was troubled at
ying, and cast in her minde what manner of sa-
on this should bee.

And the Angel said vnto her, Feare not, Marie,
ou hast found fauour with God.

And beholde, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe
ring forth a Sonne, and thou shalt call his
Iesus.

Hee shall bee great, and shall bee called the
e of the Highest, and the Lord God shall giue
inthe Throne of his father Dauid.

And hee shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for
and of his Kingdome there shall bee none end.

Then saide Marie vnto the Angel, Howe shall
e, seeing I know not a man?

And the Angel answered, and saide vnto her,
olie Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power
Highest shall ouer-shadow thee. Therefore also
olie thing which shall bee borne of thee, shall bee
the Sonne of God.

And beholde, thy Cousin Elizabeth, shee hath
onceiued a sonne in her olde age, and this is the
oneth with her, who was called barren.

For with God nothing shall bee vnpossible.

And Marie said, Behold the hand-maid of the
bee it vnto mee according to thy word, and the
departed from her.

39 And Marie arose in those dayes, and
the hill Countrey, with haste, into a citie of
40 And entred into the house of Zacha
saluted Elizabeth.
41 And it came to passe, that when Elizab
the salutation of Marie, ẏ Babe leaped in he
and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghos
42 And she spake out w a loud voyce, & sai
art thou amõg womẽ, & blessed is ẏ fruit of th
43 And whence is this to mee, that the
my Lord should come to mee?
44 For loe, assoone as ẏ voyce of thy salutat
ded in mine eares, ẏ babe leaped in my wom
45 And blessed is shee that beleiued, for t
bee a performance of those thinges, which
her from the Lord.
46 And Marie said, My soule doth magnif
47 And my spirit hath reioyced in God my
48 For hee hath regarded the low estate of
maiden: for behold, from hence-forth all gen
shall call mee blessed.
49 For hee that is mightie, hath done
great thinges, and holie is his Name.
50 And his mercie is on them that feare h
generation to generation.
51 Hee hath shewed strength with his arme,
scattered ẏ proud, in the imagination of their
52 He hath put downe the mightie from
and exalted them of low degree.
53 He hath filled the hungrie with good
and the rich he hath sent emptie away.
54 He hath holden his seruant Israel, in
brance of his mercie,

ls hæ ſpake to our fozefathers, to Abzaham,
is ſeede foz euer.
And Marie abode with her about thzæ months,
urned to her owne houſe.
ow Elizabeths full time came, that ſhæ ſhould
uered, and ſhæ bzought fozth a ſonne.
And her Neighbouts, and her Couſens heard
e Lozd had ſhewed great mercie vpon her, and
oyced with her.
And it came to paſſe, that on the eight day they
circumciſe the Childe, and they called him
ias, after the name of his father.
Ans his mother anſwered, and ſaide, Not ſo:
ſhall bee called John.
And they ſaide vnto her, There is none of thy
that is called by this name.
And they made ſignes to his father, howe hee
haue him called.
And hæ aſked foz a wzitting table, and wzote,
His name is John, and they marueiled all.
And his mouth was opened immediatelie, and
gue looſed, and hæ ſpake and pzaiſed God.
And feare came on all, that dwelt round about
and all theſe thinges were noyſed abzoad, tho-
t all the hill Countrey of Judea.
nd all they that heard them, laide them vp in
eartes, ſaying, What manner of Childe ſhall
! And the hand of the Lozd was with him.
And his father Zacharias was filled with the
boſt, and pzopheſied ſaying,
Bleſſed bæ the Lozd God of Iſrael, foz hee hath
and redeemed his people.
And hath raiſed vp an hozne of ſaluation foz vs

in

in the house of his seruant Dauid.

70 As hée spake by the mouth of his holy phets, which haue béene since the world began:

71 That wée should bée saued from our en and from the hand of all that hate vs.

72 To performe the mercie promised to our fathers, and to remember his holie Couenant.

73 The oath which hée sware to our father

74 That hée would grant vnto vs, that we deliuered out of the handes of our enemies, serue him without feare.

75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before the dayes of our life.

76 And thou Childe shalt bée called the Pro the highest: for thou shalt goe before the face Lord to prepare his wayes.

77 To giue knowledge of saluation vnto his ple, by the remission of their sinnes.

78 Through the tender mercie of our God, by the day spring from an high hath visited vs.

79 To giue light to them that sat in darknes, shadow of death, to guide our fæt into the way of

80 And the Childe grew, & waxed strong in was in the desarts, till his day of his shewing vnto

## CHAP. II.

1. Augustus taxeth all the Romane empi
Christs nativitie. 21. His Circumcision.
36. Simeon and Anna propheſie of Christ.

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, the world should be taxed.

2 (And this taxing was first made when Cy

uernour of Syria)
nd all went out to bee tared, euerie one into
ne citie.
nd Joseph also went vp from Galilee, out of
ie of Nazareth, into Judea, vnto the citie of Da-
hich is called Bethlehem, (because hee was of
use and linage of Dauid.)
To bee tared with Marie his espoused wife, bee-
eat with Childe.
nd so it was, that while they were there, the
were accomplished ẏ shee should bee deliuered.
nd shee brought forth her first borne Sonne,
rapped him in swadling cloathes, and laide him
anger, because there was no roome for them in
nne.
And there were in the same countrey shepheards
ng in the fielde, keeping watch ouer their flocke
ght.
And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them,
he glorie of the Lord shone round about them, and
were sore afrayde.
And the Angel said vnto them, Feare not: For
d, I bring you good tidings, of great ioy, which
bee to all people.
For vnto you is borne this day, in the citie of
id, a Sauiour, which is Christ the Lord.
And this shalbe a signe vnto you, ye shall find the
wrapped in swadling cloathes, lying in a mãger.
And suddenlie there was with the Angel a mul-
of the heauenlie hoste, praising God, and saying,
Glorie to GOD in the highest, and on earth
e, good will towards men.
And it came to passe, as the Angels were gone
from them into heauen, the shepheards saide,

one to another, Let vs now goe euen vnto Beth
and see this thing, which is come to passe, whi
Lord hath made knowne vnto vs.
16 And they came with haste, and found
and Ioseph, and the Babe lying in a manger.
17 And when they had seene it, they made kn
abroad the saying which was tolde them, concer
this Childe.
18 And all they that heard it, wondered at
things which were tolde them by the shepheards.
19 But Marie kept all those thinges, and pon
them in her heart.
20 And the Shepheards returned, glorifyin
praising God for all the thinges that they had
and seene, as it was told vnto them.
21 And when eight dayes were accomplish
the circumcising of the Childe, his Name was c
Iesus, which was so named of the Angel, bef
was conceiued in the wombe.
22 And when the dayes of her purification,
ding to the law of Moses, were accomplished,
brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to
23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord,
male that openeth the wombe, shall bee called h
the Lord.)
24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that
is said in the Law of the Lord, A paire of turtle
or two young pegions.
25 And behold there was a man in Hieru
whose name was Simeon, and the same man w
and deuote, waiting for the consolation of Isra
the holy Ghost was vpon him.
26 And it was reuealed vnto him by th

hoſt, that hæ ſhould not ſee death, beſore hæ had
ne the Lords Chriſt.
27 And hæ came by the ſpirit into the Temple: and
hen the Parents brought in the Childe Jeſus, to doe
him after the cuſtome of the Law.
28 Then hæ tooke him in his armes, and bleſſed
od, and ſaid,
29 Lord, now letteſt thou thy ſeruant depart in
ce, according to thy word.
30 For mine eyes haue ſeene thy ſaluation.
1 Which thou haſt prepared beſore the face of all
ple.
2 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glorie
hy people Iſrael.
3 And Joſeph and his mother marueiled at thoſe
ngs which were ſpoken of him.
4 And Simeon bleſſed them, and ſaid vnto Marie,
Mother, Behold, this Childe, is ſet for the fall and
ng againe of manie in Iſrael: and for a ſigne which
l bee ſpoken againſt,
5 (Yea, and a ſword ſhall pearce thorow thine
e ſoule alſo) that the thoughtes of many heartes
bee reuealed.
6 And there was one Anna a Prophetеſſe, the
ghter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aſer, ſhæ was
great age, and had liued with an huſband ſeuen
es from her virginitie.
7 And ſhee was a widow about foureſcore & foure
es, which departed not from the Temple, but ſer-
God, with faſting and prayers night and day.
8 And ſhæ comming in that inſtant, gaue thanks
wiſe vnto the Lord, and ſpake of him, to all them
looked for redemption in Hieruſalem.

39 And when they had performed all things
cording to the Lawe of the Lord, they returned
Galilee, to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the Childe grew, and wared strong in
rite, filled with wisedome, and the grace of God
vpon him.

41 Now his Parents went to Hierusalem e
yeere at the Feast of the Passeouer.

42 And when hee was twelue yeares olde,
went vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the
43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as
returned, the Childe Iesus tarried behinde in H
salem, and Ioseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 And they supposing him to haue beene in
companie, went a dayes journey, and they sought
among their kins-folke and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned b
againe to Hierusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes
found him in the Temple, sitting in the midst o
Doctors, both hearing them, & asking them questi
47 And all that heard him were astonished a
vnderstanding, and answeres.

48 And when they saw him, they were ama
and his mother saide vnto him, Sonne, why hast
thus dealt with vs? Beholde, thy father and I
sought thee sorrowing.

49 And hee saide vnto her: Howe is it th
sought mee? Wist ye not that I must bee abou
Fathers businesse?

50 And they vnderstood not the saying whic
spake vnto them.

51 And hee went downe with them, and ca
Naz

Nazareth, and was subiect vnto them: But his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisedome and stature, and in fauour with God and man.

## CHAP. III.

1. Iohns preaching and baptisme. 15. His testimonie of Christ. 20. Herode imprisoneth him. 21. Christ is baptized. 23. His genealogie.

NOw in the fiftenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate beeing Gouernour of Iudea, and Herode beeing Tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas beeing the high Priestes, the word of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias, in the wildernesse,

3 And hee came into all the countrey about Iordane, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sinnes.

4 As it is written in the Booke of the wordes of Esaias the Prophet, saying, The voyce of one crying in the Wildernesse, Prepare yee the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Euerie valley shall bee filled, and euerie mountaine and hill shall bee brought low, and the crooked shall bee made straight, and the rough wayes shall bee made smooth.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

7 Then said hee to the multitude that came forth to bee baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come.

8 Bring forth therefore fruites worthie of repen-
tance, and begin not to say, within your selues, We
haue Abraham to our father: For I say vnto you, th
God is able of these stones to raise vp children vn
Abraham.

9 And now also the Axe is laid vnto the roote of th
trees: Euerie tree therefore which bringeth not fo
good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What sh
wee doe then?

11 Hee answered, and saith vnto them, Hee th
hath two coates, let him impart to him that hath no
and hee that hath meate, let him doe likewise.

12 Then came also Publicanes to bee baptize
and said vnto him, Master, what shall wee doe?

13 And hee saide vnto them, Exact no more th
that which is appointed you.

14 And the Souldiers likewise demanded of him
saying, And what shall wee doe? And hee saide vn
them, Doe violence to no man, neither accuse a
falselie, and bee content with your wages.

15 And as the people were in expectation, and
men mused in their hearts of Iohn, whether hee we
the Christ or not:

16 Iohn answered, saying vnto them all, I in
baptize you with water, but one mightier than I co
meth, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy
vnlose, hee shall baptize you with the holie Gh
and with fire.

17 Whose fanne is in his hand, & hee will thor
purge his floore, & will gather the wheate into his g
ner but the chaffe he wil burne with fire vnquēchab

18 And manie other things in his exhortation pr
ched he vnto the people. 19

19 But Herode the Tetrach beeing reproued by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herode had done,

20 Added yet this aboue all, that hee shutte vp Iohn in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, and it came to passe that Iesus also beeing baptized, and praying, the Heauen was opened:

22 And the holie Ghost descended in a bodilie shape like a Doue vpon him, and a voyce came from Heauen, which said, Thou art my beloued Sonne in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Iesus himselfe began to bee about thirtie yeeres of age, beeing (as was supposed) the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Heli.

24 Which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Leui, which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Ianna, which was the sonne of Ioseph.

25 Which was the sonne of Matthias, which was the sonne of Amos, which was the sonne of Naum, which was the sonne of Esli, which was the sonne of Nagge.

26 Which was the sonne of Maath, which was the sonne of Matthatias, which was the sonne of Semei, which was the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Iuda.

27 Which was the sonne of Ioanna, which was the sonne of Rhesa, which was the sonne of Zorababel, which was the sonne of Salathiel, which was the sonne of Neri,

28 Which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Addi, which was the sonne of Cosam,

which was the ſonne of Elmodaine, which was the
ſonne of Er.

29 Which was the ſonne of Joſe, which was the
ſonne of Eliezer, which was the ſonne of Jorim, which
was the ſonne of Matthat, which was the ſon of Leui.

30 Which was the ſonne of Simeon, which was
the ſonne of Juda, which was the ſonne of Joſeph
which was the ſonne of Jonan, which was the ſonne
of Eliakim,

31 Which was the ſonne of Melea, which was
the ſonne of Menam, which was the ſonne of Matthe-
ta, which was the ſonne of Nathan, which was the
ſonne of Dauid,

32 Which was the ſonne of Jeſſe, which was the
ſonne of Obed, which was the ſonne of Booz, which
was the ſonne of Salmon, which was the ſonne of
Naaſſon,

33 Which was the ſonne of Aminadab, which
was the ſonne of Aram, which was the ſonne of Ca-
rom, which was the ſonne of Phares, which was the
ſonne of Juda.

34 Which was the ſonne of Jacob, which was
the ſonne of Iſaac, which was the ſonne of Abraham
which was the ſonne of Thara, which was the ſonne
of Nachor.

35 Which was the ſonne of Saruch, which was
the ſonne of Ragau, which was the ſonne of Phaleg
which was the ſonne of Hober, which was the ſonne
of Sala.

36 Which was the ſonne of Cainan, which was
the ſonne of Arpharad, which was the ſonne of Sem
which was the ſonne of Noe, which was the ſonne of
Lamech.

37 Wh

37 Which was the ſonne of Mathuſala, which was the ſonne of Enoch, which was the ſonne of Iared, which was the ſonne of Maleleel, which was the ſonne of Cainan,

38 Which was the ſonne of Enos, which was the ſonne of Seth, which was the ſonne of Adam, which was the ſonne of God.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Chriſts temptation, and faſting. 13. Hee ouercommeth the Deuill. 15. Beginneth to preach. 16 They of Nazareth adjure him.

AND Ieſus beeing full of the holy Ghoſt, returned from Iordane, and was led by the Spirite into the wilderneſſe.

2 Beeing fourtie dayes tempted of the Deuill: and in thoſe dayes hee did eate nothing: and when they were ended, hee afterwards hungred.

3 And the deuill ſaid vnto him, If thou bee the Son of God, command this ſtone ỹ it might be made bread.

4 And Ieſus anſwered him, ſaying, It is written, that man ſhall not liue by bread alone, but by euerie word of God.

5 And the Deuill taking him vp into an high mountaine, ſhewed vnto him all the kingdomes of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the Deuill ſaid vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glorie of them, for that is deliuered vnto mee, and to whomſoeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worſhip mee, all ſhall bee thine.

8 And Ieſus anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, Get thee behinde mee, Satan: for it is written, Thou ſhalt worſhip

the Lord thy God, and him onelie shalt thou serue.
9 And he brought him to Hierusalem, & set him on a
pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him; If thou
the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence.
10 For it is written, Hee shall giue his Angels
charge ouer thee, to keepe thee,
11 And in their hands they shall beare thee vp, lest
at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone.
12 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, It is said,
Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
13 And when the Deuill had ended all the temptation
hee departed from him for a season.
14 ¶ And Iesus returned in the power of the Spirite into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him
through all the region round about.
15 And hee taught in their Synagogues being
glorified of all.
16 ¶ And hee cam to Nazareth, where hee had
beene brought vp, and as his custome was hee went
into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood
vp for to reade.
17 And there was deliuered vnto him, the Booke
of the Prophet Esaias, and when hee had opened the
Booke, hee found the place where it was written.
18 The Spirit of the Lord is vpon mee, because he
hath anointed me, to preach the Gospel to the poore,
hath sent mee to heale the broken hearted, to preach
liuerance to the captiues, and recouering of sight to
the blind, to set at libertie them that are bruised,
19 To preach the acceptable yeare of the Lord.
20 And he closed the Booke, & hee gaue it againe
to the Minister and sate downe: & the eyes of all them
that were in the Synagogue were fastened on him.
21 And

21 And hee began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondred at the gracious wordes which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Iosephs sonne?

23 And hee said vnto them, Yee will surelie say vnto me this prouerbe, Physician heale thy selfe. Whatsoeuer we haue heard done in Capernaum, doe also heere in thy Countrey.

24 And hee saide, Uerilie I say vnto you, no Prophet is accepted in his owne countrey.

25 But I tell you of a trueth, manie widowes were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heauens were shut vp three yeares and sire months, when great famine was throughout all the land,

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue vnto Sarepta, a citie of Sidon, vnto a woman that was a widow.

27 And manie lepers were in Israel, in the time of Elizeus the Prophet: and none of them was cleansed, sauing Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath.

29 And rose vp, & thrust him out of the citie, and led him vnto the brow of the hill, (whereon their citie was built) that they might cast him downe headlong.

30 But hee passing through the midst of them, went his way.

31 And came downe to Capernaum, a citie of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his words was with powe[r].

33 ¶ And in the Synagogue there was a man which

which had a spirit of an vncleane Deuill, and c
with a loude voyce.

34 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue wé t
with thæ, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou c
to destroy vs? I know thæ who thou art, the
One of God.

45 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hol
peace, and come out of him. And when the deui
throwne him in the middes, hæ came out of him,
hurt him not.

46 And they were all amazed, and spake a
themselues, saying, What a word is this? for
authoritie and power hæ commandeth the vnc
spirites, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into euery
of the countrey round about.

38 ¶ And hæ arose out of the Synagogue, a
tred into Simons house: and Simons wiues m
was taken with a great Feuer, and they besough
for her.

39 And hæ stood ouer her, and rebuked the F
and it left her, and immediatelie shée arose, and
stred vnto them.

40 ¶ Now when the Sunne was setting, all
that had anie sicke with diuerse diseases, b
them vnto him: and hæ laide his handes on euer
of them, and healed them.

41 And deuils also came out of many, cryin
and saying, Thou art Christ the Sonne of God.
hæ rebuking them, suffered them not to speake
they knew that hæ was Christ.

42 And when it was day, hæ departed, and
into a desart place: and the people sought him

re vnto him, and ſtayed him, that hee ſhould not art from them.

43 And hee ſaide vnto them, I muſt preach the gdome of God to other cities alſo: for therefore am ent.

44 And hee preached in the Synagogues of Galilee.

## CHAP. V.

Chriſt teacheth out of the Ship. 4. A miraculous draught of fiſhes. 12. The leper cleanſed. 18. The alſie healed. 27. Matthew called.

1 And it came to paſſe, that as the people preaſſed vpon him, to heare the word of God, hee ſtoode he lake of Geneſareth.

2 And ſaw two Shippes ſtanding in the lake: but iſher-men were gone out of them, and were wa- g their nettes.

3 And hee entered into one of the ſhippes, which Simons, and prayed him, that hee would thruſt a little from the land: and hee ſate downe, and ght the people out of the Shippe.

4 Now when hee had left ſpeaking, hee ſaide vnto on, Launch out into the deepe, and let downe nettes for a draught.

5 And Simon anſwering, ſaid vnto him, Maſter, aue toyled all the night, and haue taken nothing: ertheleſſe at thy word I will let downe the nett.

6 And when they had done this: they incloſed a t multitude of fiſhes. and their nette brake.

7 And they beckened vnto their partners, which e in the other Shippe, that they ſhould come and e them. And they came, and filled both the ſhippes at they began to ſinke.

8 When

8 When Simon Peter saw it, hee fell down at Jesus knæs, saying, Depart from mee, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For hee was astonished, and all y were with him at the draught of the fishes which they had taken:

10 And so was also James and John, the sonnes of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus saide vnto Simon, Feare not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsoke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ And it came to passe, when hee was in a certaine citie, behold, a man full of leprosie: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make mee cleane.

13 And hee put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will: bee thou cleane. And immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And hee charged him to tell no man: but go and shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded for a testimonie vnto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to bee healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And hee with-drew himselfe into the wilderneſſe, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe, on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees, and Doctors of the Law, sitting by, which were come out of every towne of Galilee, and Judea, and Hierusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heale them.

18 ¶ And beholde, men brought in a bed

tich was taken with a palsie: and they sought
eanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.
19 And when they could not finde by what way
ey might bring him in, because of the multitude,
y went vpon the house top, & let him downe thorow
e tiling with his couch, into the midst before Iesus.
20 And when hee saw their faith, hee said vnto him,
an, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.
21 And the Scribes and ỹ Pharisees began to rea-
, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies?
o can forgiue sinnes, but God alone?
22 But when Iesus perceiued their thoughts, hee
swering, said vnto them, What reason yee in your
artes?
23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes bee for-
en thee: or to say, Rise vp, and walke?
24 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man
h power vpon earth to forgiue sinnes, (hee said vn-
the sicke of the palsie) I say vnto thee, Arise, and
e vp thy couch, and goe into thine house.
25 And immediatelie hee arose vp before them, and
ke vp that whereon hee lay, and departed to his
ne house, glorifying God.
26 And they were amazed, and they glorified
d, and were all filled with feare, saying, Wee haue
e strange things to day.
27 ¶ And after these things hee went forth, and
a Publicane, named Leui, sitting at the receite
ustome: and hee said vnto him, Follow mee.
28 And hee left all, rose vp, and followed him.
29 And Leui made him a great feast in his owne
se: and there was a great companie of Publi-
ns, and of others that sate downe with them.

30 But

30 But the Scribes and Phariſees murmur gainſt his Diſciples, ſaying, Why doe yée eate drinke with Publicanes and ſinners?

31 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaid vnto them, They are whole need not a phyſitian: but they that are

32 I came not to call the righteous, but ſinne repentance.

33 And they ſaid vnto him, Why doe the Di of Iohn faſt often, and make prayers, and likewi Diſciples of the Phariſees: but thine eate and dr

34 And hee ſaid vnto them, Can yee make the dren of the Bride-chamber faſt, while the Bri grome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come when the Bri grome ſhall bee taken away from them, and t ſhall they faſt in thoſe dayes.

36 ¶ And hee ſpake alſo a parable vnto them, man putteth a piece of newe garment vpon an old otherwiſe, then both the new maketh a rent, and piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not t the olde.

37 And no man putteth new wine into olde tels: elſe the new wine will burſt the bottels, and ſpilled: and the bottels ſhall periſh.

38 But newe wine muſt bee put into new bot and both are preſerued.

39 No man alſo hauing drunke olde wine ſtrai way deſireth new: for hee ſaith, The olde is better.

## CHAP. VI.

1. Touching the eares of corne, that were plucke the Diſciples on the Sabbath. 13. Chriſt choo the twelue. 17. Hee healeth. 20. and preache

## CHAP. VI.

1 And it came to passe on the second Sabbath after the first, that hee went thorow the corne fieldes: and his Disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certaine of the Pharisees saide vnto them, Why doe yee that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes.

3 Jesus answering them, saide, Haue yee not read so much as this what Dauid did, when himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eate the shew-bread, and gaue also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eate, but for the Priestes alone?

5 And hee said vnto them, That the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

6 And it came to passe also on another Sabbath, that hee entred into the Synagogue, and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether hee would heale on the Sabbath day: that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But hee knew their thoughtes, and said vnto the man which had the withered hand, Rise vp, and stand forth in the mids. And hee rose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus vnto them, I will aske you one thing, Is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes, to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about vpon them all, hee said vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And hee did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madnes, and communed one with another what they might doe to Jesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that hee

went out into a mountaine to pray, and conti
all night in prayer to God.
13 ¶ And when it was day, hee called vnto
his Disciples: and of them hee chose twelue, w
also hee named Apostles:
14 Simon (whom hee also named Peter) & And
his brother: Iames & Iohn, Philip & Bartholomew
15 Matthew and Thomas, Iames the sonn
Alpheus, and Simon called Zelotes.
16 And Iudas the brother of Iames, and Iu
Iscariot, which also was the traitour.
17 ¶ And hee came downe with them, & stood
plaine, & the companie of his Disciples, and a g
multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Hierusal
and from the Sea Coast of Tyre and Sidon, w
came to heare him, and to be healed of their dise
18 And they that were vexed with vncleane spi
and they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude sought to touch h
for there went vertue out of him, and healed them
20 ¶ And hee lifted vp his eyes on his Disci
and said, Blessed bee yee poore, for yours is the k
dome of God.
21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall b
led. Blessed are ye ỹ weepe now, for ye shall laugh
22 Blessed are yee when men shall hate you,
when they shall separate you from their comp
and shall reproach you, and cast out your nam
euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.
23 Reioyce yee in that day, and leape for joy:
behold your reward is great in heauen: for in the
manner did their fathers vnto the Prophets.
24 But woe vnto you that are rich, for yee ha

eiued your consolation.
25 Woe vnto you that are full: for yee shall hunger. Woe vnto you that laugh now: for yee shall mourne and weepe.
26 Woe vnto you when all men shall speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.
27 But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies, doe good to them which hate you.
28 Blesse them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefullie vse you.
29 And vnto him that smiteth thee on the one cheeke, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy cloake, forbide not to take thy coat also.
30 Giue to euerie man that asketh of thee, and of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.
31 And as yee would that men should doe to you, doe yee also to them likewise.
32 For if yee loue them that loue you, what thanke haue yee? for sinners also loue those that loue them.
33 And if yee doe good to them, that doe good to you, what thanke haue yee? for sinners also doe euen the same.
34 And if yee lend to them of whome yee hope to receiue, What thanke haue yee? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receiue as much againe.
35 But loue yee your enemies, and doe good, and lend, hoping for nothing againe: and your reward shall be great, and yee shall bee the children of the Highest: for he is kinde vnto the vnthankfull, and to the euill.
36 Bee yee therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.
37 Iudge not, and ye shall not be iudged: condemne not, and yee shall not be condemned: forgiue, and yee shall be for-

38 Giue: and it shall be giuen vnto you: good
sure prested downe, and shaken together, and
ning ouer, shall men giue into your bosome: for
the same measure that yee mete withall, it sha
measured to you againe.

39 And hee spake a parable vnto them, Can the
lead the blinde? Shall they not both fall into the d

40 The Disciple is not aboue his Master: bu
rie one that is perfect, shall bee as his Master.

41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is i
brothers eyes, but perceiuest not the beame tha
thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother,
ther, let mee pull out the mote that is in thine
when thou thy selfe beholdest not the beame tha
thine owne eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out fir
beame out of thine owne, & then thou shalt see cl
to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt
neither doeth a corrupt tree bring forth good fru

44 For euerie tree is knowne by his owne
for of thornes men doe not gather figs, nor of a br
bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of ỹ good treasure of his
bringeth forth that which is good: and an euill
out of the euill treasure of his heart, bringeth
that which is euill: For of the abundance of the
his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ And why call yee mee Lord, Lord, a
not the things which I say?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to mee and heare
sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to
hee is like.

48 Hæ is like a man which built an house, and
gged dæpe, and laid the foundation on a Rocke. And
hen the flode arose, the streame beate vehementlie
pon the house, and could not shake it: for it was
nded vpon a Rocke.

49 But he ỳ heareth, & doeth not, is like a man that
thout a foundation built an house vpon the earth: a-
inst which the streame did beate vehemently, & im-
diatelie it fell: & the ruine of that house was great.

## CHAP. VII.

The Centurions faith. 10. Christ healeth his ser-
vant beeing absent. 11. Raiseth the Widowes
sonne. 24. Christs testimonie of Iohn.

NOw whẽ hæ had ended all his sayings in the au-
dience of the people, he entred into Capernaum.
2 And a certaine Centurions seruant, who was
ue vnto him, was sicke, and readie to die.
3 And when hæ heard of Iesus, hæ sent vnto him
Elders of the Iewes, beseæching him that hæ
uld come and heale his seruant.
4 And when they came to Iesus, they besought
instantlie, saying, That hæ was worthie for
om hæ should doe this.
5 For hæ loueth our Nation, and hee hath built
a Synagogue.
6 Then Iesus went with them. And when hee
s now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent
nds to him, saying vnto him Lord, trouble not
selfe: For I am not worthie that thou shouldest
er vnder my Roofe.
7 Wherefore neither thought I my selfe worthie
me vnto thee: but say in a word, and my seruant
hee healed.

8 For I also am a man set vnder authoritie, hauing vnder mee Souldiers: and I say vnto one, Goe, and hee goeth, and to another, Come, and hee commeth, and to my seruant, Doe this, and hee doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these thinges, hee marueiled at him, and turned him about, and said vnto the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to their house, found the seruant whole that had beene sicke.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Naim: and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when hee came nigh to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only sonne of his mother: and shee was a widow: and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, hee had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And hee came and touched the Beere (and they that bare him, stood still) And hee said, Young man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake, and hee deliuered him to his mother.

16 And there came a feare on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great Prophet is risen vp among vs, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the Region round about.

18 And the Disciples of Iesus shewed him of all these things.

19 ¶ And Iohn calling to him two of his disciples, sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he

ould come, or looke wee for another?
20 And when the men were come vnto him, they
d, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art
u hee that should come, or looke wee for another?
21 And in that same houre hee cured many of their
rmities, and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vn-
many that were blind, hee gaue sight.
22 Then Iesus answering, said vnto them, Goe,
ur way, and tell Iohn what thinges yee haue seene
heard, how that the blinde see, the lame walke,
lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the deade are
sed, to the poore the Gospel is preached.
23 And blessed is hee whomsoeuer shall not bee of-
nded in mee.
24 ¶ And when the messengers of Iohn were de-
ted, hee began to speake vnto the people concer-
g Iohn: What went yee out vnto the wildernesse
to see? A reede shaken with the winde?
25 But what went ye out for to see? A man cloathed
soft rayment? Behold, they which are gorgiously
arelled, and liue delicatelie, are in kings courts.
26 But what went yee out for to see? A Prophet?
I, I say vnto you, and much more than a Prophet.
27 This is hee of whom it is written, Beholde, I
d my Messenger before thy face, which shall pre-
e thy way before thee.
28 For I say vnto you, among those that are borne
women, there is not a greater Prophet than Iohn
Baptist: But hee that is least in the kingdome of
d is greater than hee.
29 And all the people that heard him, and the
blicanes, iustified God, being baptized with the
ptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharisees and the Lawers reiecte
counsell of God against themselues, beeing not
tized of him.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Whervnto thē shall I
the men of this generation? and to what are they

32 They are like vnto childrē sitting in the m
place, and calling one to another, and saying,
haue piped vnto you, and yee haue not danced:
haue mourned to you, and yee haue not wept.

33 For Iohn the Baptist came neither eating b
nor drinking wine, and yee say, Yee hath a deui

34 The Sonne of man is come, eating, and
king, and yee say, Beholde a gluttenous man,
wine biber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners,

35 But Wisedome is iustified of all her chil

36 ¶ And one of the Pharisees desired him
hee would eate with him. And hee went into the
risees house, and sate downe to meat.

37 And beholde a woman in the citie which
sinner, when shee knew that Iesus sate at meat
Pharisees house, brought an Alabaster box of
ment,

38 And stood at his feete behind him weeping
beganne to wash his feete with teares, and did
them with the haires of her head, and kissed his
and anointed them with the Dyntment.

39 Nowe when the Pharisee which had b
him, saw it, hee spake within himselfe, saying,
man, if he were a Prophet, would haue knowne
and what manner of woman this is that to
him, for shee is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, S
I haue somewhat to say vnto thee, And hee sait
ter, say on.

41

41 There was a certaine creditour, which had two
ters: ỹ one ought fiue hũdreth pence, & ỹ other fiftie.
42 And when they had nothing to pay, hee frank-
forgaue them both. Tell mee therefore which of
m will loue him most?
43 Simon answered, and said, I suppose, that hee
whom hee forgaue most. And hee saide vnto him,
ou hast rightlie iudged.
44 And hee turned to the woman, and saide vnto
mon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine
se, thou gauest mee no water for my feete, but shee
washen my feete with teares, and wiped them
the haires of her head.
45 Thou gauest mee no kisse: but this womã, since
time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feete.
46 Mine head with oyle thou didst not anoint; but
woman hath anointed my feete with ointment.
47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, Her sinnes which
many, are forgiuen, for shee loued much: but to
m little is forgiuen, the same loueth little.
48 And hee said vnto her, Thy sins are forgiuẽ thee.
49 And they that sate at Meate with him, began
ay within themselues, Who is this, that forgiueth
es also?
50 And hee said vnto the woman, Thy faith hath
ed thee, goe in peace.

## CHAP. VIII.

Women ministeer vnto Christ. 4. The parable of the sower. 16. and of the candle. 26. the Legion of deuils.

AND it came to passe afterward, that hee went throughout euerie citie and village, preaching

and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdome of
and the twelue were with him.

2 And certaine women which had bene heal
euill spirits and infirmities, Marie called Magdal
out of whom went seauen deuils.

3 And Joanna, the wife of Chuza, Herodes
ward, and Sufanna, and manie others which m
stred vnto him of their substance.

4 ¶ And when much people were gathered t
ther, and were come to him out of euerie citie,
speake by a parable:

5 A Sower went forth to sow his seede: and a
sowed, some fell by the way side, and it was tr
downe, and the foules of the aire deuoured it.

6 And some fell vpõ a rocke, & assoone as it was
vp, it withered away, because it lacked moysture

7 And some fell among thornes, and the tho
sprang vp with it, and thoked it.

8 And others fell on good ground, & sprang vp, &
fruit, an hundreth fold. And when he said these thi
hee cryed, He that hath eares to heare, let him he

9 And his Disciples asked him, saying, W
might this parable be?

10 And he said, Vnto you it is giuen to know
mysteries of the kingdome of God: but to other
parables, that seeing they might not see: and hear
they might not vnderstand.

11 Now the parable is this: The seede is the
of God.

12 Those by the way side, are they that heare:
commeth the deuill, and taketh away the word o
their hearts, lest they should beleeue, and be saue

13 They on the Rocke, are they which when

re, receiued the word with ioye: and these haue no te, which for a while belieue, and in time of temp- ion fall away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they, ich when they haue heard, goe forth, and are cho- with cares, and riches, and pleasures of this life, bring no fruite to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which n honest and good heart, hauing heard the worde, pe it, and bring forth fruite with patience.

16 ¶ No man when hee hath lighted a candle, co- eth it with a vessell, or putteth it vnder a bed: but eth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in, y see the light.

17 For nothing is secret, that shall not bee made nifest, neither any thing hidde, that shall not bee wne and come abroad.

18 Take heede therefore how yee heare: for whoso- hath, to him shall bee giuen, and whosoeuer hath from him shall bee taken, euen that which hee eth to haue.

19 ¶ Then came to him his mother, and his bre- n, and could not come at him, for the preasse.

20 And it was tolde him by certaine which saide, mother and thy brethren stand without desiring e thee.

21 And hee answered, and saide vnto them, My her and my Brethren are these which heare the d of God, and doe it.

22 ¶ Now it came to passe on a certaine day, that went into a ship, with his Disciples: and hee said them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the , and they launched forth.

23 But

23 But as they sailed, hee fell asleepe, and there came downe a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardie.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, wee perish. Then hee arose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water and they ceased, and there was a calme.

25 And hee said vnto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, saying, one to another: What manner of man is this? For hee commandeth euen the winds and waters & they obey him?

26 And they arriued at the Countrey of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galilee.

27 And when hee went forth to land, there met him out of the citie a certaine man, which had deuils long time, and ware no cloathes, neither abode in any house, but in tombes.

28 When hee sawe Jesus, hee cryed out, and fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce said, What haue I to doe with thee, Jesus thou Sonne of God the most high? I beseech thee torment mee not.

29 (For hee had commanded the vncleane spirit to come out of the man: For oftentimes hee had caught him, and hee was kept bound with chaines, and in fetters: and hee brake the bounds, and was driuen of the deuill into the wildernesse.)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And hee said, Legion: because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that hee would not command them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the Mountaine: and they besought

thee would suffer them to enter into them: and hee
fered them.

33 Then went the deuiles out of the man, & entred
o the Swine: and the Herde ranne violentlie downe
eepe place, into the Lak, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them, saw what was done,
y fled, and went, and tolde it in the Citie, and in the
untrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done, and
e to Jesus, and found the man out of whome the
ils were departed, sitting at ỹ feete of Jesus, cloa-
d and in his right minde: and they were afraide.

36 They also that saw it, told them by what means
that was possessed of the deuils was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the Coun-
y of the Gadarens round about, besought him
depart from them for they were taken with great
e: and hee went vp into the Shippe, and returned
ke againe.

38 Now the man out of whom the deuils were de-
ted, besought him that hee might bee with him: but
as sent him away, saying,

39 Returne to thine owne house, and shewe howe
at thinges GOD hath done vnto thee. And hee
t his way, and published throughout the whole
e, how great thinges Jesus had done vnto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Jesus was re-
ed, the people gladlie receiued him: for they were
waiting for him.

41 ¶ And beholde, there came a man, named
ius, and hee was a Ruler of the Synagogue; and
fell downe at Jesus feete, and besought him, that
would come into his house.

42 For

42 For hée had one onelie daughter, about t
yéeres of ages, and shée lay a dying. (But as hé
the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman hauing an issue of blood, t
yéeres, which had spent all her liuing vpon Ph
ans neither could bée healed of any.

44 Came behinde him, and touched the bo
his garmẽt: & immediatelie her issue of blood sta

45 And Iesus said, Who touched mée? Wh
denyed, Peter and they that were with him, sai
ster, the multitude thronge thée and preasse thé
sayest thou. Who touched mée.

46 And Iesus said, Some bodie hath touche
for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of mée.

47 And when the woman sawe that shée w
hid, shée came trembling, and falling downe
him, shée declared vnto him, before all the peopl
what cause shée had touched him, and howe sh
healed immediatelie.

48 And hée saide vnto her, Daughter bée o
comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in

49 ¶ While hée yet spake, there commeth on
the Ruler of the Synagogues house, saying, t
Thy Daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But whẽ Iesus heard it, he answered him, s
Feare not, belieue only and shée shall bée made

51 And when hée came into the house, hée s
no man to goe in, saue Peter, James and Joh
the father and the mother of the Maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but hé
Weepe not, shee is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorne, knowin
shée was dead.

54 And hée put them all out, and toke her by the
nd, and called saying, Maide, arise,
55 And her spirite came againe, and shée arose,
ightway: And hée commanded to giue her meate.
56 And her Parents were astonished: but hée char-
them ỹ they should tell no man what was done.

## CHAP. IX.

Christ. sendeth foorth his Apostles. 9. Herode
esireth to see Christ, 28, The transfiguration
7. The lunatike.

Then hée called his twelue Disciples together, and
gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuills,
to cure diseases.

And hée sent them to preach the kingdome of
, and to heale the sicke.

And hée said vnto them, Take nothing for your
ney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, nei-
money, neither haue two coates apiece.

And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide,
thence depart.

And whosoeuer will not receiue you, when yée
out of that citie, shake off the verie dust from your
, for a testimonie against them.

And they departed, and went through the townes,
ching the Gospel, and healing euerie where.

¶ Now Herode the Tetrach heard of all that
done by him: and hée was perplexed, because
it was said of some, that Iohn was risen from
ead:

And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of
rs, that one of the old Prophets was risen againe.

nd Herode said, Iohn I haue beheaded: but who

is

is this of whom I heare such thinges: And hee
rèd to see him.

10 And the Apostles, when they were retu
tolde him all that they had done. And hee tooke
and went aside priuatelie into a desart place be
ing to the citie, called Bethsaida.

11 And the people, when they knew it, fol
him, and hee receiued them, and spake vnto th
the kingdome of God, and healed them that ha
of healing.

12 And when the day began to weare away,
came the twelue, and said vnto him, Sende the
titude away, that they may goe into the townes
countrey round about, and lodge, and get victu
wes are heere in a desart place.

13 But hee said vnto them, Giue yee them to
And they said, Wee haue no more but fiue loaue
two fishes, except wee should goe and buy meat
all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thousand men.
hee said to his Disciples, Make them sit downe
ties in a companie.

15 And they did so and made them all sit dow

16 Then hee tooke the fiue loaues, & the two
and looking vp to heauen, hee blessed them, & br
gaue to the Disciples, to set before the multitud

17 And they did eate, and were all filled. And
was taken vp of fragments that remained to
twelue baskets.

18 ¶ And it came to passe as hee was alone
ing, his Disciples were with him: and hee aske
saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answering saide, Iohn the Bapti

me say, Elias: and other say, That one of the olde
ophets is risen againe.
20 Hée said vnto them, But whom say yée that I
? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.
21 And hée straitly charged them, and commanded
em to tell no man that thing:
22 Saying, The Sonne of man must suffer many
inges, and bée reiected of the Elders, and chiefe
iests, and Scribes, and bée slaine, and bee raised
e third day.
23 ¶ And hée said to them all, If any man will
me after mée, let him denie himselfe, and take vp
s crosse daylie, and follow mee.
24 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it:
t whosoeuer will loose his life for my sake, the same
ll saue it.
25 For what is a man aduantaged, if hée gaine
whole world, and lose himselfe, or bee cast away?
26 For whosoeuer shall bée ashamed of mée and of
wordes, of him shall the Sonne of Man bée asha-
d, when hée shall come in his owne glorie, and in
Fathers, and of his holie Angels.
27 But I tell you of a trueth, there bée some stan-
g here, which shall not taste of death, till they see
kingdome of God.
28 ¶ And it came to passe, about an eight dayes
r these sayinges, hee tooke, Peter, and Iohn, and
nes, and went vp into a Mountaine to pray.
29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance
s altered, and his rayment was white & glistring.
30 And behold there talked with him two men,
ich were Moses and Elias,
31 Who appeared in glorie, and spake of his de-

ceale

ceaſe, which hæ ſhould accompliſh at Hieruſalem.
32 But Peter and they that were with him
heauie with ſlæpe: and when they were awake,
ſaw his glorie, and the two men which ſtood with
33 And it came to paſſe, as they departed
him, Peter ſaid vnto Jeſus, Maſter, it is good
to bæ hære, and let vs make three tabernacles, one
thæ, and one for Moſes, and one for Elias: not
wing what hæ ſaid.
34 While hæ thus ſpake, there came a cloud,
ouerſhadowed them, and they feared, as they en
into the cloud.
35 And there came a voyce out of the cloud, ſay
This is my beloued Sonne, heare him.
36 And when the voyce was paſt, Jeſus was
alone: and they kept it cloſe, and told no man in
dayes any of thoſe things, which they had ſæne.
37 ¶ And it came to paſſe on the nirt
when they were come downe from the Hill, much
ple met him.
38 And beholde, a man of the companie cryed
ſaying, Maſter, I beſeech thæ looke vpon my ſo
for hæ is mine onelie childe:
39 And loe, a ſpirit taketh him, and hæ ſudd
cryeth out, and it teareth him, and hæ foameth ag
and bruiſing him, hardlie departeth from him.
40 And I beſought thy Diſciples to caſt him
and they could not.
41 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaide, O faithleſſe
peruerſe generation, howe long ſhall I bæ with
and ſuffer you? bring thy ſonne hither.
42 And as hæ was yet acomming, the
threw him downe, and tare him: and Jeſus re

e vncleane spirit, and healed the Childe, and deli-
red him againe to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mightie po-
er of God, but while they wondered euery one at all
ings which Iesus did, hee said vnto his Disciples,

44 Let these sayings sinke downe into your eares,
the Sonne of Man shall bee deliuered into the
nds of men.

45 But they vnderstood not this saying, and it was
from them, that they perceiued it not: and they
ared to aske him of that saying.

46 ¶ Then there arose a reasoning among them,
hich of them should bee greatest.

47 And Iesus perceiuing the thought of their
art, tooke a childe and set him by him.

48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer shall receiue
s childe, in my Name receiueth mee: & whosoeuer
ll receiue mee, receiueth him that sent mee. For hee
at is least among you all, the same shall bee great.

49 ¶ And Iohn answered, and said, Master, wee
w one casting out deuils in thy Name, and wee for-
de him, because hee followeth not with vs.

50 And Iesus said vnto him Forbide him not: for
e that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was
me that hee should bee receiued vp, hee stedfastly set
s face to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent Messengers before his face, and they
nt and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to
ake readie for him.

53 And they did not receiue him, because his face
as as though hee would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his Disciples, Iames and Iohn saw

this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that wee comman
to come downe from heauen, and consume t
euen as Elias did?

55 But hee turned, and rebuked them, and sai
know not what manner of spirit yee are of.

56 For the Sonne of Man is not come to de
mens liues, but to saue them. And they went to
ther village.

57 ¶ And it came to passe, that as they wen
the way, a certaine man saide vnto him, Lord, I
follow thee whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, Foxes haue h
and birdes of the aire haue nests, but the Son
man hath not where to lay his head.

59 And hee said vnto another, Follow mee: B
said, Lord, suffer mee first to goe and burie my fa

60 Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead burie
dead: but goe thou and preach the kingdome of G

61 And another also saide, Lord, I will follow
but let mee first goe bid them farewell, which a
home, at mine house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man hauin
his hand to the plough, and looking backe, is fi
the kingdome of God.

## CHAP. X.

1. The seuentie Disciples. 17. admonished to be
ble. 38. Martha repreheded & Marie commen

AFter these thinges, the Lord appointed oth
uentie also, and sent them two and two b
his face, into euerie citie and place, whither he
selfe would come.

2 Therefore saide hee vnto them, The ha

elie is great, but the labourers are few, pray yee
efore the Lord of the Harueſt, that hee would ſend
th labourers into his Harueſt.
Goe your wayes: Beholde, I ſende you forth as
bes among Wolues.
Carie neither purſe, nor ſcrip, nor ſhoes, and ſa-
no man by the way.
And into whatſoeuer houſe yee enter, Firſt ſay,
ce bee to this houſe.
And if the Sonne of Peace bee there, your peace
reſt vpon it: if not, it ſhall turne to you againe.
And in the ſame houſe remaine, eating and drin-
ſuch thinges as they giue: For the labourer is
hie of his hyre. Goe not from houſe to houſe.
And into whatſoeuer Citie yee enter, and they
ue you, eate ſuch thinges as are ſet before you.
And heale the ſicke that are therein, and ſay vn-
m the Kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.
But into whatſoeuer citie yee enter, and they
ue you not, goe your wayes out into the ſtreetes
ſame, and ſay,
Euen the verie duſt of your citie which cleaueth
, wee doe wipe off againſt you: and notwithſtan-
bee yee ſure of this, that the Kingdome of God
me nigh vnto you.
But I ſay vnto you, That it ſhall bee more tole-
in that day for Sodome, than for that citie.
Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Beth-
, For if the mightie workes had beene done in
and Sidon, which haue beene done in you, they
great while agoe repented, ſitting in ſackcloth
aſhes.
But it ſhall bee more tolerable for Tyre and Si-

done at the iudgement than for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalt heauen, shalt bee thrust downe to hell.

16 Hee that heareth you, heareth mee: a that despiseth you, despiseth mee: and hee that des mee, despiseth him that sent mee.

17 ¶ And the seuentie returned againe with saying, Lord, euen the deuils, are subiect vn through thy Name.

18 And hee said vnto them, I beheld Sata lightning fall from heauen.

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to tread o pents & scorpions, and ouer all the power of th mie: and nothing shall by any meanes hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this reioyce not, th spirits are subiect vnto you, but rather reioyce, be your names are written in heauen.

21 In that houre Iesus reioyced in Spirit, and I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen, and e that thou hast hid these thinges from the wise and dent, and hast reuealed them vnto babes: euen s ther, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 All thinges are deliuered to mee of my Fa and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but th ther: and who the Father is, but the Sonne, and to whom the Sonne will reueale him.

23 ¶ And hee turned him vnto his Disciples said priuately, Blessed are the eyes which see th that yee see.

24 For I tell you, that many prophets and k haue desired to see those thinges which yee see haue not seene them: and to heare those things yee heare, and haue not heard them.

25 ¶ And behold, a certaine Lawer stood vp, and
mpted him, saying, Master, what shall I doe to in-
ite eternall life? Hee said vnto him,
26 What is written in the Law? How readest
u?
27 And hee answering, said, Thou shalt loue the
d thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy
le, and with all thy strength, and with all thy
nde, and thy neighbour as thy selfe.
28 And hee said vnto him, Thou hast answered
ght: this doe, and thou shalt liue.
29 But hee willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto
us, And who is my neighbour?
30 And Iesus answering, said, A certaine man
nt downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, and fell a-
ng Theeues, which stripped him of his rayment, &
unded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.
31 And by chaunce there came downe a certaine
iest that way, and when hee saw him, hee passed
on the other side.
32 And likewise a Leuite, when hee was at the
ce, came and loked on him, and passed by on the
er side.
33 But a certaine Samaritane, as hee iourneyed
me where hee was, and when hee saw him, hee had
mpassion on him.
34 And went to him, & bound vp his woundes, pow-
g in oyle and wine, and set him on his owne beast,
d brought him to an Inne, and toke care of him.
35 And on the morrow, when hee departed, hee toke
t two pence, and gaue them to the Hoste, and saide
to him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spen-
st more, when I come againe, I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou
neighbour vnto him that fell among the Theeue
37 And hee saide, Hee that shewed mercie on
Then Jesus said vnto him, Goe, and doe thou like
38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went,
hee entred into a certaine village: and a certain
man, named Martha, receiued him into her hous
39 And shee had a sister called Marie, which
sate at Jesus feete, and heard his word.
40 But Martha was cumbred about much ser
and came to him, and said, Lord, doeth thou no
that my sister hath left mee to serue alone? B
therefore that shee helpe mee.
41 And Jesus answered, and said vnto her,
tha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled abou
nie thinges:
42 But one thing is needfull, and Marie hath
sen that good part, which shall not bee taken
from her.

## CHAP. XI.

1. Christ teacheth to pray instantlie. 14. Hee c
out a dumbe deuill. 29. He preacheth to the
ple. 37. and reproueth the Pharisees, Scribes
Lawyers.

AND it came to passe, that as hee was pray
a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his
ples saide vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as
also taught his Disciples.
2 And hee saide vnto them, When yee pray,
Our Father which art in heauen, Hallowed be
Name, thy kingdome come, Thy will bee done,
heauen, so in earth.

3 Giue vs this day our daylie bread.
4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for wee also forgiue
erie one that is indebted to vs. And lead vs not in-
temptation, but deliuer vs from euill.
5 And hee saide vnto them, Which of you shall
ue a Friend, and shall goe vnto him at mid-night,
o say vnto him, Friend, lend mee three loaues:
6 For a Friend of mine in his journey is come to
e, and I haue nothing to set before him.
7 And hee from within shall answere, & say, Trou-
mee not, the doore is now shut, and my children are
h mee in the bed: I cannot rise, and giue thee.
8 I say vnto you, Though hee will not rise, and giue
n, because hee is his friend: yet because of his impor-
nitie, he will rise & giue him as many as he needeth.
9 And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall bee giuen
u: seeke, and yee shall finde: knocke, and it shall bee
ened vnto you.
10 For euerie one ỹ asketh, receiueth: & he that see-
th, findeth: & to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.
11 If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that
a father, will hee giue him a stone? Or if hee aske a
h, will hee for a fish giue him a Serpent?
12 Or if hee shall aske an egge, will hee offer him a
corpion?
13 If yee then, being euill, know how to giue good
fts vnto your children: how much more shall your
auenlie Father giue the holie Spirite to them that
ke him?
14 ¶ And hee was casting out a deuill, and it was
mbe. And it came to passe, when the deuill was
ne out, the dumbe spake: and the people wondred.
15 But some of them said, Hee casteth out deuils

through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils.

16 And others tempting him, sought of him a
from heauen.

17 But hee knowing their thoughts, said
them, Euerie kingdome diuided against it sel
brought to desolation: and an house diuided a
an house, falleth.

18 If Satan also bee diuided against him
How shall that kingdome stand? Because yee say
I cast out deuils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by
doe your sonnes cast them out? therefore shall th
your judges.

20 But if I by the finger of God cast out d
no doubt the kingdome of God is come vpon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his pa
his goods are in peace.

22 But when a stronger than hee shall come
him, and ouercome him, hee taketh from him a
armour wherein hee trusted, and diuideth his sp

23 Hee that is not with mee, is against mee,
hee that gathereth not with mee, scattereth.

24 When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a m
hee walketh through drie places, seeking rest:
finding none, hee saith, I will returne vnto mine
whence I came out.

25 And when hee commeth, hee findeth it s
and garnished.

26 Then goeth hee and taketh to him seauen
spirits more wicked than himselfe, and they ent
and dwell there, and the last state of that man
worse than the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe, as hee spake these th

ertaine woman of the companie lift vp her voyce, said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare , and the papes which thou hast sucked.

8 But hæ said, Yea, rather blessed are they that ee the word of God, and kæpe it.

9 ¶ And when the people were gathered thicke ether, hæ began to say, This is an euill generation, y sæke a signe, and there shall no signe bee giuen ut the signe of Jonas the Prophet.

30 For as Jonas was a signe vnto the Ninevites, hall also the Sonne of Man bæ to this generation.

31 The Quæne of the South shall rise vp in the gement, with the men of this generation, and con- ne them: for shæ came from the vtmost partes he earth, to heare the wisedome of Salomon: and old, a greater than Salomon is hære.

32 The men of Nineue shall rise vp in the judge- nt with this generation, and shall condemne it: for y repented at the preaching of Jonas: and beholde, eater than Jonas is hære:

33 No man when hæ hath lighted a candle putteth n a secrete place, neither vnder a bushell, but on a deficke, that they which come in may sæ ẏ light.

34 The light of the bodie is the eye: therefore en thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full ight: but when thine eye is euill, thy bodie also ull of darknesse.

35 Take hæd therefore that the light which is in e, bæ not darknesse.

36 If thy whole bodie therefore be full of light, hau- no part darke, ẏ whole shalbe full of light, as wt̄ bright shining of a candle doe giue thee light.

37 ¶ And as hæ spake, a certaine Pharisee besought

him

him to dine with him: and hée went in, and
downe to Meate.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, hée mar
that hee had not first washed before dinner.

39 And the Lord said vnto him, Now doe yée
risees make cleane the out side of the cup and the
ter: but your inward part is full of rauening and
kednesse.

40 Yée fooles, did not hée that made that wh
without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather giue almes of such thinges a
haue: and beholde, all thinges are cleane vnto y

42 But woe vnto you Pharisees: for yée
Mint and Rue, and all manner of herbes, and
ouer judgement, and the loue of God: these oug
to haue done, and not to left the other vndone.

43 Woe vnto you Pharisees, for yée loue th
permost seates in the Synagogues, and grietin
the Markets.

44 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, h
crites: for yée are as graues, which appeare not
the men that walke ouer them, are not aware of t

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, & sai
to him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest vs al

46 And hée saide, Woe vnto you also yée Law
for yée lade men with burdens grieuous to bee b
and yée your selues touch not the burdens, with
your fingers.

47 Woe vnto you, for yée build the Sepulch
the Prophets: and your fathers killed them.

48 Truelie yée beare witnesse that yée allow
deedes of your fathers: for they indéed killed them
yée build their Sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisedome of God, I will
to them Prophets and Apostles, and some of them
y shall slay and persecute:
50 That the blood of all the Prophets which was
from the foundation of the world, may bee requi-
of this generation,
51 From the blood of Abel, vnto the blood of Za-
arias, which perished betweene the Altar and the
emple: Verilie I say vnto you, it shall bee required
this generation.
52 Woe vnto you Lawyers: for yee haue taken a-
y the key of knowledge: yee entred not in your sel-
s, and them that were entring in, yee hindred.
53 And as hee saide these thinges vnto them, the
ribes and Pharisees began to vrge him vehement-
, and to prouocke him to speake of many thinges:
54 Laying waite for him, and seeke to catch some-
ng out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

## CHAP. XII.

To auoide hypocrisie, and fearefulnesse in publi-
shing Christs doctrine. 17. To beware of coue-
tousnesse. 4. The faithfull and wise Steward.

IN the meane time, when there were gathered to-
gether an innumerable multitude of people, in so-
uch that they trode one vpon another, hee began to
y vnto his Disciples, first of all Beware yee of the
uen of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.
2 For there is nothing couered, that shall not bee
ealed: neither hid, that shall not bee knowne.
3 Therefore whatsoeuer yee haue spoken in darke-
, shalbe heard in the light, and that which yee haue
oken in the eare, in closets, shall bee proclaimed vp
the house tops.

4 And

4 And I say vnto you my friendes, Be not afraid of them that kill the bodie, and after that, haue no more that they can doe.

5 But I will forwarne you whom yee shall feare: Feare him, which after hee hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say vnto you, Feare him.

6 Are not fiue Sparrowes solde for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But euen the verie haires of your head are all numbred: Feare not therefore, yee are of more value than many Sparrowes.

8 Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse mee before men, him shall the Sonne of Man also confesse before the Angels of God.

9 But hee that denieth mee before men, shall be denied before the Angels of God.

10 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man it shall bee forgiuen him: but vnto him that blasphemeth against the holie Ghost, it shall not bee forgiuen.

11 And when they bring you vnto the Synagues, and vnto Magistrates, and powers, take no thought how and what thing yee shall answere, or what yee shall say:

12 For the holie Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, what yee ought to say.

13 And one of the companie saide vnto him, Master, speake to my brother, that hee diuide the inheritance with mee.

14 And hee said vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a diuider ouer you?

15 And hee said vnto them, Take heed and beware of couetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the

undance of the things which hee possesseth.
16 And hee spake a parable vnto them, saying, The
ũd of a certaine rich mã brought forth plentifully.
17 And hee thought within himselfe, saying,
hat shall I doe, because I haue no roome where to
ow my fruites?
18 And hee saide, This will I doe; I will pull
one my Barnes, and builde greater, and there
l I bestow all my fruites, and my goods.
19 And I will say to my soule, Soule thou hast
ch goods laide vp for manie yeeres; take thine ease,
, drinke and bee merrie.
20 But God said vnto him, Thou foole, this night
soule shall bee required of thee: then whose shall
se things bee which thou hast prouided?
21 So is hee that layeth vp treasure for himselfe,
is not rich towards God.
22 ¶ And he said vnto his Disciples, Therefore I
vnto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye
l eate, neither for you bodie what yee shall put on.
23 The life is more than meate, and the bodie is
ethan rayment.
24 Consider the Rauens, for they neither sow nor
ye, which neither haue store-house nor Barne, and
d feedeth them: How much more are ye better than
Fowles?
25 And which of you with taking thought can adde
s stature one cubite?
26 If yee then bee not able to doe that thing which
ast, why take yee thought for the rest?
27 Consider the Lilies, how they grow they toyle
, they spinne not: and yet I say vnto you, that Sa-
on in all his Glorie, was not arayed like one of
ese.

28 If then God so cloathe the grasse, which
day in the fielde, and to morrow is cast into the
how much more will hee cloathe you, O ye of
faith?

29 And seeke not yee what yee shall eate, or
yee shall drinke, neither bee yee of doubtfull min

30 For all these thinges doe the Nations of
world seeke after: and your Father knoweth tha
haue neede of these thinges.

31 ¶ But rather seeke yee the Kingdome of
and all these thinges shall bee added vnto you.

32 Feare not little flocke, for it is your Fat
good pleasure to giue you the Kingdome.

33 Sell that yee haue, and giue almes: pro
your selues bagges which ware not olde, a trea
in the heauens that faileth not, where no Thiefe
proacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there will
heart bee also.

35 Let your loynes bee girded about, and
lightes burning.

36 And yee your selues like vnto men that w
for their Lord, when hee will returne from the
ding, that when hee commeth and knocketh,
may open vnto him immediatelie.

37 Blessed are those seruants, whom, the Lord
hee commeth, shall find watching. Verilie I say
you, That hee shall girde himselfe, and make the
sit downe to meate, and will come forth & serue t

38 And if hee shall come in the seconde watch
come in third watch, and finde them so, blessed
those seruants.

39 And this know, that if the good man of

se had knowne what houre the Thiefe would come, would haue watched, and haue not suffered his se to bee broken thorow.

40 Bee ye therefore readie also: for the Sonne of n commeth at an houre when yee thinke not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said, vnto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord saide, Who then is that faithfull wise Steward, whom his Lord shall make Ruler his houshold to giue them their portion of meate e season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when ommeth, shall finde him so doing.

44 Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that hee will e him Ruler ouer all that hee hath.

45 But and if that seruant say in his heart, My delayeth his comming, and shall begin to beate men-seruants and Maidens, and to eat and drinke to bee drunken.

46 The Lord of that seruant will come in a day n hee looketh not for him, and at an houre when not ware, and will cut him in sunder, and will int him his portion with the vnbelieuers.

47 And that seruent which knew his Lordes will prepared not himselfe, neither did according to ill, shall bee beaten with many stripes.

48 But hee that knewe not, and did committe ges worthie of stripes, shall bee beaten with few es. For vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him be much required, and to whom men haue com- d much, of him they will aske the more.

49 ¶ I am come to sende fire on the earth: and will I, if it bee alreadie kindled?

50 But

50 But I haue a baptisme to bee baptized wi
how am I straitned till it bee accomplished?

51 Suppose yee that I am come to bring pe
earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather diuision.

52 For from henceforth there shall bee fiue i
house diuided, three against two, and two against

53 The father shall bee diuided against the so
the sonne against the father: the mother again
daughter, and the daughter against the mother
mother in-law against her daughter-in-law, a
daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

54 ¶ And hee said also to the people, When y
a cloude rise out of the West, straight-way ye
There commeth a showre and so it is.

55 And when yee see the South winde blow
say, There will bee heate, and it commeth to pas

56 Yee hypocrites, yee can discerne the face
Skie, and of the earth: but how is it that yee
discerne this time?

57 Yea, and why euen of your selues judg
not what is right?

58 ¶ When thou goest with thine aduersa
the Magistrate, as thou art in the way, giue dil
that thou mayest bee deliuered from him, lest he
thee to the Iudge, and the Iudge deliuer the
officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence
thou hast payed the very last mite.

## CHAP. XIII.

1. Christ preacheth repentance vpon the puni
of the Galileans, and others. 6. The fig
cursed. 24. The straite gate.

Here were present at that same season, some that
tolde him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate
mingled with their sacrifices.

And Jesus answering, said vnto them, Suppose
that these Galileans were sinners aboue all the
ileans, because they suffered such things?

I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall
kewise perish.

Or those eighteene vpon whom the towre of Silo
and slew them, thinke yee that they were sinners
e all men that dwelt in Hierusalem?

I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall
kewise perish.

¶ Hee spake also this parable: A certaine man
a figge-tree planted in his vine-yarde, and hee
e, and sought fruite thereon, and found none.

Then said hee vnto the dresser of his vine-yarde,
old, these three yeares I come seeking fruite on
figge-tree, and finde none: cut it downe, why
cyeth it the ground?

And hee answering, said vnto him, Lord, let it alone
yeare also, till I shall dig about it, and doung it.

And if it beare fruite, Well: and if not, then
that, thou shalt cut it downe.

And hee was teaching in one of the Synago-
on the Sabbath day.

¶ And behold, there was a woman which had
rit of infirmitie eighteene yeeres, and was bowed
her, and could in no wise lift vp her selfe.

And when Jesus saw her, hee called her to him,
said, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infir-
e.

And hee laid his hands on her, and immediate-

lie shée was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because ỹ Jesus had healed on the bath day, and saide vnto the people, There are dayes in which men ought to worke, in them fore come and bee healed, and not on the Sabbath.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, hypocrite, doeth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his Oxe or his Asse from the stall, and lead away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter Abrahams, whom satan hath bound, loe these eight yeeres, bee loosed from this bond on the Sabbath?

17 And when hee had said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: and all the people reioyced for all the glorious thinges that were done by him.

18 ¶ Then saide hee, Vnto what is the Kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a graine of Mustarde seede, which a man tooke, and cast into his garden, and it grew and waxed a great tree: and the foules of the aire lodged in the branches of it.

20 And againe hee said, Whereunto shall I liken the Kingdome of God?

21 It is like leauen, which a woman tooke and hid in three measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

22 And hee went thorow the cities and villages teaching and iourneying towards Hierusalem.

23 Then saide one vnto him, Lord, are there few that bee saued? and hee said vnto them.

24 ¶ Striue to enter in at the straite gate: for many, I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not bee able.

25 When once the Master of the house is risen vp, & hath shut to the doore, & ye begin to stand without, & to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open vs: and hee shall answere, and say vnto you, I know you not whence yee are:

26 Then shall yee begin to say, Wee haue eaten & drunken in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

27 But hee shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are: Depart from mee all ye workers of iniquitie.

28 There shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit downe in the kingdome of God.

30 And behold, there are last, which shall bee first; and there are first, which shall bee last.

31 ¶ The same day there came certaine of the Pharisees, saying vnto him, Get thee out, and depart hence, for Herode will kill thee.

32 And hee said vnto them, Goe ye and tell that fox, beholde, I cast out deuils, and doe cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall bee perfected.

33 Neuertheless I must walke to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot bee that a Prophet perish out of Hierusalem.

34 O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as an Hen doeth gather her brood vnder her

her winges, and yée would not?

35 Beholde, your house is left vnto you des
And verilie I say vnto you, yée shall not see me
till the time come, when yée shall say, Blessed
that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1. The dropsie healed on the Sabbath. 15. The
rable of the great Supper. 25. Who canno
Christs Disciples.

AND it came to passe, as hée went into ỹ hou
one of the chiefe Pharisees, to eate bread
Sabbath day, that they watched him.

2 And beholde, there was a certaine man
him which had the dropsie.

3 And Jesus answering, spake vnto the Law
and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawfull to heale
Sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And hée tooke hi
healed him, and let him goe.

5 And answered, them, saying, Which of yo
haue an Asse, or an Oxe, fallen into a pitte, an
not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath da

6 And they would not answere him againe t
things.

7 ¶ And hée put forth a parable to those
were bidden, when hée marked how they chose
chiefe roumes, saying vnto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a we
sit not downe in the highest roume: lest a more
table man than thou bée bidden of him,

9 And he that bade thee and him, come, & say t
Giue this man place, & thou begin with shame
the lowest roume.

10

10 But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe
the lowest roume, that when hee that bade thee
meth, hee may say vnto thee, Friend, goe vp
er: then shalt thou haue worshippe in the presence
em that sit at meate with thee.

11 For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe shall bee aba-
and hee that humbleth himselfe, shall bee exalted.

12 ¶ Then saide hee also to him that bade him,
en thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy
nds, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsemen, nor
rich neighbours lest they also bide thee againe, and
mpence bee made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore,
maimed, the lame, the blinde.

14 And thou shalt bee blessed, for they cannot re-
pence thee, for thou shalt bee recompenced at the
rection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sate at meate with
, heard these things, hee said vnto him, Blessed is
hat shall eate bread in the kingdome of God.

16 Then said hee vnto him, A certaine man made
eat Supper, and bade many.

17 And sent his seruãt at supper time, to say to them
were bidde, Come, for all thinges are now readie.

18 And they all with one consent began to make
se: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a piece
round, and I must needes goe and see it: I pray
haue mee excused.

19 And another saide, I haue bought fiue yoke of
n, and I goe to proue them: I pray thee haue
excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife: and
efore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant came, and shewed his lo
things. Then the Master of the house beeing a
said to his seruant, Goe out quicklie into the
and lanes of the citie: and bring in hither the
and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the seruant saide Lord, it is done
hast commanded, and yet there is rome.

23 And the Lord saide vnto the seruant, G
into the high wayes and hedges, and compel
to come in, that mine house may bee filled.

24 For I say vnto you, That none of tho
which were bidden, shall taste of my Supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes wit
and hee turned and said vnto them,

26 If any man come to mee, & hate not his
& mother, & wife and children, and brethren, &
yea, and his owne life also, he cannot be my Dis

27 And whosoeuer doeth not beare his cross
come after mee, cannot bee my Disciple.

28 For which of you intending to builde a T
sitteth not downe first, and counteth the cost, w
hee haue sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haplie after hee hath laid the found
and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, be
mocke him.

30 Saying This man began to builde, an
not able to finish.

31 Or What king, going to make war again
ther king, sitteth not downe first, and consulteth
ther hee bee able with ten thousand, to meet
him y commeth against him with twentie thou

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great w
hee sendeth an Ambassage, and desireth condi
peace.

33 So likewise whosoeuer hee bee of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, hee cannot be my Disciple.

34 ¶ Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his sa-
re: wherewith shall it bee seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for the Land, nor yet for the dung-
but men cast it out. Hee that hath eares to heare,
im heare.

## CHAP. XV.

The parable of the lost sheepe. 8. Of the piece of siluer. 11. Of the prodigall sonne.

THen drew neare vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, for to heare him.

2 And the Pharisees & Scribes murmured, saying,
s man receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And hee spake this parable vnto them, saying,

4 What man of you hauing an hundreth sheepe, if
ose one of them, doeth not leaue the nintie and
e in the wildernesse, and goe after that which was
vntill hee finde it.

5 And when hee hath found it, hee layeth it on his
lders, rejoycing.

6 And when hee commeth home, hee calleth toge-
his friends, and neighbours, saying vnto them,
oyce with mee, for I haue found my sheepe which
s lost.

7 I say vnto you, That likewise joy shalbe in heaue
one sinner that repenteth, more than ouer nintie
nine just persons, which neede no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman, hauing ten pieces of sil-
if shee lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and
pe the house, and seeke diligentlie, tell she finde it?

9 And when shee hath found it, shee calleth her

friends and her neighbours together, saying, Re
with mee, for I haue found ỹ piece which I had
10 Likewise I say, vnto you, there is ioye in the
sence of the Angels of God, ouer one sinner ỹ re
11 ¶ And he said, A certaine man had two s
12 And the younger of them said to his father
ther, giue mee ths portion of goods that falleth
And hee diuided vnto them his liuing.
13 And not manie dayes after, the younger
gathered all together, and toke his journey
farre countrey, and there wasted his substance
riotous liuing.
14 And when hée had spent all, there arose a
tie famine in that land, and hee began to bee in
15 And he went, & ioyned himselfe to a citiz
countrey, and he sent him into his fields to feed
16 And hæ would faine haue filled his bellie wi
huskes ỹ the swine did eate: & no man gaue vnto
17 And when hée came to himselfe, hee said,
manie hyred seruantes of my Fathers haue b
nough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger:
18 I will arise, and goe to my father, and w
vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heaue
before thee,
19 And am no more worthie to bée called thy
make mæ as one of thine hyred seruants.
20 And he arose, & came to his father, But w
was yet a great way off, his father saw him, &
passion, and ran, and fell on his necke, and kiss
21 And the sonne saide vnto him, Father,
sinned against heauen, and in thy sight, and
more worthie to bæ called thy sonne.
22 But the father said to his seruants, Bri

t Robe, and put it on him, and put a Ring on
nd, and shoes on his feete.

And bring hither the fatted calfe, and kill it,
et vs eate and bee merrie.

For this my sonne was dead & is aliue againe,
as lost, & is found. And they began to bee merrie.

Now his eldest sonne was in the fielde, and as
me and drew nigh to the house, hee heard musike
ancing.

And hee called one of the seruants, and asked
these thinges meant.

And hee said vnto him, Thy brother is come,
hy father hath killed the fatted calfe, because hee
eceiued him safe and sound.

And hee was angrie, and would not goe in:
for came his father out, and intreated him.

And hee answering, saide to his Father, Loe,
many yeares doe I serue thee, neither transgres-
at any time thy commandement, and yet thou
gauest mee a kid, that I might make merrie
my friends.

But as soone as this thy sonne was come, which
deuoured thy liuing with harlotes, thou hast kil-
n the fatted calfe.

And hee saide vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer
mee, and all that I haue is thine.

It was meet that wee should make merrie, and
ad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue
e; and was lost, and is found.

---

## CHAP. XVI.

the vnjust steward. 14. The hypocrisie of the
etous Pharisees reproued. 19. The rich glut-
on and Lazarus.

AND

AND hée said also vnto his Disciples, There
certaine rich man, which had a steward, and
same was accused vnto him, ý he had wasted his g
2 And hée called him, and said vnto him, How
that I heare this of thée? Giue an account of thy
wardship: for thou mayest bée no longer steward.
3 Then the steward saide within himselfe,
shall I doe, for my lord taketh away from me
Stewardship? I cannot dig, to beg I am asham
4 I am resolued what to doe, ý whẽ I am put out
stewardship, they may receiue me into their hou
5 So hée called euerie one of his lords debters
him, and saide vnto the first, How much owest
vnto my Lord?
6 And hée saide, An hundreth measures of
And hée saide vnto him, take thy bill, and sit d
quickelie, and write fiftie.
7 Then said hée to another, And how much
thou? And he said, An hundreth measures of wh
And he said vnto him, Take thy bill, & write four
8 And the lord commended the vnjust Steward
cause he had done wisely: for the children of this
are in their generation wiser than the childrẽ of
9 And I say vnto you, Make to you selues frien
the Mammon of vnrighteousnes, ý when ye faile
may receiue you into the r euerlasting habitation
10 Hée that is faithfull in that which is least
faithfull also in much: and hée that is vnjust in
least, is vnjust also in much.
11 If therefore yée haue not beene faithfull in
vnrighteous Mammon, who will committe to
trust the true riches?
12 And if yee haue not beene faithfull in that
A

another mans, who shall giue you that which is
ur owne.

13 ¶ No man can serue two Maisters, for either
e will hate the one, and loue the other: or else hee
ll holde to the one, and despise the other: yee can
ot serue God and Mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who were couetous,
ard all these thinges: and they derided him.

15 And hee saide vnto them, Yee are they which
stifie your selues before men, but God knoweth
ur harts: for that which is highly estéemed amongst
en, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 The Law and the Prophets were vntill Iohn:
nce that time the Kingdome of God is preached, and
erie man preasseth vnto it.

17 And it is easier for heauen and earth to passe,
an one title of the Law to faile.

18 Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, and mar-
eth another, committeth adulterie: and whosoeuer
arrieth her that is put away from her husband, com-
itteth adulterie.

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man, which was
athed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptu-
llie euerie day.

20 And there was a certaine begger, named La-
rus, which was laide at his gate full of sores.

21 And desiring to bee fed with the crums which
ll from the rich mans table: moreouer the Dogges
me and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and
s carried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome: the
ch man also died, and was buried.

23 And in hell hee lift vp his eyes, being in tor-

ments,

ments, and seeth Abraham a farre off, and Laz
in his bosome.

24 And hee cryed, and said, Father Abraham,
mercie on mee, and sende Lazarus, that hee ma
the tip of his finger in water, and cole my tongu
I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember
thou in thy time receiuedst thy good things, and
likewise Lazarus euill thinges, but now is hee comfo
and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, betweene vs and
there is a great gulfe fixed, so that they which
passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they
to vs, that would come from thence.

27 Then hee saide, I pray thee therefore, fa
that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I haue fiue brethren, that hee may te
vnto thē, lest they also come into this place of to

29 Abraham saith vnto him, They haue M
and the Prophets, let them heare them.

30 And hee said, Nay, father, Abraham: but
went vnto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And hee said vnto him, If they heare not M
and the Prophets, neither will they bee perswa
though one rose from the dead.

## CHAP. XVII.

1. To auoide occasions of offence. 3. One to fo
another. 6. The power of faith. 11. The ten l

THen said hee vnto the Disciples, It is impo
but that offences will come, but woe vnto
through whom they come.

2 It were better for him that a Millstone were

about his necke, and bee cast into the Sea, than
t hee should offend one of those little ones.

3 ¶ Take heede to your selues: If thy brother tres-
s against thee, rebuke him: and if hee repent for-
e him.

4 And if hee trespasse against thee seuen times in a
y, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee,
ing, I repent, thou shalt forgiue him.

5 And the Apostles saide vnto the Lord, Increase
r faith.

6 And the Lord said, If yee had faith as a graine
ustarde seede, yee might say vnto this Sycamine
e, Bee thou plucked vp by the roote, and bee thou
nted in the Sea, and it should obey you.

7 But which of you hauing a seruant plowing. or
ding cattell, will say vnto him, by and by when he
ome from field, Goe and sit downe to Meate?

8 And will not rather say to him, Make readie
erewith I may sup, and girde thy selfe, and serue
e, till I haue eaten and dronken: and afterward
u shalt eate and drinke.

9 Doeth hee thanke that seruant, because hee did
thinges that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee shall haue done all
se thinges which are commanded you, say, Wee
vnprofitable Seruants: wee haue done that which
our duetie to doe.

11 ¶ And it came to passe as he went to Hierusalem,
hee passed thorow the midst of Samaria & Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certaine village, there met
ten men that were lepers, which stood a farre off:

13 And they lifted vp their voyces, and saide, Je-
Master, haue mercie on vs.

14 And when hee saw them, hee saide vnto th
Goe, shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it
to passe that as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them when hee saw y hee was he
turned backe, and with a loude voyce glorified G

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, gi
him thankes: and hee was a Samaritane.

17 And Iesus answering, saide, Were there
ten cleansed, but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to giue
rie to God, saue that stranger.

19 And hee said vnto him, Arise, goe thy way,
faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when hee was demanded of the
risees, when the kingdome of God should come,
answered and said, The kingdome of God com
not with obseruation.

21 Neither shall they say, Loe heere: or, loe th
for behold, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And hee said vnto the Disciples, The dayes
come, when yee shall desire to see one of the daye
the Sonne of Man, and yee shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you, See heere: or see th
Goe not after them, nor follow them.

24 For as the lightning that lightneth out of th
part vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other part v
heauen: so shall also the Sonne of man bee in his d

25 But first must hee suffer many thinges an
rejected of this generation.

26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe: so sh
bee also in the dayes of the Sonne of man.

27 They did eate, they dranke, they married w
they were giuen in marriage, vntill the day that

tred into the Arke: and the flood came, and destro-
them all.
28 Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot:
y did eate, they dranke, they bought, they solde,
y planted, they builded:
29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodome,
ained fire and brimstone from heauen, and destro-
them all.
30 Euen thus shall it bee in the day when the Son
man shall bee reuealed.
31 In that day hee which shall bee vpon the house
pe, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come
me to take it away: and hee that is in the fielde,
im likewise not returne backe.
32 Remember Lots Wife.
33 Whosoeuer shall seeke to saue his life, shall lose
and whosoeuer shall lose his life, shall preserue it.
34 I tell you, in ỹ night there shalbe two mẽ in one
de, the one shall bee taken, the other shall bee left.
35 Two women shall bee grinding together, the
shall bee taken, and the other left.
36 Two men shall bee in the fielde, the one shall
taken, and the other left.
37 And they answered, and said vnto him, Where,
d: And hee said vnto them, Whereſoeuer the bodie
thither will the Eagles bee gathered together.

## CHAP. XVIII.

The importunate widowe. 9. The Pharisee and
the publicane. 15. Children brought to Christ.
18. All to bee left for Christs sake.

AND hee spake a parable vnto them, to the ende,
that men ought alwayes to pray, & not to faint,
Saying,

2 Saying, There was in a citie a Iudge, w
feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that citie, & shee
vnto him, saying, Auenge mee of mine aduersa

4 And hee would not for a while. But after
hee saith within himselfe, Though I feare not
nor regarde man:

5 Yet because this Widow troubleth mee, I
auenge her lest by her continuall comming, she
rie mee.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the vniust
saith,

7 And shall not God auenge his owne Elect,
cry day and night vnto him, though hee beare
with them.

8 I tell you, that hee will auenge them spe
Neuertheless, when the Sonne of Man comm
shall hee finde faith on the earth?

9 And hee spake this parable vnto certaine,
trusted in themselues, that they were righteous,
despised other:

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pra
one a Pharisee, and the other a Publicane,

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with
selfe, God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other
are: extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen a
Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke, I giue tithes
that I possesse.

13 And the Publicane, standing afarre off
not lift vp so much as his eyes vnto heauen: but
vpō his breast, saying, God be mercifull to me a

14 I tell you, this man went downe to his
iustified, rather than the other: For euerie one

alted himselfe, shall bee abased: and hee that hum-
th himselfe, shall bee eralted.
15 And they brought vnto him also Infantes, that
would touch them: but when his Disciples saw it,
y rebuked them.
16 But Jesus called them vnto him, and said, Suf-
little children to come vnto mee; and forbidde them
: for of such is the Kingdome of God.
17 Verilie I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not
eiue the Kingdome of God as a little childe, shall
o wise enter therein.
18 And a certaine Ruler asked him, saying, Good
ster, what shall I doe to inherite eternall life?
19 And Jesus said vnto him, why callest thou mee,
d: None is good, saue one, that is, God.
20 Thou knowest the Commaundementes, Doe
commit adulterie, Doe not kill, Doe not steale,
not beare false witnesse, Honour thy father and
mother.
21 And hee saide, All these thinges haue I kept
my youth vp.
22 Now when Jesus heard these thinges, hee said
him, Yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that thou
, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt
treasure in heauen, and come follow mee.
23 And when hee heard this, hee was verie sor-
full, for hee was verie rich.
24 And when Jesus saw that hee was verie sor-
full, hee said, How hardlie shall they that haue
es, enter into the Kingdome of God.
25 For it is easier for a camell to goe thorow a nee-
eye, than for a rich man to enter into the King-
e of God.

26 And they then that heard it, said, Who ca
saued?

27 And hee said, The thinges which are impo
with men, are posible with God.

28 Then Peter saide, Loe, wee haue left all,
followed thee.

29 And hee said vnto them, Verily I say vnto
There is no man that hath left house or parents, or
thren, or wife, or childrē, for ẏ kingdome of Gods

30 Who shall not receiue manifold more in this
sent time, and in the world to come life euerlastin

31 ¶ Then hee tooke vnto him the twelue, and
vnto them, Behold, wee goe vp to Hierusalem,
all things that are written by the Prophets, co
ning the Sonne of man, shall bee accomplished.

32 For hee shall be deliuered vnto the Gentiles
shall be mocked & spitefully intreated, and spitte

33 And they shall scourge him, and put hi
death, and the third day hee shall rise againe.

34 And they vnderstood none of these thinges
this saying, was hidde from them neither knew
the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ And it came to passe, that as hee was
nigh vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sate b
way side, begging.

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, hee
what it meant.

37 And they told him, ẏ Iesus of Nazareth pass

38 And hee cryed, saying, Iesus, thou Sonne of
uid haue mercie on mee.

39 And they which went before, rebuked
that hee should holde his peace, but hee cryed so
the more, Thou Sonne of Dauid haue mercie o

4°

40 And Jesus stood still, & commãded him to be brought
nto him: & when hee was come neare, hæ asked him.
41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall doe vnto
ee? And hæ said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.
42 And Jesus saide vnto him, Receiue thy sight,
y faith haue saued thee.
43 And immediatelie hæ receiued his sight, and fol-
wed him, glorifying God: and all the people when
ey saw it, gaue praise vnto God.

## CHAP. XIX.

Zacheus a Publicane, 11. The ten pieces of mo-
ney. 28. Christ rideth into Hierusalem, 41. wee-
peth ouer it. 45. and purgeth the Temple.

AND Iesus entred, and passed thorow Jericho:
2 And behold, there was a man named Za-
eus, which was the chiefe among the Publicanes,
hæ was rich.
And hee sought to see Jesus, who hæ was & could
for the preasse, because hæ was of little stature.
4 And hæ ran before, and climbed vp into a Syco-
e tree, to see him, for hæ was to passe that way.
And whē Jesus came to the place, hæ looked vp, and
him, and said vnto him, Zacheus make haste, and
e downe, for to day I must abide at thine house.
6 And hee made haste, and came downe, and re-
ed him joyfullie.
nd whē they saw it, they all murmured, saying, hæ
was gone to bee guest with a man that is a sinner.
And Zacheus stoode, and saide, vnto the Lord,
old, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore:
if I haue taken any thing from any man by false
ation, I restore him foure folde.

9 And Iesus said vnto him, This day is Salva-
on come to this house, forasmuch as hee also is
Sonne of Abraham.

10 For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and
saue that which was lost.

11 And as they heard these thinges, hee added
spake a parable, because hee was nigh vnto Hie-
lem, and because they thought that the kingdom
God should immediatelie appeare.

12 Hee said therefore, A certaine noble man
into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a k
dome, and to returne.

13 And hee called his ten seruants, & deliuered
ten pounds, and said vnto them, Occupie till I c

14 But his Citizens hated him, and sent a me
after him, saying, Wee will not haue this ma
reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, that when hee was re-
ned, hauing receiued the kingdome, then hee
maunded these seruantes to bee called vnto hi
whom hee had giuen the money, that hee might k
how much euerie man had gained by treading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy p
hath gained ten pounds.

17 Then hee said vnto him, Well, thou goo
uant: because thou hast beene faithfull in a verie
haue thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy p
hath gained fiue poundes.

19 And hee said likewise to him, Bee thou also
fiue cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, h
thy pound, which I haue I kept laid vp in a napk

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man, thou takest vp that thou layest not downe, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And hee saith vnto him, Out of thine owne mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked seruant: Thou knowest that I was an austere man, taking vp that I layde not downe, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required mine owne with vsurie.

24 And hee saide vnto them that stoode by, Take from him the pound and giue it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 And they saide vnto him, Lord, hee hath ten pounds.

26 For I say vnto you, That vnto euerie one which hath, shall bee giuen: and from him that hath not, even that hee hath shall bee taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before mee.

28 ¶ And when hee had thus spoken, hee went before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

29 And it came to passe, when hee was come nigh Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the Mount called the Mount of Oliues, hee sent two of his Disciples,

30 Saying, goe yee into the village ouer against you, in the which at your entring, yee shall finde a colt tyed, whereon yet neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man aske you, Why doe yee loose him? Thus shall yee saye vnto him, Because the Lord hath neede of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, a
found euen as hæ had said vnto them.

33 And as they were losing the colt, the owne
thereof said vnto them, Why loose yæ the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath neede of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they c
their garments vpon the colt, & they set Jesus there

36 And as hee went, they spread their cloathes
the way.

37 And when hæ was come nigh, euen nowe
the descent of the mount of Oliues, the whole m
titude of the Disciples beganne to rejoyce, and p
God with a loude voyce for all the mightie wor
that they had sæne,

38 Saying, Blessed bee the King that comm
in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and gl
in the Highest.

39 And some of ỹ Pharisees from among the
titude, said vnto him, Master rebuke thy Disciple

40 And hee answered, and said vnto them, I
you, that if these should holde their peace, the st
would immediatelie cry out.

41 ¶ And when hæ was come neare, hæ be
the citie, and weept ouer it,

42 Saying, If thou hadst knowne, euen thou
least in this thy day, the thinges which belong t
thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thæ, that t
enemies shall cast a trench about thæ, and comp
thæ round, and keepe thæ in on euerie side.

44 And shall lay thæ euen with the ground, and
children within thæ: & they shall not leaue in thee
stone vpon another, because thou knewest not the
of thy visitation. 45

45 And hee went into the Temple, and began to
ll out them that solde therein, and them that bought,
46 Saying vnto them, It is written, Mine house
the house of prayer: but yee haue made it a denne of
hieues.'
47 And hée taught daylie into the Temple. But
e chiefe Priestes and the Scribes, and the chiefe of
e people sought to destroy him.
48 And could not finde what they might doe; for
the people were verie attentiue to heare him.

## CHAP. XX.

Christ auoucheth his authoritie by a question of Iohns baptisme. 9. The parable of the vineyard. 19. Tribute to Cæsar.

AND it came to passe that on one of those dayes, as hee taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the chiefe Priestes and the Scribes me vpon him with the Elders,
2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs, by what thoritie doest thou these thinges? or who is hee that ue thee this authoritie?
3 And hee answered, and saide vnto them, I will o aske you one thing, and answere mee.
4 The Baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or men?
5 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If e should say, From heauen, hee will say, Why then lieued yee him not?
6 But and if wee say, Of men, all the people will ne vs: for they be perswaded ý Iohn was a prophet.
7 And they answered, that they could not tell ence it was.

8 And Iesus saide vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

9 Then began hee to speake to the people this parable: A certaine man planted a Vine-yarde, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a farre country for a long time,

10 And at the season hee sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the Vine-yarde: but the husband-men beate him, and sent him away emptie.

11 And againe hee sent another seruant, and they beate him also, and entreated him shamefullie, and sent him away emptie.

12 And againe hee sent the third, and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord, of the Vine-yarde, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued Sonne: it may bee they will reuerence him, when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselues, saying, this is the heire, come let vs kill him, that the inheritance may bee ours.

15 So they cast him out of the Vine-yarde, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the Vine-yarde doe vnto them?

16 Hee shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall giue the Vine-yarde to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And hee beheld them, and saide, What is then that is written, The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner?

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19

19 ¶ And the chiefe Priestes and the Scribes the
me houre sought to lay hands on him, and they fea-
d the people: for they perceiued that hee had spoken
is parable against them.
0 And they watched him, and sent forth spies which
ould faine themselues just men, that they might take
ld of his words, that so they might deliuer him vnto
e power and authoritie of the Gouernour.
21 And they asked him, saying, Master, wee know
at thou sayest and teachest rightlie, neither accep-
t thou the person of any, but teachest the way of
od truelie.
2 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Tribute vnto Cesar,
not?
23 But hee perceiued their craftinesse, and saide
to them, Why tempt yee mee?
24 Shew mee a pennie: whose image and super-
iption hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars.
25 And hee said vnto them, Render therefore vnto
sar, the thinges which bee Cesars, and vnto God,
e thinges which bee Gods.
26 And they could not take hold of his wordes be-
e the people, and they marueiled at his answere,
held their peace.
27 ¶ Then came to him certaine of the Saddu-
s, (which deny that there is any resurrection) and
y asked him,
28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If
y mans brother die, hauing a wife and hee die with-
children, that his brother should take his wife, and
se vp seede vnto his brother.
29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the
t tooke a wife and died, without children.

30 And

30 And ỹ second toke her to wife, & he died chil
31 And the third toke her, and in like manner
seuen also. And they left no children, and died.
32 Last of all the Woman died also.
33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wif
them is shee? for seuen had her to wife.
34 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, The
dren of this world marrie, and are giuen in marri
35 But they which shall bee accounted worth
obtaine that world, and the resurrection from the
neither marrie, nor are giuen in marriage.
36 Neither can they die any more, for they
quall vnto the Angels, and are the children of
beeing the children of the resurrection.
37 Now that the dead are raised, euen Moses sh
at the bush, when hee called the Lord, the God of
ham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob.
38 For hee is not a God of the dead, but of th
ing, for all liue vnto him.
39 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes answer
said, Master, thou hast well said.
40 And after that, they durst not aske him
question at all.
41 And hee saide vnto them, Howe say they
Christ is Dauids sonne?
42 And Dauid himselfe saith in the booke of P
mes, The Lord, saide vnto my Lord, Sit thou on
right hand.
43 Till I make thine enemies thy foote-stoole
44 Dauid therefore called him Lord, How
then his sonne?
45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people
said vnto his Disciples.
46 Beware of the Scribes, which desire to

long robes, and loue grætings in the markets, and
highest seates in the Synagogues, and the chiefe
nes at feastes.

47 Which deuoure Widowes houses, and for a
w make long prayers: the same shall receiue grea-
damnation.

## CHAP. XXI.

The poore Widow is commended. 5. The destru-
tion of the Temple and Citie is foretolde. 23.
The signe thereof.

1 And hee loked vp, and saw the rich men casting
their giftes into the treasurie.

2 And hee saw also a certaine poore widow, casting
thither two mites.

3 And hee saide, Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that
poore widow hath cast in more than they all.

4 For all these haue of their abundance, cast in
to the offerings of God, but shee of her penurie hath
in all the liuing that shee had.

5 ¶ And as some spake of the Temple, how it was
ned with goodlie stones and giftes, hee said,

6 As for these thinges which yee behold, the dayes
l come, in the which there shall not bee left one
e vpon another, that shall not be throwne downe.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when
l these things bee? and what signe will there bee,
n these thinges shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heed, ỹ ye be not deceiued: for ma-
shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, & the
e draweth neare: goe ye not therefore after them.

9 But when yee shall heare of wars, and commo-
ns, bee not terrified; for these thinges must first
come

come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

10 Then said hee vnto them, Nations shall ri
gainst Nations, and kingdomes against kingdo

11 And great earthquakes shall bee in diuers
ces, and famines, and pestilences: and fearefull s
and great signes shall there bee from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their h
on you and persecute you, deliuering you vp
Synagogues, and into prisons beeing brought b
Kings and Rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turne to you for a testimonie.

14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to
tate before what yée shall answere.

15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisd
which all your aduersaries shall not bee able to
say, nor resist.

16 And yée shall bee betrayed both by parent
brethren and kinse-folke, and friendes, and so
you shall they cause to bee put to death.

17 And yee shall bee hated of all men fo
Names sake.

18 But there shall not a haire of your head p

19 In your patience possesse your soules.

20 And when yee shall see Hierusalem comp
with armies, thē know ý the desolation therof is

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee
Mountaines, and let them which are in the midst
depart out, and let not them that are in the count
enter thereinto.

22 For these bee the dayes of vengeance, th
things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But woe vnto them that are with childe,
to them that giue sucke in those dayes, for ther

great distresse in the Land, and wrath vpon this
ple
4 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and
ll bee led away captiues into all nations, and Hie-
alem shall bee troden downe of the Gentiles, vntill
times of the Gentiles bee fulfilled.
5 ¶ And there shall bee signes in the Sunne, and
he Moone, and in the Starres, and vpon the earth
resse of Nations with perplexitie, the Sea and the
ues roaring,
6 Mens hearts failing them for feare, and for
king after those thinges which are comming on the
th, for the powers of heauen shall bee shaken.
7 And then shall they see the Sonne of Man com-
g in a cloud with power and great glorie.
8 And when these things begin to come to passe,
n loke vp, and lift vp your heades, for your Re-
ption draweth nigh.
9 And hee spake to them a parable, Beholde the
ge tree and all the trees,
0 When they now shoot forth, yee see and know
eur owne selues, that Summer is nigh at hand.
1 So likewise yee, when ye see these things come
asse, know that the kingdome of God is nigh at
d.
2 Verilie I say vnto you, This generation shall
passe away, till all bee fulfilled.
3 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my
des shall not passe away.
4 ¶ And take hæde to your selues, lest at anie
e your hearts bee ouer-charged with surfetting,
drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that
come vpon you vnawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them
dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore & pray alwayes that ye
bee accounted worthie to escape all these things
come to passe, and to stand before the Sonne of

37 And in the day time hee was teaching
Temple, and at night hee went out, and abode
Mount that is called the Mount of Olives.

38 And all the people came earelie in the mo
to him in the Temple, for to heare him.

## CHAP. XXII.

1. The Iewes conspire against Christ. 3. Satan
reth into Iudas. 7. The passeouer prepared.
The Supper instituted. 47. Iudas betrayeth h

NOwe the feast of vnleauened bread drew
which is called the passeouer.

2 And the chiefe Priestes and Scribes sought
they might kill him: for they feared the people.

3 ¶ Then entred Satan into Iudas, surna
Iscariot, beeing of the number of the twelue.

4 And hee went his way, and commoned wit
chiefe Priestes, and captaines how hee might be
him vnto them.

5 And they were glad, and couenanted to give
money.

6 And hee promised, and sought opportunit
betray him vnto them in the absence of the multit

7 ¶ Then came the day of vnleauened bread,
the Passeouer must bee killed.

8 And hee sent Peter and John, saying, Go
prepare vs the Passeouer, that wee may eate.

9 And they saide vnto him, Where wilt thou
wee prepare?

10 And hée said vnto them, Behold, when yee are
ered into the cities, there shall a man mæte you bea-
g a pitcher of water, follow him into the house wher
entreth in.
11 And yee shall say vnto the goodman of the house,
e Master saith vnto thee, Where is the guest
mber, where I shall eate the Passeouer with my
ciples?
12 And hée shall shew you a large vpper roome,
nished, there make readie.
13 And they went, and found as hée had said vnto
m, and they made readie the Passeouer.
14 And when the houre was come, hee sate downe,
the twelue Apostles with him.
15 And hee saide vnto them, With desire I haue
ed to eat this Passeouer with you before I suffer.
16 For I say vnto you, I will not eat any more ther-
ntill it bee fulfilled in the kingdome of God.
17 And hée tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and
Take this, and deuide it among your selues.
18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit
e vine vntill the kingdome of God shall come.
19 ¶ And hee tooke bread, and gaue thankes, and
e it, and gaue vnto them, saying, This is my Bo-
which is giuen for you, this doe in remembrance
e.
20 Likewise also the Cup after Supper, saying,
s Cup is the New Testament in my Blood, which
d for you.
21 ¶ But behold the hand of him that betrayeth
is with mee on the table.
22 And truelie the Sonne of man goeth as it was
mined, but woe vnto that man by whom hée is be-

23 And

23 And they began to enquire among themse
which of them it was that should doe this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among t
which of them should bee accounted the greatest.

25 And hee saide vnto them, The kinges o
Gentiles exercise lordship ouer them, and they th
ercise authoritie vpon them, are called benefact

26 But yee shall not bee so: but hee that is gr
among you, let him bee as the younger, and hee t
chiefe, as hee that doeth serue.

27 For whither is greater, hee that sitteth at
or hee that serueth? is not hee that sitteth at me
But I am among you as hee that serueth.

28 Yee are they which haue continued with
my temptations.

29 And I appoint vnto you a kingdome, a
Father hath appointed vnto mee.

30 That yee may eate and drinke at my ta
my Kingdome, and sit on thrones judging the t
Tribes of Israel.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, b
Satan hath desired to haue you, that hee may s
as wheate.

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith
not, and when thou art conuerted, strengthe
brethren:

33 And hee saide vnto him, Lord, I am re
goe with thee into prison, and to death.

34 And hee said, I tell thee Peter, the cock
not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrise
that thou knowest mee.

35 And hee saide vnto them, When I sen
without purse, and scrip, and shoes lacked ye

ing? and they said, Nothing.
36 Then said hee vnto them, But now he that hath
urse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and hee
hath no sword, let him sell his garment & buy one.
37 For I say vnto you, that this that is written,
t yet bee accomplished in mee. And hee was rec-
ed among the transgressors: For the thinges con-
ning mee haue an end.
38 And they saide, Lorde, beholde, heere are two
ordes. And hee said vnto them, It is enough.
39 ¶ And he came out, and went as he was wont,
e Mount of Olives, and his Disciples also fol-
ed him.
40 And when hee was at the place, hee saide vnto
, Pray that yee enter not into temptation.
41 And hee was withdrawne from them about a
es cast, and kneeled, and prayed.
42 Saying, Father, if thou bee willing, remoue
cup from mee: neuertheless not my will, but thine
one.
43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from
en, strengthening him.
44 And beeing in an agonie, hee prayed more ear-
ie, and his sweate was as it were great drops of
, falling downe to the ground.
45 And when hee rose vp from prayer, & was come
s Disciples, hee found them sleeping for sorrow.
46 And said vnto them, Why sleepe yee? Rise, and
r, lest yee enter into temptation.
47 ¶ And while he yet spake, beholde, a multitude,
hee that was called Judas, one of the twelue,
t before them, and drew neare vnto Jesus, to kisse

48 But Jesus said vnto him, Judas betrayest thou the Sonne of Man with a kisse.

49 When they which were about him, sawe what would follow, they said vnto him, Lord shall we smite with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the seruant of the high Priest, and cut off his right eare.

51 And Jesus answered, and saide, Suffer ye thus farre. And hee touched his eare and healed him.

52 Then Jesus saide vnto the chiefe Priests, and Captaines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him. Bee ye come out as against a theefe with swords and staues.

53 When I was daylie with you in the Temple ye stretched forth no hands against mee: but this is your houre, and the power of darknesse.

54 ¶ Then tooke they him, and ledde him, and brought him into the high Priests house: and Peter followed him a farre off.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the Hall, and were set downe together, Peter sate downe among them.

56 But a certaine Maide beheld him as he sate by the fire, and earnestlie loked vpon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And hee denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another sawe him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidentlie affirmed, saying, Of a trueth, this fellow also was with him, for hee is a Galilean.

60 And Peter saide, Man, I knew not what thou
yest, and immediatelie, while hee yet spake, the
orke crew.
61 And the Lord turned and looked vpon Peter, and
eter remembred the wordes of the Lorde, howe hee
d said vnto him, Before the Cocke crow, thou shalt
nie mee thrise.
62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterlie.
63 ¶ And the men that helde Iesus, mocked him,
d smote him.
64 And when they had blind-folded him, they stroke
n on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who
it that smote thee?
65 And manie other thinges blasphemoustie spake
y against him.
66 ¶ And assone as it was day, the Elders of
people, and the chiefe Priestes, and the Scribes
e together, and led him into their counsell, saying,
67 Art thou the Christ? Tell vs. And hee said vnto
n, If I tell you, you will not believe.
68 And if I also aske you, you will not answere
e, nor let mee goe.
69 Hereafter shall the Son of Man sit on the right
of the power of God.
70 Then said they all. Art thou then the Sonne of
? And hee said vnto them, Ye say that I am?
71 And they said, What need we any further witnes
wee our selues haue heard of his owne mouth.

## CHAP. XXIII.

Iesus is accused before Pilate. 7. Sent to Herode.
11. Mocked, and sent backe againe to Pilate. 13.
Deliuered to bee crucified. 46. His death. 50. His
buriall.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and him vnto Pilate.

2 And they beganne to accuse him, saying, found this fellow peruerting the Nation, and ding to giue tribute to cesar, saying, That hee hi is Christ a King.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying, art thou th of the Iewes? And hee answered him, and said, sayest it.

4 Then saide Pilate to the chiefe Priestes, th people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, H reth vp the people, teaching throughout all Ju ginning from Galilee, to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, hee ask whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoone as hee knew that hee belonge Herodes iurisdiction, hee sent him to Herode himselfe also was at Hierusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herode saw Iesus hee was er glad, for hee was desirous to see him of a long because hee had heard manie thinges of him, hoped to haue seene some miracle done by him.

9 Then hee questioned with him in manie w but hee answered him nothing.

10 And the chiefe Priestes and Scribes stoo vehementlie accused him.

11 And Herode with his men of warre, set nought, and mocked him, & arayed him in a gl robe, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Hero made friendes together; for before, they were mine betweene themselues.

13 ¶ And Pilate, when hée had called together the
lefe Priestes, and the rulers, and the people,
14 Saide vnto them, Yée haue brought this man
to mée, as one that peruerteth the people, and be-
hold I hauing examined him before you, haue found
fault in this man, touching those thinges whereof
accuse him,
15 No, nor yet Herode: for I sent you to him, and
nothing worthie of death is done vnto him.
16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.
17 For of necessitie hée must release one vnto them
the feast.
18 And they cryed out all at once, saying, Away
with this man, and release vnto vs Barabbas,
19 Who for a certaine sedition made in the citie,
for murder was cast in prison.
20 Pilate therefore willing to release Iesus, spak
them.
21 But they cryed, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie
him.
22 And he said vnto them the third time, Why? what
hath hée done? I haue found no cause of death in
him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him goe.
23 And they were instant with loude voyces, re-
quiring that hée might bée crucified: and the voyces
of them, and of the chiefe Priestes preuailed.
24 And Pilate gaue sentence, that it should bée as
they required.
25 And hee released vnto them, him that for sedi-
tion and murder was cast into prison, whom they had
required, but hee deliuered Iesus to their will.
26 And as they led him away, they laide holde vp-
on one Simon, a Cyrenian, comming out of the
countrie

countrey, and on him they laid the Crosse, that he m
beare it after Iesus.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great compan
people, and of women, which also bewailed and la
ted him.

28 But Iesus turning vnto them, said Daugh
of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for
selues, and for your Children.

29 For beholde the dayes are comming, in
which they shall say, Blessed are the barren,
wombes that neuer bare, and the paps which n
gaue sucke.

30 Then shall they beginne to say to the M
taines, Fall on vs, and to the hilles, Couer vs.

31 For if they doe these thinges in a greene
what shall bee done in the drie?

32 And there were also two other malefactors l
with him, to bee put to death.

33 And when they were come to the place wh
called Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the m
factors one on the right hand, and the other on the le

34 ¶ Then said Iesus, Father, forgiue them,
they know not what they doe. And they parted hi
ment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding, and the rule
so with them deriding him, saying, He saued othe
him saue himselfe, if hee bee Christ the chosen of G

36 And the Souldiers also mocked him, com
to him, and offering him vineger.

37 And saying, If thou bee the King of the Ie
saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription also was written
him in letters of Greeke, and Latine, and Hebr

HIS IS THE KING OF THE IEVVES.

39 ¶ And one of the Male-factors, which were
nged, railed on him, saying, If thou bee Christ, saue
y selfe and vs.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying,
eest not thou feare God, seeing thou art in the same
demnation.

41 And we indéed justly, for we receiue the due reward
ur déeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And hée said vnto Iesus, Lord, remember mée
en thou commest into thy Kingdome.

43 And Iesus said vnto him, Verilie I say vnto thée,
ay shalt thou bée with mée in Paradise.

44 And it was about the sixt houre, and there was a
kenesse ouer all the earth, vntill the ninth houre.

45 And the Sunne was darkned, and the vaile of
Temple was rent in the midst.

46 ¶ And when Iesus had cryed with a loud voyce,
said, Father, into thine hands I commend my Spi-
: and hauing said thus: hée gaue vp the ghost.

47 Nowe when the Centurion sawe what was done,
glorified God, saying, Certainlie this was a righ-
s man.

48 And all the people that came together to that
t, beholding the thinges which were done, smote
e breastes, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that
wed him from Galilee, stood a farre off, beholding
e thinges.

50 ¶ And beholde, there was a man named Ioseph,
unseller, and hee was a good man and a just.

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and
of them) hée was of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes

(who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of G

52 This man went vnto Pilate, and begge
Bodie of Iesus.

53 And hee tooke it downe, and wrapped it i
nen, and laid it in a Sepulchre that was hew
stone, wherein neuer man before was laid.

54 And that day was the Preparation, an
Sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him
Galilee, followed after, and beheld the Sepul
and how his Bodie was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices
oyntmentes, and rested the Sabbath day, accor
the commandement.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

1. Christes resurrection declared to two wome
They report it to others, 31. and 36. Christ
selfe appeareth. 51. Hee ascendeth.

NOw vpon the first day of the weeke, veris
in the morning, they came vnto the Sepul
bringing the spices which they had prepared, an
taine others with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away fr
Sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the Bo
the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much per
thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in s
garments.

5 And as they were affraide, and bowed
their faces to the earth, they said vnto them,
seeke yee the liuing among the dead?

6 Hee is not heere, but is risen: Remember howe
spake vnto you, when hee was yet in Galilee.
7 Saying, The Sonne of man must bee deliuered
the hands of sinfull men: and bee crucified, and
third day rise againe.
8 And they remembred his words.
9 And returned from the Sepulchre, and told all
se thinges vnto the eleuen, and to all the rest.
10 It was Marie Magdalene, and Ioana, and Ma-
the mother of James & other women that were with
m, which tolde these things vnto the Apostles.
11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales,
they belieued them not.
12 Then arose Peter, and ran vnto the Sepulchre,
stowping downe, hee behelde the linnen cloathes
e by themselues, and departed wondring in him-
e at that which was come to passe.
13 ¶ And behold two of them went that same day
a village called Emmaus, which was from Hie-
alem about three-score furlongs.
14 And they talked together of all these things
ich had happened.
15 And it came to passe, that while they commu-
together, and reasoned, Iesus himselfe drew neare,
went with them.
16 But their eyes were holden, that they could not
w him.
17 And said vnto them, What manner of commu-
ations are these that yee haue one to another as yee
lke, and are sadde?
18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleo-
s, answering, said vnto him, Art thou only a stran-
in Hierusalem, and hast not knowne the thinges

which

which are come to passe there in these dayes?

19 And hee saide vnto them what thinges? they saide vnto him, Concerning Iesus of Naz which was a Prophet, mightie in deede and wo fore God, and all the people.

20 And how the chiefe Priestes and our Rule liuered him to bee condemned to death, and haue fied him.

21 But wee trusted that it had beene hee, which haue redeemed Israel: and beside all this to day third day since these thinges were done.

22 Yea and certaine women also of our compani vs astonished, which were earelie at the Sepulch

23 And when they found not his Bodie, they saying, That they had also seene a vision of An which said, that hee was aliue.

24 And certaine of them which were with vs, to the Sepulchre, and found it euen so as the w had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then hee saide vnto them, O fooles and sl heart to beleeue all that the Prophetes haue spoke

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these th and to enter in his glorie?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the Proph hee expounded vnto them in all the Scriptures thinges concerning himselfe.

28 And they drewe nigh vnto the village w they went, and hee made as though hee would ha further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide vs, for it is towardes euening, and the daye is spent. And hee went in to tarrie with them.

30 And it came to passe, as hee sate at meate

, hæ toke Bread, and blessed it, and brake and to them,

And their eyes were opened, and they knew him: æ vanished out of their sight.

And they said, one to another, Did not our heart within vs, while hee talked with vs by the way, hile hee opened to vs the Scriptures?

And they rose vp the same houre, and returned erusalem, and found the eleuen gathered together, hem that were with them.

Saying, The Lord is risen indeede, and hath ap- d to Simon.

And they tolde what things were done in the way, ow he was knowne of them in breaking of Bread.

¶ And as they thus spake, Iesus himselfe, stood midst of them, and saith vnto them, Peace bee you.

But they were terrified, and affrighted, and sup- that they had seene a spirit.

And hæ said vnto them, Why are yee troubled? hy doe thoughts arise in your hearts?

Beholde mine handes and my feete, that it is I lfe: handle mee and see, for a spirit hath not flesh ones, as yee see mee haue.

And when hee had thus spoken, hæ shewed them ndes and his feete.

And while they yet believed not for ioye, and ered, hee saide vnto them, Haue yee heere anie te?

And they gaue him a piece of broyled fish, and ney combe.

And hæ toke it, and did eate before them.

And hee saide vnto them, These are the wordes

which

which I spake vnto you, while I was yet with
that all thinges must bée fulfilled, which were
ten in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, a
the Psalmes concerning mée.

45 Then opened hee their vnderstanding,
they might vnderstand the Scriptures:

46 And said vnto them, Thus it is writ:en,
thus it behoueth Christ to suffer, and to rise fro
dead the third day.

47 And that repentance and remission of
should bée preached in his Name, among all Na
beginning at Hierusalem.

48 And yée are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ And beholde, I send the promise of my
ther vpon you: but tarrie yee in the citie of Hi
lem, vntill yée bée indued with power from on hi

50 ¶ And hée ledde them out as farre as to B
nie, and hee lift vp his hands and blessed them.

51 And it came to passe, while hee blessed
hée was parted from them, and carried vp into
uen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned t
rusalem with great ioye.

53 And were continuallie in the Temple, p
and blessing God, Amen.

# THE GOSPEL OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOVR *IESVS CHRIST.*

According to Saint IOHN.

## CHAP. I.

Christs diuinitie, humanitie, and office. 15. Iohns testimonie of him. 39. The calling of Andrew, Peter, and others.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Worde was with GOD, and the Word was GOD.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

3 All thinges were made by him, and without him was not anie thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, & the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shined in darknesse, and the darknesse comprehended it not.

6 ¶ There was a man sent from GOD, whose name was Iohn.

7 The same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of the light, that all men through him might beleeue.

8 Hee was not that light, but vvas sent to beare witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth euerie man that commeth into the world.

10 Hee was in the world, and the worlde was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 Hee came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as manie as receiued him, to them gaue

hæ powꝛ to become the ſonnes of God, euen to
that beliue on his Name:
13 Which were boꝛne, not of blood, noꝛ of t
of the fleſh, noꝛ of the will of man, but of God.
14 And the Woꝛd was made fleſh, and dwelt
vs, (and wæ beheld his gloꝛie, the gloꝛie as of th
begotten of the Father) full of grace and trueth.
15 ¶ Iohn bare witneſſe of him, & cryed, ſayin
was hæ of whom I ſpake, Hee that commeth aft
is pꝛeferred beſoꝛe mee, foꝛ hæ was beſoꝛe mee.
16 And of his fulneſſe haue all wee recieue
grace foꝛ grace.
17 Foꝛ the Law was giuen by Moſes, but
and trueth came by Ieſus Chꝛiſt.
18 No man hath ſeene God at anie time: the
begotten Sonne, which is in the boſome of the f
hæ hath declared him.
19 ¶ And this is the recoꝛd of Iohn, wh
Iewes ſent Pꝛieſtes and Leuites from Hieruſal
aſke him, Who art thou?
20 And hæ confeſſed, and denied not: but con
I am not the Chꝛiſt.
21 And they aſked him, What then? Art t
lias? And hæ ſaith. I am not. Art thou that P
And hee anſwered, No.
22 Then ſaide they vnto him, Who art thou
wee may giue an anſwere to them that ſent vs.
ſayeſt thou of thy ſelfe?
23 Hæ ſaid, I am the voyce of one crying
Wilderneſſe, Make ſtraight the way of the Lo
ſaid the Pꝛophet Eſaias.
24 And they which were ſent, were of the
riſees.

25 And they asked him and saide, vnto him, Why
tizest thou then? If thou bee not that Christe, nor
as, neither that Prophet?
26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with
er, but there standeth one among you, whom yee
w not.
27 Hee it is who comming after mee, is preferred
e mee, whose shoes latchet I am not worthie to
se.
28 These thinges were done in Bethabara beyond
dane, where Iohn was baptizing.
29 ¶ The nixt day, Iohn seeth Iesus comming
him, and saith, Beholde the Lambe of God which
th away the sinnes of the world.
30 This is hee of whome I saide, After mee com-
h a man which is preferred before mee, for hee was
e mee.
31 And I knew him not: but that hee should bee
manifest to Israel, therefore am I come bapti-
with water.
32 And Iohn bare record, saying, I saw the Spi-
escending from heauen like a Doue, and it abode
him.
33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to bap-
with water, the same saide vnto mee Upon whom
shalt see the Spirit descēding & remaining on him,
me is hee which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.
34 And I saw, & bare record, ỹ this is ỹ Son of God.
35 ¶ Againe, the next day after, Iohn stoode, and
of his Disciples.
36 And loking vpon Iesus as hee walked, hee saith,
old the Lambe of God.
37 And the two Disciples heard him speake, and

they

they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them follo
him, and saith vnto them. What seeke ye? The
vnto him, Rabbi (which is to say being interp
Master) where dwellest thou?

39 Hee saith vnto them, Come and see. They
and saw where hee dwelt, and abode with him
day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 One of the two which heard John speake
followed him, was Andrew Simon Peters brot

41 Hee first findeth his owne brother Simon
saith vnto him, Wee haue found the Messias,
is, being interpreted, thee Christ.

42 And hee brought him to Jesus. And wh
sus beheld him, hee said, Thou art Simon the s
Jona, thou shalt bee called Cephas, which is by
pretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Jesus would go
into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith vnt
Follow mee.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie
drew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathaneel, and saith vnt
Wee haue found him of whom Moses in the La
the Prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, th
of Joseph.

46 And Nathaneel said vnto him, Can the
good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip sai
him, Come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathaneel comming to hi
saith of him, Behold, an Israelite indeed, in
is no guile.

48 Nathaneel saith vnto him, Where k

ou mee? Jesus answered, and saith vnto him, Be-
e that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the
ge tree, I saw thee.
9 Nathaneel answered, and said vnto him, Rabbi,
ou art the Sonne of God, thou art the King of Israel.
10 Jesus answered, and said vnto him, Because I
d vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the figge tree, believest
u? thou shalt see greater thinges than these.
11 And hee saith vnto him, Verilie, verilie, I say
to you, hereafter yee shall see the heauen open, and
Angels of God ascending, and discending vpon
Sonne of Man.

## CHAP. II.

Christ turneth water into wine, 12. departeth to Capernaum and Ierusalem, 14. and purgeth the Temple.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there.
2 And both Jesus was called, and his Disciples the marriage.
3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Je- saith vnto him, They haue no wine.
4 And Jesus saith vnto her, Woman, What haue doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.
5 His mother saith vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer saith vnto you, doe it.
6 And there were set there fiue water pots of stone, er the manner of the purifying of the Iewes, con- ing two or three firkins a piece.
7 Jesus saith vnto them, Fill the water pottes with er. And they filled them vp to the brimme.
8 And hee saith vnto them, Draw out nowe, and

beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. And they ba
9 When the Ruler of the feast had tasted the w
that was made wine, & knew not whence it was,
the seruantes which drew the water knew) the go
nour of the feast called the Bridegroome.
10 And saith vnto him, Euerie man at the b
ning doe sette forth good wine, and where men
well drunken, then that which is worse: but tho
kept the good wine vntill now.
11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in
of Galilee, and manifested forth his glorie, an
Disciples believed on him.
12 ¶ After this, hee went downe to Caperna
hee and his mother, and his brethren, and his Disc
and they continued there not manie dayes.
13 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand
Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.
14 And found in the Temple those that sold oxen
sheepe, and doues, and the changers of money sitt
15 And when hee had made a scourge of small
hee drove them all out of the Temple, and the
and the oxen, and powred out the changers mone
ouerthrew the Tables,
16 And saide vnto them that solde doues,
these thinges hence, make not my Fathers ho
house of merchandise.
17 And his Disciples remembred that it was
ten. The zeale of thine house hath eaten me
18 ¶ Then answered the Iewes, and saide
him. What signe shewest thou vnto vs, seeing
thou doest these things.
19 Iesus answered, and saide vnto them:
this Temple, and in three dayes I will raise it
20

20 Then said the Iewes, Fourtie and sixe yeeres
s this Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it
in three dayes.
21 But hee spake of the Temple of his Bodie.
22 When therefore hee was risen from the dead,
Disciples remembred that hee said this vnto them:
they beleeued the Scriptures, and the word which
us had said.
23 ¶ Nowe when hee was in Hierusalem at the
Feaster, in the feaste daye, manie beleeued in his
me, when they saw the miracles which hee did.
24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them,
ause hee knew all men.
25 And needed not that any should testifie of man:
hee knew what was in man.

## CHAP. III.

Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of rege-
eration. 14. Of faith in Christ. 16. Gods great
oue to the world. 23. Iohns Baptisme, witnesse and
octrine concerning Christ.

1 There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nico-
demus a Ruler of the Iewes.
2 The same came vnto Iesus by night, and saide
o him, Rabbi, wee know that thou art a Teacher
e from God: for no man can doe the miracles that
u doest, except God bee with him.
3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verilie, verie
I say vnto thee, Except a man bee borne againe,
cannot see the Kingdome of God.
4 Nicodemus saith vnto him, How can a man bee
e when hee is olde? can hee enter the second time
his mothers wombe, and bee borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verilie, verilie, I say vnt
except a man bee borne of water and of the spir
cannot enter into the Kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: a
which is borne of the spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I said vnto thee, Ye m
borne againe.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and
heerest the sound thereof, but canst not tell wh
commeth, and whither it goeth: So is euerie on
is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and saide vnto him,
can these things bee.

10 Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, A
a Master of Israel, and knowest not these thing

11 Verilie, verilie, I say vnto thee, We
that wee doe know, and testifie that wee haue
and yee receiue not our witnesse.

12 If I haue told you earthlie thinges, and
leeue not: how shall yee beleeue if I tell you of h
lie things?

13 And no man hath ascended vp to heauen,
that came downe from heauen, euen the Sonne o
which is in heauen.

14 ¶ And as Moses lifted vp the Serpent in
dernes, euen so must the Sonne of Man bee lift

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should n
rish, but haue eternall life.

16 ¶ For God so loued the world, that hee ga
onelie begotten Sonne: that whosoeuer beleeu
him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life.

17 For God sent not his Sonne into the wo
condemne the world: but that the world throug
might bee saued.

18 ¶

18 ¶ Hee that believeth on him, is not condemned: but hee that believeth not, is condemned alreadie, because hee hath not beleeued in the Name of the onelie begotten Sonne of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, that Light is come into the worlde, and men loued darkneſſe rather than light, becauſe their deedes were euill.

20 For euerie one that doeth euill hateth the light, neither commeth to the light, leſt his deedes ſhould bee reproued.

21 But hee that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes may bee made manifeſt, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After theſe thinges came Jeſus, and his diſciples, into the land of Judea, and there hee tarried with them, and baptized.

23 ¶ And John alſo was baptizing in Aenon, nere to Salim, becauſe there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet caſt into priſon.

25 ¶ Then there aroſe a queſtion betweene ſome of Johns Diſciples and the Jewes, about purifying.

26 And they came vnto John, and ſaide vnto him, Rabbie, hee that was with thee beyond Jordane, to whom thou bearest witneſſe, beholde the ſame baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 John anſwered, and ſaid, A man can receiue nothing, except it bee giuen him from heauen.

28 Yee your ſelues beare mee witneſſe, that I ſaid, I am not the Chriſt, but that I am ſent before him.

29 Hee that hath the Bride, is the Bridegroome: but the friend of the Bridegroome, which ſtandeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatlie becauſe of the Bride-

gromues voyce; This my voyce therefore is fulfil
30 Hee must encrease but I must decrease.
31 Hee that commeth from aboue, is aboue all: that is of the earth, is earthlie, and speaketh of earth: hee that commeth from heauen, is aboue all.
32 And what hee hath seene and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiueth his testimonie.
33 Hee that hath receiued his testimonie, hath set to his Seale, that God is true.
34 For hee whome God hath sent, speaketh the wordes of God: For God giueth not the Spirit by measure vnto him.
35 The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath given all thinges into his hands.
36 Hee that beleeueth on the Sonne, hath euerlasting life: and he that beleeueth not the Sonne shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Christ talketh with the woman of Samaria, and reuealeth himselfe vnto her. 27. His Disciples reuel. 31 Christs zeale to Gods glorie.

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Iesus made and baptized more Disciples than Iohn.
2 (Though Iesus himselfe baptized not, but his Disciples.)
3 Hee left Iudea, and departed againe into Galilee.
4 And hee must needes goe through Samaria.
5 Then commeth hee to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neare to the parcell of ground that Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph.
6 Now Iacobs Well was there, Iesus therefore

ing wearied with the Journey, sate thus on the
ell: and it was about the sixt houre.
7 There commeth a woman of Samaria to draw
ter: Jesus saith vnto her, Giue mee to drinke.
8 For his Disciples were gone away vnto the citie
buy meate.
9 Then saith the woman of Samaria vnto him,
w is it, that thou beeing a Jewe, askest drinke of
e, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Jewes
e no dealing with the Samaritanes.
10 Jesus answered, and said vnto her. If thou kne-
st the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee,
ue mee to drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him,
he would giuen thee liuing water.
11 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, thou hast no-
ng to draw with, & the Well is deepe: from whence
n hast thou that liuing water?
12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which
ue vs the Well, and dranke thereof himselfe, and
children, and his cattell?
13 Jesus answered, and saide vnto her, Whoso-
drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe:
14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that I shal
ue him, shall neuer thirst: but the water that I shall
ue him, shall bee in him a Well of water, springin
into euerlasting life.
15 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, giue mee this
ter, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.
16 Jesus saith vnto her, Goe, call thine husband,
come hither.
17 The woman answered, and saide, I haue none
band, Jesus said vnto her, Thou hast well saide,
haue none husband:

18 For thou hast had fiue husbandes, and whom thou now hast, is not thine husband: In saydest thou truelie.

19 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, I perc that thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this Mountaine yee say that in Hierusalem is the place where ought to worship.

21 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, beliue the houre commeth when ye shall neither in this taine, nor yet at Hierusalem worshippe the Fathe

22 Yee worshippe yee know not what: wee k what wee worship: for saluation is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, whe true worshippers shall worship the Father in s in trueth: for the Father seeketh such to worshi

24 God is a Spirit, and they that worshippe must worship him in spirit, and in trueth.

25 The woman saith vnto him, I know that Sias commeth, which is called Christ: when he is hee will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus saith vnto her, I that spake vnto am hee.

27 ¶ And vpon this came his Disciples, & mar led that hee talked with the woman: yet no man What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with he

28 The woman then left her water-pot, and her way into the citie, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man which told mee all th that euer I did: Is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the Citie, and cam to him.

31 ¶ In the meane while his Disciples p

, saying, Master, eate.
2 But hæ saide vnto them, I haue meate to eate
t yee know not of.
3 Therefore saide his Disciples one to another,
th any man brought him ought to eate?
4 Iesus saith vnto them, My meate is, to doe the
l of him that sent mæ, and to finish his worke.
5 Say not yee, There are yet foure moneths: and
n commeth Harueſt? Behold, I say vnto you: Lift
your eyes, and looke on the fieldes: for they are
te alreadie to Harueſt.
6 And hæ that reapeth, receiueth wages and ga-
reth fruite vnto life eternall: that both hee that
eth, and hee that reapeth, may reioyce together.
7 And hærein is that saying true, One soweth,
another reapeth.
8 I sent you to reape that, wherein yé bestowed
labour: other men laboured, and yee are entred in-
heir labours.
9 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that ci-
believed on him, for the saying of the woman,
ich testified, Hæ tolde mæ all that euer I did.
10 So when the Samaritanes were come vnto
, they besought him, that hee would tarrie with
m; and hee abode there two dayes.
11 And manie moe believed: because of his owne
rd.
12 And said vnto the woman, Now wee believe,
because of thy saying, for wee haue heard him our
nes, and know that this is indeed the Christe the
iour of the world.
13 ¶ Now after two dayes, hee departed thence,
went into Galilee:

14 For

44 For Iesus himselfe testified, that a Pr
hath none honour in his owne countrie.

45 Then when hæ was come into Galilee, the
lileans receiued him, hauing sæne all the things
hæ did at Hierusalem at the Feast: for they also
vnto the Feast.

46 So Iesus came againe into Cana of Ga
where hæ made the water wine. And there was
taine noble man whose son was sicke at Caperna

47 When hæ heard that Iesus was come o
Iudea into Galilee, hæ went vnto him, and besc
him that hæ would come downe, and heale his s
for hæ was at the point of death.

48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except yæ sæ
and wonders, yæ will not belieue.

49 The noble man saith vnto him, Sir come
ere my Childe die.

50 Iesus saith vnto him, Goe thy way, thy
liueth. And the man belieued the word that Iesu
spoken vnto him, and hee went his way.

51 And as hee was now going downe, his ser
met him, and tolde him, saying, Thy sonne liueth

52 Then enquired hæ of them the houre wh
began to amend: And they said vnto him, Yester
at the seuenth houre the Feuer left him.

53 So the Father knew that it was at the same
in the which Iesus said vnto him, Thy sonne li
and himselfe belieued, and his whole house.

54 This is againe the second miracle that
did, when hæ was come out of Iudea into Galilee

## CHAP. V.

1. Iesus on the Sabbath day cureth him that
dis

ased eight and thirtie yeeres. 10. The Iewes
auill and persecute him for it. 17. He a sweareth
or himselfe.

After this there was a Feast of the Iewes, and
Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.
Now there is at Hierusalem by the sheepe mar-
, a poole which is called in Hebrew tongue Bethel-
hauing fiue porches.
In these lay a great multitude of impotent
e, of blinde, hault, withered, waiting for the
ring of the water.
For an Angel went downe at a certaine season in-
he poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then
after the troubling of the water stepped in, was
e whole of whatsoeuer disease hee had.
And a certaine man was there, which had an in-
mitie thirtie and eight yeeres.
When Iesus sawe him lye, and knewe that hee
beene now a long time in that case, hee saith vnto
, Wilt thou bee made whole?
The impotent man answered him, Sir, I haue
man, when the water is troubled, to put mee into
poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth
one before mee.
Iesus saith vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed and
lke.
And immediatelie the man was made whole, and
ke vp his bedde and walked: And on the same day
s the Sabbath.
¶ The Iewes therefore saide vnto him that
s cured, It is the Sabbath day, it is not lawfull
thee to carrie thy bedde.

He

11 Hæ answered them, Hæ that made mæ
the same said vnto mæ, Take vp thy bed, and w
12 Then asked they him, What man is that
said vnto thæ, Take vp thy bed, and walke?
13 And hæ that was healed, wist not who it
for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away, a mul
bæing in that place.
14 Afterward Iesus findeth him in the Temple
said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin
more, lest a worse thing come vnto thæ.
15 The man departed, and tolde the Iewes
it was Iesus which had made him whole.
16 And therefore did the Iewes persecute
and sought to slay him, because hæ had done
things on the Sabbath day.
17 ¶ But Iesus answered them, My F
worketh hitherto and I worke.
18 Therefore the Iewes sought the more t
him, not onely because hæ had broken the Sab
but saide also, that God was his Father, m
himselfe equall with God.
19 Then answered Iesus, and saide vnto t
Verilie, verilie, I say vnto you, the Sonne can d
thing of himselfe, but what hæ sæth the Father d
what thinges soeuer hee doeth, these also doeth th
likewise.
20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sh
him all things that himselfe doeth: & hæ will shew
greater workes than these, that yæ may marueil
21 For as the Father raiseth vp ỹ dead, & quick
them: euen so the Sonne quickeneth whom hæ w
22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath
mitted all iudgement vnto the Sonne.

23 That all men should honour the Sonne, euen
hey honour the Father. Hée that honoureth not the
n, honoureth not the Father which hath sent h.m.
24 Uerilie, verilie I say vnto you, Hée that heareth
word, and believeth on him that sent mee, hath
rlasting life, and shall not come into condemna-
n: but is passed from death vnto life.
25 Uerilie, verilie I say vnto you, The houre is
ming, and now is, when the dead shall heare the
ce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare, shall
e.
26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe: so hath
giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe:
27 And hath giuen him authoritie, to execute judge-
nt also. because hee is the Sonne of Man.
28 Marueile not at this, for the houre is com-
ng, in the which all that are in the graues shall
are his voyce.
29 And shall come forth they that haue done good,
o the resurrection of life, and they that haue done
ll, vnto the resurrection of damnation.
30 I can of mine owne selfe doe nothing: as I
re, I judge, and my judgement is just, because I
e not mine owne will, but the will of the Father,
ich hath sent mee.
31 If I beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse is
t true.
32 ¶ There is another that beareth witnesse of me,
d I know that the witnesse which hée witnesseth of
e is true.
33 Ye sent vnto John, & he bare witnes vnto ỹ trueth
34 But I receiue not testimonie from man: but these
inges I say, that yée might bee saued.

35 Hée

35 Hee was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I haue greater witnesse than that of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finish, the same workes that I doe, beareth witnesse of mee, that the Father hath sent mee.

37 And the Father himselfe which hath sent me, hath borne witnesse of mee. Yee haue neither heard his voyce at anie time, nor seene his shape.

38 And yee haue not his worde abiding in you: for whom hee hath sent, him yee beleeue not.

39 ¶ Search the Scriptures, for in them ye thinke ye haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of mee.

40 And yee will not come to mee, that yee might haue life.

41 I receiue not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that yee haue not the loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue mee not: if another shall come in his owne name, him yee will receiue?

44 How can yee beleeue, which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth from God onelie?

45 Doe not thinke, that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, euen Moses, in whom yee trust.

46 For had yee beleeued Moses, yee would haue beleeued mee: for hee wrote of mee.

47 But yee beleeue not his writings, how shall yee beleeue my words?

CHA

## CHAP. VI.

hrist feedeth fiue thousand with fiue loaues, and
o fishes. 27. Hee reproueth the fleshlie hearers
his vvord. 32. declareth himselfe to bee the
ead of life.

Fter these thinges, Jesus went ouer the Sea, of
Galilee, which is the Sea of Tiberias.

And a great multitude followed him, because
saw his miracles which hee did on them that were
sed.

And Jesus went vp into a Mountaine, and there
atte with his Disciples.

nd the Passeouer, a feast of the Jewes, was nigh.

¶ When Jesus then lift vp his eyes, and sawe
t compānie come vnto him, hee saith vnto Phi-
Whence shall wee buy bread, that these may eate?

(And this hee saide to proue him, for hee himselfe
o what hee would doe.)

Philip answered him, Two hundreth pennie-
h of bread is not sufficient for them, that euerie
f them may take a little.

One of the Disciples Andrew, Simon Peters
er, saith vnto him,

There is a Ladde heere which haue fiue barley
s, and two small fishes, but what are they among
anie.

And Jesus said, Make the men sit downe. Now
were much grasse in the place. So the men sate
e in number about fiue thousand.

And Jesus take the loaues, and when hee had
thankes, hee distributed to his Disciples, and
Disciples to them that were set downe, and like-
of the fishes, as much as they would.

When they were filled, hee saide vnto his
Disciples,

Disciples, Gather vp the fragmentes that rem
that nothing bee lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together,
filled twelue basketes with the fragmentes of th
barley loaues, which remained ouer and aboue
them that had eaten.

14 Then those men when they had seene the
cle, that Iesus did, saide, This is of a trueth the
phet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Iesus therefore perceiued that
would come, & take him by force, to make him a
hee departed againe to a Mountaine, himselfe al

16 And when Euen was now come, his Dis
went downe vnto the Sea.

18 And entred into a ship, and went ouer the
towards Capernaum: and it was now darke, an
sus was not come to them.

18 And the Sea arose, by reason of a great
that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about fiue and tw
or thirtie furlongs, they see Iesus walking on the
and drawing nigh vnto the ship: and they were

20 But hee saith vnto them, It is I, bee not a

21 Then they willinglie receiued him into th
and immediatelie the shippe was at the land w
they went.

22 The day following, when the people
stood on the other side of the Sea, sawe that there
none other boate there, saue that one whereinto
Disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not
his Disciples into the Boate, but that his Dis
were gone away alone.

23 Howbeit there came other Boates from

s nigh vnto the place, where they did eate bread,
er that the Lord had giuen thankes.
24 When the people therefore saw that Iesus was
there, neither his Disciples, they also tooke ship-
g, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.
25 And when they had found him on the other side
e Sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest
u hither?
26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verilie, verilie
y vnto you. Ye seeke mee, not because ye saw the
acles, but because ye did eate of the loaues, and
e filled.
27 Labour not for the meate which perisheth, but
the meate which endureth vnto euerlasting life,
ch the Sonne of Man shall giue vnto you: for him
God the Father sealed.
28 Then saide they vnto him, What shall wee doe
wee might worke the workes of God?
29 Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, This is
worke of God, that ye beleiue on him whome hee
sent.
30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe shew
thou then, that wee may see, and beleiue thee?
at doeth thou worke?
31 Our Fathers did eate Manna in the desart, as it
itten. He gaue them bread from heauen to eate.
32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verilie, verilie I
nto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from
en, but my Father giueth you the true bread from
en.
33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth down
heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.
34 Then said they vnto him, Lord, euermore giue

vs this bread.

35 And Iesus saide vnto them, I am the bread of life: hee that commeth to mee, shall neuer hunger, and hee that beliueth on mee shall neuer thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, That yee also haue seene mee, and beliue not.

37 All that the Father giueth mee, shall come to mee, and him that commeth to mee, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but the will of him that sent mee.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent mee, that of all which hee hath giuen mee, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent mee, that euerie one which seeth the Sonne, and beliueth on him, may haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came downe from heauen.

42 And they saide, Is not this Iesus, the sonne of Ioseph, whose Father and Mother wee know? how is it then that hee saith, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus therefore answered, and saide vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to mee, except the Father which hath sent mee, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

45 It is writtē in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God, euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto mee.

46 Not that any man hath seene the Father, saue hee which is of God, hee hath seene the Father.

47

47 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, Hee that belie-
ueth on mee, hath euerlasting life.
48 I am that bread of life.
49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wilder-
nesse, and are dead.
50 This is the Bread which commeth downe from
heauen, that a man may eate thereof, and not die.
51 I am that liuing Bread which came downe from
heauen: If any man eate of this Bread, hee shall liue
for euer: and the Bread that I will giue, is my flesh,
which I will giue for the life of the world.
52 The Iewes therefore stroue amongst themselues
saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eate?
53 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verilie, verilie I
say vnto you, Except yee eate the flesh of the Sonne of
man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you.
54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood,
hath eternall life: & I will raise him vp at the last day.
55 For my Flesh is Meate indeede, and my Blood
is drinke indeede.
56 Hee that eateth my Flesh, and drinketh my
blood, dwelleth in mee, and I in him.
57 As the liuing Father hath sent me, and I liue by
the Father: so, hee that eateth mee, euen hee shall liue
by me.
58 This is that Bread which came downe from
heauen: not as your fathers did eate Manna, and are
dead: hee that eateth of this Bread shall liue for euer.
59 These thinges said hee in the Synagogue, as hee
taught in Capernaum.
60 Many therefore of his Disciples when they had heard
this said, This is an heard saying, who can heare it?
61 When Iesus knew in himselfe that his Disciples
murmured

murmured at it, hee said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 What and if yee shall see the Sonne of Man ascend vp where hee was before?

63 It is the Spirite that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I speake vnto you, they are Spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that beleue not. For Iesus knew from the beginning, who they were that beleued not, and who should betray him.

65 And hee said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto mee, except it were giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his Disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus vnto the twelue, Will ye also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall wee goe? Thou hast the wordes of eternall life.

69 And wee beleeue and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I chosen you twelue, and one of you is a Deuill?

71 Hee spake of Iudas Iscariot, the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelue.

## CHAP. VII.

7. Iesus reproueth his kinsemen: 10. goeth vp to the feast of Tabernacles, 14. teacheth in the temple. 40. Diuerse opinions of Christ. 75. The officers of the Priests angrie at their officers, and at Nicodemus.

AFter these thinges, Iesus walked in Galilee: for hee would not walke in Iurie, because the Iewes sought to kill him.

## CHAP. VII.

2 Now the Iewes feast of Tabernacles was at
nt.
3 His brethren therefore saide vnto him, Depart
ce, and goe into Iudea, that thy Disciples may
the workes that thou doest.
4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in se-
t, and hee himselfe seeketh to bee knowne openly: If
u doe these things, shew thy selfe to the world.
5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.
6 Then Iesus saide vnto them, My time is not yet
me: but your time is alreadie.
7 The world cannot hate you, but mee it hateth, be-
se I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill.
8 Goe yee vp vnto this feast, I goe not vp yet vnto
s feast, for my time is not yet full come.
9 When hee had said these words vnto them, hee a-
e still in Galilee.
10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone vp, then
thee also vp vnto the feaste, not openlie, but as it
e in secret.
11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and
, Where is hee?
12 And there was much murmuring among the
ple, concerning him: For some saide, hee is a good
n: Others said, Nay, but hee deceiueth the people.
13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for feare
he Iewes.
14 ¶ Nowe about the middest of the feast Iesus
t vp into the Temple, and taught.
15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, Howe kno-
this man letters, hauing neuer learned?
16 Iesus answered them, My doctrine is not mine,
his that sent mee.

17 If any man will doe his will, hée shall kn
the doctrine, whether it bee of God, or whet
speake of my selfe.

18 Hee that speaketh of himselfe, séeketh his
glorie, but he that seeketh his glorie that sent h
same is true, and no vnrighteousnesse is in him.

19 Did not Moses giue you the Law, and ye
of you keepeth the Law? Why goe yée about t
mee?

20 The people answered, and said, Thou
deuill: Who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I
done one worke, and yee all marueile.

22 Moses therefore gaue vnto you Circum
(not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers)
yee on the Sabbath day circumcise a man.

23 If a man on the Sabbath day receiue circ
sion, that the Lawe of Moses should not be broke
yee angrie at mee, because I haue made a man
whit whole on the Sabbath day.

24 Iudge not according to the appearanc
iudge righteous iudgement.

25 Then said some of them of Hierusalem, I
this hee whom they séeke to kill.

26 But loe, hee speaketh boldelie, and they s
thing vnto him: Doe the Rulers know indeed
this is the verie Christ?

27 Howbeit wée knowe this man whence
but when Christ commeth, no man knoweth w
hée is.

28 Then cryed Iesus in the Temple as hee t
saying, Yée both know mee, and yee know wh
am, and I am not come of my selfe, but hee th

is true, whom yée know not.
29 But I know him, for I am from him, and hee
h sent mee.
30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laids
ds on him, because his houre was not yet come.
31 And many of the people beleeued on him, and
, When Christ commeth, hee will doe moe Mira-
, than those which this Man hath done?
32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people mur-
ed such things concerning him: And the Phari-
and the chiefe Priestes sent Officers to take him.
33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet a little while
I with you, and then I goe vnto him that sent mee.
34 Yée shall séeke mee, and shall not finde mee: and
ere I am, thither yée cannot come.
35 Then said the Iewes among themselues, Whi-
will hee goe, that wee shall not finde him? will hee
vnto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach
Gentiles?
36 What manner of saying is this that hee said, Ye
l séeke mee, and shall not finde mee: and where I
thither yee cannot come?
37 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Iesus
and cryed, saying, If any man thirst, let him
e vnto mee, and drinke.
38 Hée that beleueth on mée, as the Scripture hath
Out of his bellie shal flow riuers of liuing water.
(But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that
pe on him should receiue. For the holy Ghost was
yet giuẽ, because that Iesus was not yet glorified)
39 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard
saying, said, Of a trueth this is the Prophet.
40 Others said, This is the Christ, but some saide,

Shall Christ come out of Galilee.

42 Hath not the Scripture saide, that Christ
meth of the seed of Dauid, and out of the towne of
lehem, where Dauid was?

43 So there was a diuision among the people
cause of him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him,
man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the Officers to the chiefe p
and Pharisees, and they said vnto them, Why
yee not brought him?

46 The Officers answered, Neuer man spa
this Man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, A
also deceiued.

48 Haue anie of the Rulers, or of the Pharis
lieued on him.

49 But this people who knoweth not the La
cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith vnto them, (Hee that c
Iesus by night, beeing one of them)

51 Doeth our Law iudge any man before it
him, and know what hee doeth?

52 They answered, and saide vnto him, Art
also of Galilee? Search, and looke, for out of G
riseth no Prophet.

53 And euerie man went vnto his owne hous

## CHAP. VIII.

1. Christ deliuereth the vvoman take in adulter
Preacheth himselfe the light of the vvorld
iustifieth his doctrine.

## CHAP. VIII.

ESUS went vnto the Mount of Olives:

2 And earlie in the morning hæ came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and he sate downe and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought vnto him a woman taken in adulterie, and when they had set her in the middes.

4 They say vnto him, Master, this woman was taken in adulterie, in the verie act.

5 Now Moses in the Law commanded vs, that such should bee stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they saide, tempting him, that they might haue to accuse him. But Jesus stoupet downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though hee heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, hæ lift vp himselfe, and saide vnto them: Hæ that is without sinne among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And againe hæ stouped downe, and wrote on the ground.)

9 And they which heard it, being conuicted by their owne conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, euen vnto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Jesus had lift vp himselfe, & saw none but the womã, hee said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 Shee said, No man, Lord. And Jesus saide vnto her, Neither doe I condemne thee; Goe, and sinne no more.

12 ¶ Then spake Jesus againe vnto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth mæ shall not walke in darknesse, but shall haue the light of life.

13 The

13 The Pharisees therefore said vnto him, bearest record of thy selfe, thy record is not true.

14 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, T I beare record of my selfe, yet my record is tru I know whence I came, and whither I goe: b cannot tell whence I come, and whither I goe.

15 Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is tru I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent m

17 It is also written in your Lawe, that the mony of two men is true.

18 I am one that beareth witnesse of my selfe the Father that sent mee, beareth witnesse of me

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is thy Fa Iesus answered, Yee neither know mee, nor m ther: if yee had known me, ye would haue know Father also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasur he taught in the Temple: and no man laid hand him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then saide Iesus againe vnto them, I go way, and ye shall seeke mee, and shall die in you Whither I goe, yee cannot come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill him because he saith, Whither I goe, ye cannot co

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from bel I am from aboue: ye are of this worlde, I am this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you, that ye shall your sinnes. For if yee belieue not that I am he shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou Iesus saith vnto them, Euen the same that I sa

ou from the beginning.
26 I haue manie things to say, and to judge of you:
hee that sent mee is true, and I speake to the
ld those thinges which I haue heard of him.
27 They vnderstoode not that hee spake to them of
Father.
28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When yee haue lift
he Sonne of Man, then shall yee know that I am
and that I doe nothing of my selfe: but as my Fa-
hath taught mee I speake these things.
29 And hee that sent mee, is with mee: the Father
not left me alone; for I doe alwayes those thinges
please him.
30 As he spake those words, many belieued on him.
31 Then said Iesus to those Iewes which belieued
im, If yee continue in my word, then are yee m
ciples indeede.
32 And ye shall know the Trueth, and the Trueth
make you free.
33 ¶ They answered him, Wee bee Abrahams
, and were neuer in bondage to anie man: howe
t thou, Wee shall bee made free?
34 Iesus answered them, Verilie, verilie I say
you, Whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the ser-
of sinne.
35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer:
he Sonne abideth euer.
36 If the Sonne therefore shall make you free, yee
bee free indeede.
37 I know that ye are Abrahams seede, but yee seeke
ll mee, because my word hath no place in you.
38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father:
e doe that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They

39 They answered, and said vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus saith vnto them, If yee were Abrahams children, yee would doe the workes of Abraham.

40 But now yee seeke to kill mee, a man that haue told you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Yee doe the deedes of your father. Then said they to him, Wee bee not borne of fornication, wee haue one Father, euen God.

42 Iesus said vnto them, If God were your Father, yee would loue mee, for I proceeded forth & came from God: neither came I of my selfe, but hee sent me.

43 Why doe yee not vnderstand my speach? euen because yee cannot heare my word.

44 Yee are of your father the deuill, and the lusts of your father yee will doe: hee was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When hee speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his owne: for hee is a lyar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue me not.

46 Which of you conuinceth mee of sinne? And if I say the trueth, why doe yee not beleeue mee?

47 Hee that is of God, heareth Gods words: therefore heare them not, because yee are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill: but I honour my Father, and yee doe dishonour mee.

50 And I seeke not mine owne glorie, there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, If a man

saying, hée shall neuer sée death.

53 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Now wée know
thou hast a deuill Abraham is dead, and the Pro-
ets: and thou sayest, If a man kœpe my saying, he
neuer taste of death.

54 Art thou greater than our Father Abraham,
ch is dead, and the Prophets are dead: whom ma-
thou thy selfe?

55 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, mine ho-
is nothing, it is my Father that honoureth mœ,
om yœ say, that hée is your God:

56 Yet yœ haue not knowne him, but I know him:
if I should say, I know him not, I shall bee a
like vnto you: but I knowe him, and kœpe his
g,

57 Your father Abraham reioyced to sée my day:
hée saw it and was glad.

58 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not
fiftie yéeres old, and hast thou séene Abraham?

59 Iesus said vnto them, Verilie, verilie, I say vn-
u, Before Abraham was, I am.

60 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him: but
s hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple, going
w the mids of them, and so passed by.

## CHAP. IX.

ee that was borne blinde is restored to sight. 8.
ee is brought to the *Pharisees*. 13. They excom-
nicate him. 35. Christ receiueth him, and hee
nfesseth Christ.

1 Nd as Iesus passed by, hée sawe a man which
was blinde from his birth.

2 nd his Disciples asked him, saying, Master, who

did

did sinne, this man, or his Parents, that he was blinde?

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his Parents: but that the workes of God should bee made manifest in him.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, while it is day: the night commeth, when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 When hee had thus spoken, hee spatte on the ground, and made clay of the spittle and hee anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay.

7 And said vnto him, Goe wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seene him, that hee was blinde said, Is not this hee that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is hee: others said, He is like him: but hee said, I am hee.

10 Therefore said they vnto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 Hee answered, and said, A man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto mee, Goe to the poole of Siloam, and wash: and I went, and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they vnto him, Where is hee? He said I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the Sabbath day when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him how

d receiued his sight. Hee said vnto them, Hee put
pon mine eyes, and I washed, and doe see.
Therefore said some of the Pharisees: This man
of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath day.
rs said, How can a man that is a sinner, doe such
cles? And there was a diuision among them.
They said vnto the blinde man againe, What
thou of him, that hee hath opened thine eyes?
id, Hee is a Prophet.
But the Iewes did not beleeue concerning him,
e had beene blinde, and receiued his sight, vntill
alled the parents of him y had receiued his sight.
And they asked them, saying, Is this your son,
e say was borne blinde? how then doth he now

his Parents answered them, and said, We know
his is our sonne, and that hee was borne blinde:
But by what meanes hee nowe seeth, wee know
who hath opened his eyes, wee know not: hee is
, aske him, hee shall speake for himselfe.
These words spake his Parentes, because they
the Iewes: for the Iewes had agreed alreadie,
any man did confesse that hee was Christ, hee
bee put out of the Synagogue.
Therfore said his parents, He is of age, aske him.
Then againe called they the man that was blind,
d vnto him, Giue God the praise, wee know that
an is a sinner.
Hee answered, and said, Whether hee bee a sin-
no, I knowe not: One thing I knowe, that
as I was blinde, now I see.
Then said they to him againe, What did hee to
How opened hee thine eyes?

27 Yæ answered them, I haue tolde you alr
and yæ did not heare: wherefore would yæ hear
gaine? Will yæ also bee his Disciples?

28 Then they reuiled him. and saide: Thou
Disciple, but wæ are Moses Disciples.

29 Wæ know that God spake vnto Moses:
this Fellow, wæ know not from whence hæ is

30 The man answered, and said vnto them,
hære is a marueilous thing, that yæ knowe no
whence hæ is, and yet hæ hath opened mine eye

31 Now wæ know that God heareth not si
but if any man bæ a worshipper of God, and do
will, him hæ heareth.

32 Since the worlde began, was it not hear
any man opened the eyes of one that was borne

33 If this man were not of God, hee could
thing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou
altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teac
And they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him ou
when hee had found him, hæ said vnto him, Do
beliewe on the Sonne of God?

36 Yæ answered, and said, Who is hæ, Lo
I might beliewe on him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Thou hast bo
him, and it is hæ that talketh with thæ.

38 And hee said, Lord, I beliewe: and hæ w
ped him.

39 ¶ And Iesus said, For iudgement I am
into this world, that they which sæ not, might
they which see, might bæ made blinde.

40 And some of the Pharisees, which wer

, heard these wordes, and said vnto him; Are wee
nde also?

1 Iesus said vnto them, If yee were blinde, yee
uld haue no sinne: but now yee say, Wee see, there-
your sinne remaineth.

## CHAP. X

Christ is the Doore, and the good Sheepheard. 24
Hee proueth by his workes that hee is the Christ.
39. Hee escapeth the Iewes.

Verilie, verilie, I say vnto you, Hee that entreth
not by the doore into the Sheepe-fold, but climbeth
some other way, the same is a thiefe and a robber,
But hee that entereth in by the Doore, is the
pheard of the sheepe.
To him the Porter openeth, and the sheepe heare
voyce, and hee calleth his owne Sheepe by name,
leadeth them out.
And when hee putteth forth his owne Sheepe, hee
before them, and the Sheepe follow him: for
know his voyce.
And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee
him, for they know not the voyce of strangers.
This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they
stood not what things they were which he spake
them.
Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verilie, ve-
I say vnto you, I am the Doore of the Sheepe.
All that euer came before mee, are Thieues and
ers; but the Sheepe did not heare them.
I am the Doore, by mee if anie man enter in, hee
bee saued, and shall goe in and out, and finde
re.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale, a
kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might
life, and that they might haue it more abundant
11 I am the good Shepheard: the good Shephe
giueth his life for the sheepe.
12 But hee that is an Hireling, and not the
heard, whose owne the sheepe are not: seeth the
comming, and leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth: a
Wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheepe.
13 The Hireling fleeth, becau se hee is an Hi
and careth not for the sheepe.
14 I am the good Shepheard, and know
sheepe, and am knowne of mine.
15 As the Father knoweth mee, euen so kn
the Father: and I lay downe my life for the she
16 And other sheepe I haue: which are not
folde: them also I must bring, and they shall he
voyce; and there shall be one folde, and one Shep
17 Therefore doeth my Father loue mee, bec
lay downe my life, that I might take it againe.
18 No man taketh it from mee, but I lay it
of my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and
power to take it againe. This commandeme
I receiued of my Father.
19 ¶ There was was a diuision therefore
the Iewes for these sayings.
20 And manie of them said, Hee hath a dev
is mad, why heare yee him?
21 Others said, These are not the words of
hath a deuill. Can a deuill open the eyes of the
22 ¶ And it was at Hierusalem the feast o
dication, and it was Winter.
23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, i
mons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and
said vnto him, How long doest thou make vs to doubt?
If thou bee the Christ, tell vs plainelie.
25 Iesus answered them, I told you, and yee be-
leeued not: the workes that I doe in my Fathers Name
they beare witnesse of mee.
26 But yee beleeued not, because yee are not of my
sheepe, as I said vnto you.
27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them,
and they follow mee.
28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they
shall neuer perish, neither shall any man plucke them
out of mine hand.
29 My Father which gaue them mee, is greater
than all: and no man is able to pluck them out of my
Fathers hand.
30 I and my Father are one.
31 Then the Iewes tooke vp stones againe to stone
him.
32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes
haue I shewed you from my Father: for which of these
workes doe yee stone mee.
33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For a good
worke wee stone thee not, but for blasphemie, and be-
cause that thou being a Man, makest thy selfe God.
34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your
Law, I said, Yee are gods?
35 If hee called them gods, vnto whom the word
of God came, and the Scripture cannot bee broken:
36 Say yee of him, whom the Father hath sancti-
fied and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; be-
cause I said, I am the Sonne of God?
37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleeue me
not.

38 But if I doe, though yee beleiue not mee, be
the workes: that yee may knowe and beleiue th
Father is in mee, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought againe to take him:
hee escaped out of their hand,

40 And went away againe beyond Iordane,
the place wher Iohn at first baptized, & there he

41 And many resorted vnto him, and saide,
did no Miracle: but all thinges that Iohn spake
Man, were true.

42 And manie beleieued on him there.

## CHAP. XI.

1. Christ raiseth Lazarus, foure dayes buried.
Many Iewes beleiue. 47. The high Priests
Pharisees gather a counsell against him.

NOw a certaine man was sicke named Laza
Bethanie the town of Mary, & her sister M

2 (It was that Marie which anointed the
with ointment, and wiped his feete with her
whose brother Lazarus was sicke)

3 Therefore his sister sent vnto him, saying
behold, hee whom thou louest is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard that, hee said, This sic
is not vnto death, but for the glorie of God, th
Sonne of God might bee glorified thereby.

5 Now Iesus loued Martha & her sister & L

6 When he had heard therefore that he was si
abode two dayes still in the same place, where

7 Then after that, saith hee to his Disciples
goe into Iudea againe.

8 His Disciples say vnto him, Master, the
of late sought to stone thee, & goest thou thither

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in
day? If any man walke in the day, hee stumbleth
because hee seeth the light of this world.
10 But if a man walke in the night, hee stumbleth,
auls there is no light in him.
11 These thinges said hee, and after that, hee saith
o them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I goe,
I may awake him out of sleepe.
12 Then said his Disciples, Lord, if hee sleepe, hee
doe well.
13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they
ght that hee had spoken of taking of rest in sleepe.
14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainelie, Lazarus
ad:
15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not
, (to the intent yee may beleeue,) neuertheless,
s goe vnto him.
16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus,
his Fellow Disciples, Let vs also goe, that wee
die with him.
17 Then when Iesus came, hee found that he had
n the graue foure dayes alreadie.
18 (Now Bethanie was nigh vnto Hierusalem, a-
fiftéene furlongs off.)
19 And manie of the Iewes came to martha and
e, to comfort them concerning their brother.
20 Then Martha assoone as shee heard that Iesus
comming, went and met him: but Marie sate
n the house.
21 Then saide Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou
bæne hære, my brother had not died.
22 But I know that euen now, whatsoeuer thou
aske of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus saith vnto her, Thy brother shall rise gaine.

24 Martha saith vnto him, I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the Resurrection and the life: he that beleeueth in mee, though he were dead, yet shall hee liue.

26 And whosoeuer liueth, and beleeueth in me shall neuer die. Beleeuest thou this?

27 Shee saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeue that thou art the Christ, the Sonne of God, which should come into the world.

28 And when shee had so saide, shee went her way, and called Marie her sister secretlie, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as shee heard that, shee arose quickly, and came vnto him.

30 Now Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Marie that shee rose vp hastilie, and went out, followed her, saying, Shee goeth vnto the graue to weepe there.

32 Then when Marie was come where Iesus was, and saw him, shee fell down at his feete, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou hadst beene here, my brother had not died.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping, which came with her, he groned in the Spirit, and was troubled.

34 And said, Where haue yee laid him? They said vnto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he loued him!

37 And some of them saide, Could not this man

ich opened the eyes of the blinde, haue caused that
n this man should not haue died.
8 Iesus therfore againe groning in himself, cõmeth
he graue: It was a Caue, and a stone laide vpon it.
9 Iesus saide, Take yee away the stone. Martha
sister of him that was dead, saith vnto him, Lord
this time hee stinketh: for hee hath bene dead foure
s.
0 Iesus saith vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if
wouldest beleeue, ỹ shouldest see the glorie of God?
Thẽ they took away the stone from the place where
ead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said,
her, I thanke thee, that thou hast heard mee.
2 And I knowe that thou hearest mee alwayes:
because of the people which stand by, I said it, that
may beleeue that thou hast sent mee.
3 And when hee had thus spoken, hee cryed with
e voyce, Lazarus, come forth.
4 And hee that was dead, came forth bound hand
foote, with graue-cloathes: and his face was
d about with a Napkin. Iesus saith vnto them,
e him, and let him goe.
5 Then manie of the Iewes which came to Ma
and had seene the thinges which Iesus did, belee-
on him.
6 But some of them went their wayes to the Pha-
es, and tolde them what things Iesus had done.
7 ¶ Then gathered the chiefe Priestes, and the
arisees a counsell, and saide, What doe wee? for
Man doeth many Miracles.
8 If wee let him thus alone, all men will beleeue
im, and the Romans shall come, and take away
our place and Nation.

49 And one of them, named Caiaphas, be the high Priest that same yeare, said vnto them, know nothing at all.

50 Nor consider that it is expedient for vs, one man should die for the people, and that the Nation perish not.

51 And this spake hee, not of himselfe, but high Priest that yeere, hee prophesied that should die for that Nation:

52 And not for that Nation onelie, but that should gather together in one the Children of G were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth, they tooke c together, for to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openlie the Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey to the wildernesse, into a citie called Ephraim there continued with his Disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was nigh at and manie went out of the countrey vp to Hier before the Passeouer to purifie themselues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake themselues, as they stood in the Temple, What yee, that hee will not come to the Feast?

57 Now both the chiefe Priests and Pharise giuen a commaundement, that if any man where hee were, hee should shewe it, that they take him.

## CHAP. XII.

1. Iesus excuseth Marie anointing his feete. people flocke to see Lazarus, and the high P consult to kill him.

Then Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passeouer, came
to Bethanie where Lazarus was, which had bene
, whome hee raised from the dead.
There they made him a Supper and Martha ser-
: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the
le with him.
Then tooke Marie a pound of oyntment of Spike-
, verie costlie, and anointed the feete of Iesus,
wiped his feete with her haire: and the house was
with the odour of the oyntment.
Then saith one of his Disciples, Iudas Iscariot,
wns sonne, which should betray him.
Why was not this ointment solde for three hun-
pence, and giuen to the poore?
This hee said, not that hee cared for the poore:
ecause hee was a Thiefe, and had the bagge, and
what was put therein.
Then said Iesus Let her alone against the day o
rying hath shee kept this.
For the poore alwayes yee haue with you: but
yee haue not alwayes.
Much people of the Iewes therefore knewe that
as there; and they came, not for Iesus sake one-
ut that they might see Lazarus also, whom hee
aised from the dead.
¶ But the chiefe Priestes consulted, that they
t put Lazarus also to death,
Because that by reason of him manie of the Ie-
went away and believed on Iesus.
¶ On the next day, much people that were
to the Feast, when they heard that Iesus was
ming to Hierusalem.
Tooke branches of palme trees, and went forth

to

to méete him, and cryed Hosanna, blessed is the
of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord.
14 And Iesus when hee had found a young
sate thereon, as it is written,
15 Feare not, Daughter of Sion, behold, thy
commeth sitting on an Asses colt.
16 These thinges vnderstood not his Disci
the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then re
bred they that these things were written of him
that they had done these thinges vnto him.
17 The people therefore that was with him,
hæ called Lazarus out of his Graue, and rais
from the dead bare record.
18 For this cause his people also met him, f
they heard that hee had done this Miracle.
19 The Pharisees therefore saide among th
ues, Perceiue yée how yée preuaile nothing: b
the world is gone after him.
20 ¶ And there were certaine Grékes a
them, that came vp to worship at the feast:
21 The same came therefore to Philip, wh
of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, sayi
wée would sée Iesus.
22 Philip commeth, and telleth Andrew:
gaine Andrew and Philip told Iesus.
23 ¶ And Iesus answered them, saying, Th
is come, that the Sonne of Man should bee glo
24 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, Except
of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth
but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruite.
25 Hée that loueth his life, shall lose it: a
that hateh his life in this world, shall kéepe it u
eternall.

26 If anie man serue mee, let him follow mee: and
re I am, there shall also my seruant bee, If anie
serue mee, him will my Father honour.
27 Now is my Soule troubled, and what shall I
Father, saue mee from this houre: but for this
se came I vnto this houre.
28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a
ce from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it,
will glorifie it againe.
29 The people therefore that stood by & heard it, said,
it thundered: others said, An Angel spake to him.
30 Iesus answered, and said, This voyce came not
se of mee, but for your sakes.
31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shall
prince of this world bee cast out.
32 And I, if I bee lifted vp from the earth, will
all men vnto mee.
33 (This hee saide, signifying what death hee
ld die)
34 The people answered him, Wee haue heard out
e Law, that Christ abideth for euer: and howe
st thou, The Sonne of Man must bee lift vp?
o is this Sonne of Man?
35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a little while is
light with you: walke while yee haue the light, lest
nesse come vpon you: for hee that walketh in
nesse, knoweth not whither hee goeth.
36 While yee haue light, beleeue in the light, that
ay be the children of light. These things spake Ie-
and departed, and did hid himselfe from them.
37 ¶ But though hee had done so many miracles
e them, yet they beleeued not on him.
38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might

bee

bee fulfilled, which hee spake, Lord, who hath
ued our repoet? and to whom hath the Arme
Lord beene reuealed?

39 Therefore they could not belieue, becaus
Esaias said againe,

40 Hee hath blinded their eyes, and hardene
heart, that they should not see with their eyes
vnderstand with their heart, and bee conuerte
I should heale them.

41 These thinges saide Esaias, when hee sa
glorie, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Neuertheless, among the chiefe Rule
manie belieued on him: but because of the Pha
they did not confesse him, lesse they should bee p
of the Synagogue.

43 For they loued the praise of men, more th
praise of God.

44 ¶ Iesus cryed, and said, Hee that belie
mee, belieueth not on mee, but on him that sen

45 And hee that seeth mee, seeth him that sen

46 I am come a light into the world, that
euer belieueth on mee, should not abide in dark

47 And if any man heare my wordes and
not, I iudge him not; for I came not to iud
world, but to saue the world.

48 Hee that receiueth mee, and receiueth n
wordes, hath one that iudgeth him: the worde
haue spoken, the same shall iudge him in the last

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe, but th
ther which sent mee, hee gaue mee a commaund
what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his commaundement
euerlasting: whatsoeuer I speake therefore, e
the Father said vnto mee, so I speake.

## CHAP. XIII.

esus washing the Disciples feete. 14. Exhorteth humilitie and charitie, 18. Foretelleth that udas should betraye him, 38. and Peter denie im.

Ow before the Feast of the Passeouer, when Jesus knew that his houre was come, that hee should art out of this world vnto the Father, hauing loued wne which were in the worlde, hee loued them the end.

And Supper beeing ended (the Deuill hauing put into the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons to betray him.)

Jesus knowing that the Father hath giuen all ges into his handes, and that hee was come from , and went to God:

Hee riseth from Supper, and laide aside his gar-s, and toke a Towell, and girded himselfe.

After that, hee powred water into a Bason, eganne to wash the Disciples feete, and to wipe with the Towell wherewith hee was girded.

Then commeth hee to Simon Peter: and Peter vnto him, Lord, doest thou wash my feete?

Jesus answered, and saide vnto him, What e, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know reafter.

Peter saith vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou no part with mee.

Simon Peter saith vnto him, Lord, not my feete e, but also mine handes and mine head.

10 Iesus saith vnto him, Hee that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash his feete, but is cleane euerie whit: and yee are cleane but not all.

11 For hee knew who should betray him, therefore hee said, Yee are not all cleane.

12 So after hee had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, hee said vnto them, Know yee what I haue done to you?

13 Yee call mee Master, and Lord, and yee say well, for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord, and Master haue washed your feete, yee also ought to wash one anothers feete.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that yee should doe, as I haue done to you.

16 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, The seruant is not greater than his lord, neither hee that is sent greater than hee that sent him.

17 If yee know these thinges, happie are yee if yee doe them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all, I know whom I haue chosen, but that the Scripture may bee fulfilled, Hee that eateth bread with mee, hath lift vp his heele against mee.

19 Now I tell you before it come, That when it is come to passe, yee may beliue that I am hee.

20 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, hee that receiueth whomsoeuer I sende, receiueth mee: and hee that receiueth mee, receiueth him that sent mee.

21 When Iesus had thus said, hee was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray mee.

22 Then the Disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom hee spake.

## CHAP. XIII.

Now there was leaning on Iesus bosome, one
Disciples, whom Iesus loued.
Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that
ould aske who it should bee of whom hee spake.
Hee then lying on Iesus breast, saith vnto him,
who is it?
Iesus answered, Hee it is to whom I shall giue
, when I haue dipped it. And when hee had dip-
he sop, hee gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, the sonne
mon.
And after the sop, Satan entered into him. Then
esus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.
Now no man at the Table knew for what in-
e spake this vnto him.
For some of them thought because Iudas had the
, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy those things
we haue need of against the Feast, or that hee
d giue some thing to the poore.
Hee then hauing receiued the Soppe, went im-
tely out: and it was night.
¶ Therefore when hee was gone out, Iesus
Now is the Sonne of Man glorified: and God
ified in him.
If God bee glorified in him, God shall also glorifie
n himselfe, and shall straight way glorifie him.
Little children, yet a little while I am with you:
all seeke mee, and as I said vnto the Iewes, whi-
I goe, yee cannot come, so now I say to you.
A new commandement I giue vnto you, That
e one another, as I haue loued you, that yee also
ne another.
By this shall all men know that yee are my Dis-
, if yee haue loue one to another.
¶ Simon Peter said vnto him Lord, whither

goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I go canst not follow mee nowe: but thou shalt follow afterwards.

37 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why can not I follow thee now? I will lay downe my life for thy

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down life for my sake? Verilie, verilie I say vnto thee Cocke shall not crow, till thou hast denied mee th

## CHAP. XIIII.

1. Christ comforteth his Disciples, Professeth selfe the Way, the Trueth, and the Life, and vvith the Father.

LEt not your heart bee troubled, yee beleeue in beleeue also in mee.

2 In my Fathers house are manie Mansions were not so, I would haue tolde you: I goe to p a place for you.

3 And if I goe and prepare a place for you, I come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe: where I am: there yee may bee also.

4 And whither I goe yee know the way yee

5 Thomas saieth vnto him, Lord, we know not ther thou goest: and how can wee know the way

6 Iesus saith vnto him, I am the Way, the T and the Life: no man commeth vnto the Father, mee.

7 If yee had known mee, yee should haue kn my Father also: and from henceforth yee know and haue seene him.

8 Philip saith vnto him, Lord, shew vs the F and it sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus saieth vnto him, Haue I beene so

me with you and yet hast thou not known me, Phil-
? Hee that hath seene mee, hath seene my Father,
how sayest thou then, Shew vs the Father?
0 Beleuest thou not that I am in the Father, and
Father in mee? The words that I speake vnto you,
peake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth
mee, hee doeth the workes.
1 Beleue me that I am in the Father, & the Father
mee, or else beleue mee for the verie workes sake.
12 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, He that beleueth
mee, the workes that I doe, shall hee doe also: and
ater workes than these shall hee doe, because I goe
my Father.
13 And whatsoeuer yee shall aske in my Name, that
I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.
14 If yee shall aske anie thing in my Name, I will
it.
15 ¶ If yee loue mee, keepe my commandements.
16 And I will pray the Father, and hee shall giue
another Comforter, that hee may abide with you
euer.
17 Euen the Spirit of trueth whom the world can-
receiue, because it seeth him not: neither knoweth
: but yee know him, for hee dwelleth with you, and
l bee in you,
18 I will not leaue you comfortlesse, I will come
ou.
19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth mee no
e, but yee see mee: because I liue, yee shall liue also.
20 At that day yee shall know, that I am in my
her, and you in mee, and I in you.
21 Hee that hath my commaundements, and kee-
them hee it is that loueth mee: and hee that loueth

mée, shall bée loued of my Father, and I will loue hi
and will manifest my selfe to him.

22 Iudas saith vnto him, not Iscariot, Lord, h
is it that thou wilt manifest thy selfe vnto vs, and
vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, If a m
loue mee, hee will kæpe my wordes: and my Fat
will loue him, and wee will come vnto him, and m
our abode with him.

24 Hee that loueth me not, kæpeth not my sayi
and the word which you heare, is not mine, but the
thers which sent mee.

25 These thinges haue I spoken vnto you, bei
yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, which is the holie G
whom the Father will sende in my Name, hee
teach you all things, & bring all things to your rem
brance, whatsoeuer I haue said vnto you.

27 Peace I leaue with you, my peace I giue
you, not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: Le
your heart bæ troubled, neither let it bæ afraide.

28 Yee haue heard how I saide vnto you, I g
way and come againe vnto you. If yee loued me
would reioyce, because I said, I goe vnto my Fat
for my Father is greater than I.

29 And now I haue told you before it come to p
that when it is come to passe, yæ might beliæue.

30 Hæreafter I will not talke much with you
the prince of this world commeth, and hath not
in mee.

31 But that the world may know, that I lo
Father: and as the Father gaue mæ commandem
euen so I doe: Arise, let vs goe hence.

CH

## CHAP. XV.

The consolation and mutuall loue betweene Christ and his members, vnder the parable of the Vine. 18. Comfort in persecution.

1 I am the true Vine, and my Father is the Husband-man.

2 Euery branch in mee that beareth not fruite, hee taketh away: and euerie branch that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruite.

3 Now yee are cleane through the worde which I haue spoken vnto you:

4 Abide in mee, and I in you: As the braunch cannot beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the Vine: no more can yee, except yee abide in mee.

5 I am the Vine, yee are the braunches. Hee that abideth in mee, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruite: for without mee yee can doe nothing.

6 If a man abide not in mee, hee is cast forth as a braunch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If yee abide in mee, and my wordes abide in you, ye shall aske what ye will, and it shalbe done vnto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that yee beare much fruite, so shall yee bee my Disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: continue ye in my loue.

10 If yee keepe my Commandementes, yee shall abide in my loue, euen as I haue kept my Fathers commandements, and abide in his loue.

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

12 This is my Commandement, That yee loue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue hath no man than this, That a man

a man may lay downe his life for his friends.

14 Yée are my friends, if ye doe whatsoeuer I co
mand you.

15 Hence forth I call you not seruants, for the
uant knoweth not what his lord doeth, but I haue c
led you friends, for all thinges that I haue heard of
Father, I haue made knowne vnto you.

16 Yée haue not chosen mee, but I haue chosen
and ordained you, that you should goe and bring fo
fruite, and that your fruite should remaine: that w
soeuer yée shall aske of your Father in my Name,
may giue it you.

17 These thinges I commaund you, That yé
one another.

18 If the world hate you, yée knowe that it h
mée before it hated you.

19 If yee were of the world, the world would
his owne: but because yée are not of the worlde, b
haue chosen you out of the worlde, therefore the w
hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I said vnto you,
seruant is not greater than the lord, if they haue
secuted mée, they will also persecute you: if they
kept my saying, they will keepe yours also.

21 But all these things will they doe vnto you fo
Names sake, because they know not him that sent

22 If I had not come and spoken vnto them,
had not had sinne: but now they haue no cloak fo
sinne.

23 Hee that hateth mee, hateth my Father also

24 If I had not done among them the works w
none other man did, they had not had sinne: but
haue they both seene, and hated both mee & the Fa

25

25 But this commeth to passe, that the word might
e fulfilled that is written in their Lawe, They hated
ee without a cause.
26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will
nd vnto you from the Father, euen the Spirit of truth
hich proceedeth from the Father, hee shall testifie of
e.
27 And yee also shall beare witnesse, because yee
ne bene with mee from the beginning.

## CHAP. XVI.

Christ comforteth his Disciples against tribulation, by the promise of the holie Ghost, and by his owne resurrection and ascention. 23. Prayers in Christes Name acceptable to the Father.

These things haue I spoken vnto you, that yee should
not bee offended.
2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues: yea,
e time commeth, that whosoeuer killeth you, will
nke that hee doeth God seruice.
3 And these thinges will they doe vnto you, because
ey haue not knowne the Father, nor mee.
4 But these thinges haue I tolde you, that when the
me shall come, yee may remember that I haue tolde
u of them. And these things I saide not vnto you at
e beginning, because I was with you.
5 But nowe I goe my way to him that sent mee,
d none of you asketh mee, Whither goest thou?
6 But because I haue said these thinges vnto you,
row hath filled your heart.
7 Neuertheless, I tell you the trueth, it is expe-
nt for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away,
e Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart,
will send him vnto you.

8 And

8 And when hée is come, hée will reprooue the world of sinne, and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement.

9 Of sinne, because they beleeued not on mée.

10 Of righteousnesse, because I goe to my Father, and yée see mée no more.

11 Of iudgement, because the Prince of this world is iudged.

12 I haue yet manie things to say vnto you, but yee cannot beare them now.

13 Howbeit when hee, the Spirit of trueth, is come, hee will guide you into all trueth: for he shall not speake of himselfe, but whatsoeuer hée shall heare, that shall he speake and hee will shew you things to come.

14 Hee shall glorifie mee, for hée shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I that hee shall take of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

16 A little while, and yée shall not see mee: and againe, a little while and yée shall see mée; because I goe to the Father.

17 Then said some of his Disciples among themselues. What is this that he saith vnto vs, A little while and ye shall not see mee: and againe, a little while, and yée shall see mee: and because I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that hée saith, A little while? wee cannot tell what hee saith.

19 Now Iesus knew that they were desirous to aske him, and said vnto them, Doe yée enquire among yourselues of that I said, A little while, and yée shall not see mée: and againe, A little while, and yée shall see mée?

20 Verilie, verilie I say vnto you, That yee shall weepe and lament, but the world shall reioyce: and

albe sorrowfull, but your sorrow shalbe turned to joy.
21 A woman when shee is in trauaile, hath sorrow, cause her houre is come: but assoone as shee is deli-ered of the childe, shee remembreth no more the an-uish, for joy that a man is borne into the world.
22 And yee now therefore haue sorrow: but I will you againe, and your heart shall rejoyce, and your e no man taketh from you.
23 And in that day yee shall aske mee nothing: Ue-ie, verilie I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer yee shall ask Father in my Name, hee will giue it you.
24 Hitherto yee haue asked nothing in my Name: ke, and yee shall receiue, that your joy may bee full.
25 These thinges haue I spoken vnto you, in pro-bs: the time commeth when I shall no more speake o you in prouerbs, but I shall shew you plainly of Father.
26 At that day yee shall aske in my Name: and I say vnto you, that I will pray my Father for you.
27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because yee me loued mee; and haue beleeued that I came out m God.
28 I came forth from the Father, and am come o the world againe, I leaue the worlde, and goe to Father.
29 His Disciples said vnto him, Loe, now speakest u plainelie and speakest no prouerbe.
30 Now wee are sure that thou knowest all things, needest not that any man should aske thee: By this beleeue that thou commest forth from God.
31 Iesus answered them, Doe yee now beleeue?
32 Behold, the houre commeth, yea, is now come, t ye shall bee scattered, euerie man to his owne,

and shall leaue mee alone: and yet I am not alone, cause the Father is with mee.

33 These thinges I haue spoken vnto you, that in mee ye might haue peace, in the world ye shall haue tribulation: but bee of good cheare, I haue ouercome the world.

## CHAP. XVII.

1. Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him, 6. preserue his Apostles, 11. in vnitie, 17. and truth, 20. to glorifie them, and all other beleeuers.

THese words spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, the houre is come, glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee:

2 As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that hee should giue eternall life to as many as thou hast giuen him.

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the only true God, & Iesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest mee to doe.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me, with thine owne selfe, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I haue manifested thy Name, vnto the men which thou gauest mee out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them mee; and they haue kept thy word.

7 Now they haue knowne that all things whatsoeuer thou hast giuen mee, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the words, which thou gauest mee, and they haue receiued them, and haue knowne surelie that I came out from thee, and they haue beleiued that thou didst send mee.

I pray for them, I pray not for the world: but them which thou hast giuen mee, for they are thine.
10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine: I am glorified in them.
11 And now I am no more in the world, but these in the world, and I come to thee, Holie Father, pe through thine owne Name: those whom thou hast en mee, that they may bee one, as wee are.
12 While I was with them in the world, I kept m in thy Name: those that thou gauest mee, I haue pt, and none of them is lost, but the sonne of perdi- n: that the Scripture might bee fulfilled,
13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in mselues.
14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath ed them, because they are not of the world, euen as m not of the world.
15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out e world, but that thou shouldest keepe them from euill.
16 They are not of the world, euen as I am not e world.
17 Sanctifie them through thy trueth: thy worde rueth.
18 As thou hast sent mee into the world: euen so I also sent them into the world.
19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my selfe, that y also might bee sanctified through the trueth.
20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them al- hich shall beleeue on mee through their word:
21 That they all may bee one, as thou Father art in me, & I in thee, that they also may be one in vs.

that

that the world may beleeue that thou hast sent mée.
22 And the glorie which thou gauest mée, I have
uen them: that they may bée one euen as wée are o
23 I in them, and thou in mée, that they may
made perfect in one and that the world may know
thou hast sent mée, and hast loued them, as thou ha
ued mée.
24 Father, I will that they also whom thou
giuen mée, bée with mée where I am, that they
beholde my glorie which thou hast giuen mée: for
louest mée before the foundation of the world.
25 O righteous Father, the world hath not kn
thée, but I haue knowne thee, and these haue kno
that thou hast sent mee.
26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name,
will declare it: that the loue wherewith thou hast
mée, may bée in them, and I in them.

## CHAP. XVIII.

6. Iudas betrayeth Iesus. The Officers fall to
ground. 12. Iesus is taken, and led to Annas
Caiaphas. 28. Araigned before Pilate.

WHen Iesus had spoken these words hee
forth with his Disciples, ouer the brook
dron, where was a Garden, into the which hée en
and his Disciples.
2 And Iudas also which betrayed him, knew
place, for Iesus oftimes resorted thither with his
ciples.
3 Iudas then hauing receiued a band of men
ficers from the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, com
thither with Lanternes and Torches, and weapo
4 Iesus therefore knowing all thinges that

ne vpon him, went forth, and saide vnto them,
hom seeke yee?
They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus
h vnto them, I am hee. And Iudas also which be-
yed him, stood with them.
Assone then as hee had said vnto them, I am hee,
y went backward, and fell to the ground.
Then asked hee them againe, Whom seeke yee?
they said, Iesus of Nazareth.
Iesus answered, I haue tolde you that I am hee:
herefore yee seeke mee, let these goe their way:
That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake,
them which thou gauest mee, I haue lost none.
Then Simon Peter hauing a Sword, drew it,
smote the high Priestes seruant, and cut off his
t eare: the seruantes name was Malchus.
Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sword
the sheath: the cup which my Father hath giuen
shall I not drinke it.
Then the band and the Captaine, and officers
e Iewes, tooke Iesus and bound him.
And led him away to Annas first, (for hee was
r in law to Caiaphas) which was the high Priest
same yeare.
Now Caiaphas was hee which gaue counsell to
Iewes, that it was expedient, that one man should
for the people.
¶ And Simon Peter followed Iesus and so did
ther Disciple, that Disciple was knowne vnto the
Priest, And went in with Iesus, into the palace of
igh Priest.
But Peter stood at the dore, without, Then went
the other Disciple, which was known vnto the high

Priest,

Priest, and spake vnto her that kept the dore, brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the Damosell that kept the dore Peter, Art thou also one of this mans Disciples? saith, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stode there, had made a fire of coales, (for it was colde) and warmed themselues: and Peter stood with them, warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The high Priest then asked Iesus of his ciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openlie t world, I euer taught in the Synagogue, and i Temple, whither the Iewes alwayes resort, a secret haue I said nothing;

21 Why askest thou mee? Aske them which mee, what I saide vnto them, beholde, they k what I said.

22 And when hee had thus spoke, none of the o which stood by, stroke Iesus with the Palme hand, saying, Answerest thou the high Priest so

23 Iesus answered him, If I haue spoken euil, witnesse of the euill: but if well, why smitest tho

24 Now Annas had sent him bound vnto Ca the high Priest.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed him They said therefore vnto him: Art not thou al of his Disciples? Hee denied it, and said, I am

26 One of the seruants of the high Priestes (b his kinsman whose eare Peter cut off) saith, D I see thee in the garden with him.

27 Peter then denied againe, and immedi the cocke crew.

28 ¶

## CHAP. XIX.

¶ Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas vnto the
of judgement: And it was early, and they them-
es, wēt not into ẏ judgement Hall, lest they should
defiled: but that they might eate the Passeouer.
Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What
sation bring yee against this man?
They answered, and said vnto him, If hee were
a malefactor, wee would not haue deliuered him
nto thee.
Then said Pilate vnto them, Take yee him, and
ge him according to your Law. The Iewes there-
said vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any
to death.
That the saying of Jesus might bee fulfilled
ch hee spake, signifying what death hee should die.
Then Pilate entred into the judgement Hall a-
ne, and called Jesus, and said vnto him, Art thou
king of the Iewes?
Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of
selfe? or did other tell it thee of mee?
Pilate answered, Am I an Iew? thine owne
ion, and the chiefe Priests haue deliuered thee vnto
What hast thou done?
Jesus answered, My Kingdome is not of this
ld: if my Kingdome were of this world, then would
seruants fight, that I should not bee deliuered to
Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.
Pilate therefore said vnto him, Art thou a King
Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King.
this end was I borne, and for this cause came I
the world, that I should beare witnesse vnto the
h, euery one that is of the truth heareth my voyce.
Pilate saith vnto him, What is trueth? And

when

when hee had saide this, hee went out againe vnt
Iewes & saith vnto them, I find in him no fault a
39 But yee haue a custome that I should re
vnto you, one at the Passeouer: will yee therefore
I release vnto you the King of the Iewes?
40 Then cryed they all againe, saying, Not
Man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a Ro

## CHAP. XIX.

1. Christ is scourged, crowned with Thornes, beaten, 16. Delivered to bee crucified. 18. dieth. 38. Hee is buried.

THen Pilate therefore tooke Iesus and scourged
2 And the Souldiers platted a crowne of th
and put it on his head, and they put on him a p
Robe.
3 And saide, Haile King of the Iewes? and
smote him with their hands.
4 Pilate therefore went forth againe, and
vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, th
may know I find no fault in him.
5 Then came Iesus forth wearing a crow
Thornes, and the purple Robe, and Pilate saith
them, Behold the Man.
6 When the chiefe Priestes therefore and th
cers saw him, they cryed, saying, crucifie him, cr
him. Pilate saith vnto them, Take yee him, and
cifie him: for I finde no fault in him.
7 The Iewes answered him, Wee haue a law
by our law hee ought to die, because hee made hi
the Sonne of God.
8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying
was the more afraid.

And went againe into the iudgement Hall, and
y vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue
none answere.
o Then saith Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not
o mée? knowest thou not that I haue power to cru-
e thee, and haue power to release thee?
t Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power
ll against mée, except it were giuen thee from a-
e, therefore hée deliuereth mee vnto thee, hath the
ater sinne.
2 And from henceforth Pilate sought to release
: but the Iewes cryed out saying. If thou let this
n goe, thou art not Cesars friend: whosoeuer ma-
himselfe a king, speaketh against Cesar.
3 When Pilate therefore heard that saying, hée
ught Iesus forth, and sate downe in the iudgment
, in a place that is called the pauement, but in the
ew Gabbatha.
4 And it was the preparation of the Passeouer,
about the sixt houre: and hée saith vnto the Iewes,
old your King.
5 But they cryed out, Away with him, away with
, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Shall I
ifie your King? The chiefe Priestes answered,
haue no King but Cesar.
6 Then deliuered hee him therefore vnto them to
rucified: and they tooke Iesus, and led him away.
7 And hee beareing his Crosse, went forth into a
e called the place of a Skull, which is called in the
ew, Golgotha:
8 Where they crucified him, and two other with
on either side one, and Iesus in the midst.
9 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the
Crosse,

Crosse. And the writting was, IESVS OF NAZAR
THE KING OF THE IEVVES.

20 This title then read manie of the Iewes: fo
place where Iesus was crucified, was nigh to the
and it was written, in Hebrew, and Greeke an
time.

21 Then said the chiefe Priestes of the Iewes t
late, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but th
said, I am the King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I
written.

23 ¶ Then the souldiers, when they had crucifi
sus, tooke his garments, (& made foure partes, to
souldier a part) & also his coate: Now the coate
without seame, wouen from the top throughout.

24 They said therefore among themselues, L
vs rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall bee:
the Scripture might bee fulfilled, which saith,
parted my Rayment among them, and for my
they did cast lots. These things therefore the Sou
did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the Crosse of Iesu
Mother, and his Mother Sister, Marie the wife o
ophas, and Marie Magdalene.

26 When Iesus therefore saw his Mother, a
Disciple standing by, whom hee loued, hee saith
his Mother, Woman, behold thy Sonne.

27 Then saith hee to the Disciple, Behold th
there. And from that houre the Disciple tooke her
his owne home.

28 ¶ After this, Iesus knowing that all th
were now accomplished, that the Scripture mi
fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 Now there were set a vessell full of Vinegar: and they filled a Spunge with vinegar, and put it vpon Hyssope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Iesus therefore had receiued the Vinegar, hee said, It is finished and hee bowed his head, and gaue vp the Ghost.

31 The Iewes therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath day, (for that Sabbath day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legges might bee broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the Souldiers, and brake the legs of the first & of the other, which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Iesus, and saw that hee was dead alreadie, they brake not his legges.

34 But one of the Souldiers with a Speare pierced his side, and forth-with came there out blood and water.

35 And hee that sawe it, bare recorde, and his record is true, and hee knoweth that hee saith true that ye might belieue.

36 For these things were done that the Scripture should bee fulfilled, A bone of him shall not bee broken.

37 And againe, another Scripture saith, They shall looke on him whom they pierced.

38 ¶ And after this, Ioseph of Arimathea (being a Disciple of Iesus, but secretlie for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilate that hee might take away the bodie of Iesus, and Pilate gaue him leaue: hee came therefore, and tooke the bodie of Iesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Iesus by night, and brought a mixture of Myrrhe and Aloes, about an hundreth pound weight.

40 Then toke they the bodie of Iesus, and wo
it in linnen cloathes, with the spices, as the manner
the Iewes is to burie:

41 Now in the place where hee was crucified, th
was a Garden, and in the Garden a new Sepulc
wherein was neuer man yet laide:

42 There laide they Iesus therefore, because of
Iewes preparation day, for the Sepulchre was n
at hand.

## CHAP. XX.

1. Marie commeth to the Sepulchre. 3. So doe Pe
and Iohn. 11. Iesus appeares to Marie Magdale
19. and to his Disciples. 24. Thomas his incred
litie and confession.

THe first day of the week cõmeth Marie Magdal
early when it was yet darke, vnto the Sepulch
and seeth the stone taken away from the Sepulchre.

2 Then shee runneth, and commeth to Simon P
ter, and to the other Disciple whom Iesus loued, a
saith vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out
the Sepulchre, and wee know not where they h
laide him.

3 Peter therefore went foorth, and that other D
ciple, and came to the Sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together, and the other Disc
did out-run Peter, and came first to the Sepulchre.

5 And hee stouping downe, and looking in, saw
linnen cloathes lying, yet went hee not in.

6 Then commeth Simõ Peter following him, and w
into the Sepulchre, and seeth the linnen cloathes lie

7 And the Napkin that was about his head, not
ing with the linnen cloathes, but wrapped together
a place by it selfe.

8 Th

Then went in also that other Disciple, which came
st to the Sepulchre, and hee saw and believed.
9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that hee
ust rise againe from the dead.
10 Then the Disciples went away againe vnto
eir owne home.
11 ¶ But Marie stoode without at the Sepulchre,
eping: and as shee wept, shee stouped downe, and
ked into the Sepulchre,
12 And seeth two Angels in white, sitting, the one
the heade, and the other at the feete, where the bodie
Jesus had layen.
13 And they say vnto her, Woman, why weepest
u? Shee saieth vnto them, Because they haue ta-
naway my Lord, and I know not where they haue
ed him.
14 And when shee had thus said, Shee turned her-
lfe backe, and sawe Jesus standing, and knewe not
at it was Jesus.
15 Jesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest
u? Whom seekest thou? Shee supposing him to bee
e Gardiner, saith vnto him, Sir if thou hast borne
m hence, tell mee where thou hast laide him, and I
ll take him away.
16 Jesus saith vnto her, Marie, Shee turned her-
lfe, and saith vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say,
aster.
17 Jesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not, For I am
t yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethre,
d say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and to
ur Father, and to my God, and your God.
18 Marie Magdalene came and tolde his Dis-
ples that shee had seene the Lord, and that hee had

spoken these thinges vnto her.

19 ¶ Then the same day at euening, being the first day of the weeke, when the doores were shute, where the Disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes came Iesus and stood in the midst, and saith vnto them, Peace bee vnto you,

20 And when hee had so said, hee shewed vnto them his hands and his side, Then were the Disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace bee vnto you: As my Father hath sent mee, euen so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, hee breathed on them, and saith vnto them, Receiue ye the holie Ghost.

23 Whose soeuer sins ye remite they are remitted vnto them; and whose soeuer sinnes yee retaine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other Disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord, But hee said vnto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nayles, and put my finger into the print of the nayles, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleiue.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, againe the Disciples were within, and Thomas with them: Then came Iesus the doores being shut, and stode in the midst, and said, Peace bee vnto you.

27 Then saith hee to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, And behold mine hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and bee not faithles but beleiuing.

28 And Thomas answered, and said vnto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Iesus

29 Jesus saith vnto him, Thomas, because thou
st sæne mee, thou hast belieued: blessed are they that
ne not sæne, and yet haue belieued.
30 ¶ And many other signes truelie did Jesus in
presence of his Disciples, which art not written in
is Booke.
31 But these are written that yee might belieue,
at Jesus is the Christ the Sonne of God, and that
lieuing, yee might haue life through his Name.

## CHAP. XXI.

Christ appeareth to his Disciples, being a fishing. 12
He dineth with them; 15. Commandeth Peter to
feede his Lambes. 18. Foretelleth Peters death.

AFter these things Jesus shewed himselfe againe
to the Disciples, at the Sea of Tiberias, and on
is wise shewed hee himselfe:
2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas
lled Didymus, & Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and
e Sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his Disciples,
3 Simon Peter saith vnto them, I goe a fishing.
hey say vnto him, Wee also goe with thee. They
ent forth and entred into a ship immediatelie, and
at Night they caught nothing.
4 And when the morning was nowe come, Jesus
ode on the shore: but the Disciples knew not that it
as Jesus.
5 Then Jesus saith vnto them, Children, haue yee
ny Meate? They answered him, No.
6 And hee saith vnto them, Cast the Net on the
ight side of the shippe, and yee shall finde. They cast
herefore, and now they were not able to draw, for the
multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that Disciple whom Iesus loued sa
vnto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon P
heard that it was the Lord, hee girt his fisher coate
to him, (for hee was naked) and did cast himselfe
to the Sea.

8 And the other Disciples came in a little ship,
they were not farre from land, but as it were two
dreth cubites) dragging the Nette with fishes.

9 Assone then as they were come to land, they
a fire of coales there, and fish laid thereon, and bre

10 Iesus saieth vnto them, Bring of the fish, w
yee haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter went vp, and drewe the Nett
land full of great fishes an hundreth and fiftie & th
and for all there were so manie, yet was not the n
broken.

12 Iesus saith vnto them, Come and dine. A
none of the Disciples durst aske him, Who art tho
knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then commeth, and taketh bread, a
giueth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shew
himselfe to his Disciples, after that hee was risen fr
the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus saith to S
mon Peter, Simon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou m
more than these? Hee saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, th
knowest that I loue thee. Hee saieth vnto him, Fe
my Lambes.

16 Hee saieth to him againe, the second time, Si
mon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou mee? Hee saieth vn
to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. H
saith vnto him, Feede my Sheepe.

17 H

17 Hæ saieth vnto him the third time, Simon, son Jonas, loueſt thou mæ? Peter was grieued because said vnto him the third time, Loueſt thou mæ? And said vnto him, Lord, thou knoweſt all things, thou oweſt that I loue thæ. Jeſus saieth vnto him. Fæd y Shæpe.

18 Verilie, verilie I say vnto thæ, When thou waſt ung, thou girdedſt thy ſelfe, and walked whither ou wouldeſt: but when thou ſhalt bæ olde, thou ſhalt etch forth thine hands, and another ſhall girde thæ, d carie thæ whither thou wouldeſt not.

19 This ſpak he, ſignifying by what death hæ ſhuld orifie God. And when hæ had ſpoken this, hæ saith to him, Follow mæ.

20 Then Peter turning about, sæth the Diſciple hom Jeſus loued, following, which alſo leaned on s breaſt at Supper, and ſaid, Lord, which is hæ that trayeth thee?

21 Peter sæing him, saieth to Jeſus, Lord, and hat ſhall this man doe?

22 Jeſus saieth vnto him, If I will that hee tarie l I come, what is that to thæ, Follow thou mæ.

23 Then went that saying abroad among the bre- ren, that that Diſciple ſhould not die: yet Jeſus ſaid t vnto him, Hee ſhalt not die: but, If I will that hee rie till I come, what is that to thæ?

24 This is the Diſciple which teſtifieth of theſe ings, and wrote thoſe thinges, and wæ know that is teſtimonie is true.

25 And there are alſo manie other thinges which eſus did, the which if they ſhould bæ written euerie ne, I ſuppoſe that euen the world it ſelfe ſhould not ontaine the Bookes that ſhould bæ written. Amen.

# THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

## CHAP. I.

1. A repetition of part of Christes historie before after his passion. 9. Of his ascension. 14. The postles choose Mathias in the place of Iudas.

THE former treatise haue I made, Theophilus, of all that Iesus bega both to doe and teach.

2 Until the day in which hee was ken vp, after that hee through the h Ghost had giuen commandements vnto the Apost whom hee had chosen.

3 To whom also hee shewed himselfe aliue after passion, by manie infallible proofes, being seene of t fourtie dayes, and speaking of the thinges pertei to the kingdome of God.

4 And beeing assembled together with them, c manded them that they should not depart from Hi salem, but waite for the promise of the Father, wh saith hee, yee haue heard of mee.

5 For Iohn truelie baptized with water, but shall bee baptized with the holie Ghost, not ma dayes hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, t asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time store againe the kingdoome to Israel?

7 And hee said vnto them It is not you to know times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 But yee shall receiue power after that the h Ghost is come vpon you, and yee shall bee wit

to mee, both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in maria, and vnto the vttermost part of the earth.

9 And when hee had spoken these thinges, while ye beheld, hee was taken vp, and a cloude receiued out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastlie toward hea- n, as hee went vp, behold, two men stode by them white apparell.

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand gazing vp into heauen? This same Iesus is taken from you into heauen, shall so come, in like manner ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the ount called Olinet, which is from Hierusalem, a abbath dayes journey

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into vpper roome, where abode both Peter and James, nd John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartho- mew, and Matthew, James the son of Alpheus, and imon Zelotes, and Iudas the brother of Iames.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer nd supplication, with the women, and Marie the Mo- er of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes, Peter stood vp in the mids f the Disciples, and said, (The number of names to- ether were about an hundreth and twentie.)

16 Men and brethren, the Scripture must needes aue bene fulfilled, which the holy Ghost, by the mouth Dauid, spake before concerning Iudas, which was uide to them that toke Iesus.

17 For hee was numbred with vs, and had obtained art of this Ministerie.

18 Now this man purchased a fielde with the re-

ward

ward, of iniquitie, and falling head-long, hæ burſt
ſunder in the mids, and all his bowels guſhed out.
19 And it was knowne to all the dwellers at Hie-
ſalem, inſomuch as that fielde is called in their pro-
tongue Aceldama, that is to ſay, The field of blood.
20 For it is written in the Booke of Pſalmes, Let
his habitation bæ deſolate, and let no man dwell
therein: and his Biſhopricke let another take.
21 Wherefore of theſe men, which haue compan-
with vs all the time that the Lord Jeſus went in
out among vs.
22 Beginning from the baptiſme of Iohn vnto the
ſame day that he was taken vp from vs, muſt one
ordained to bæ a witneſſe with vs of his Reſurrecti-
23 And they appointed two, Joſeph called Bar-
bas, who was ſurenamed Juſtus, and Matthias.
24 And they prayed, and ſaid, Thou Lord, whi-
knoweſt the heartes of all men, ſhew whither of th-
two thou haſt choſen.
25 That hæ may take part of this Miniſterie a-
Apoſtleſhip, from which Judas by tranſgreſſion fel-
that hæ might goe to his owne place.
26 And they gaue forth their lots, and the lot fe-
vpon Matthias, and hæ was numbred with the elev-
Apoſtles.

## CHAP. II.

1. The Apoſtles filled with the holie Ghoſt, and ſpea-
king diuerſe languages, are admired by ſome, an-
derided by others. 14. Whom Peter diſproueth
37. Hee baptizeth thoſe that were conuerted.

AND when the day of Pentecoſt was fullie come
they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And

2 And suddenlie there came a sound from heauen, of a ru hing mightie wind, and it filled all the house here they were sitting.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, e as of fire, and it sat vpon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and gan to speake with other tongues, as the Spirite e them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, out men, out of euerie Nation vnder heauen.

6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multi- os came together, & were confounded, because that erie man heard them speake in his owne language.

7 And they were all amazed, and marueiled, saying e to another, Behold, are not all these which speake, alilleans.

8 And how heare wee euerie man in his own tongue herein wee were borne.

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the ellers of Mesopotamia, and in Iudea, and Cappa- cia, in Pontus, and Asia.

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the rts of Lybia, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, ewes and Proselites.

11 Cretes, and Arabians, wee doe heare them speak our tongues the wonderfull workes of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, aying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking, saide, These men are full of ew wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing vp, with the eleuen, lift p his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea and all yee that dwell at Hierusalem, bee this knowne

vnto

vnto you, and hearken to my wordes:

15 For these are not dronken, as yee suppose, [illegible] it is but the third houre of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the [illegible] phet Joel.

17 And it shall come to passe, that in the last d[illegible] (saith God) I will powre out my Spirite vp[illegible] flesh: and your Sonnes and your Daughters shal[illegible] phesie, and your young men shall see visions and [illegible] olde men shall dreame dreames.

18 And on my Seruantes, and on mine [illegible] Maidens, I will powre out in these dayes, of my [illegible] rit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, [illegible] signes in the earth beneath; blood and fire and va[illegible] of smoake.

20 The Sunne shall bee turned into darkenesse, [illegible] the Moone into blood, before that great and notable [illegible] of the Lord come.

21 And it shall come to passe, that whosoeuer [illegible] call on the Name of the Lord, shall bee saued.

22 Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes, Jesus [illegible] Nazareth, a Man approued of God among you, [illegible] Miracles, wonders, and signes, which God did [illegible] him in the midst of you, as yee your selues also knew:

23 Him being deliuered by the determinate co[illegible] sell and foreknowledge of God, yee haue taken, and [illegible] wicked hands haue crucified and slaine.

24 Whom God hath raised vp, hauing loosed [illegible] paines of death: because it was not possible that [illegible] should bee holden of it.

25 For Dauid speaketh concerning him, I fores[illegible] the Lord alwayes before my face, for hee is on [illegible] right

ght hand, that I should not bee moued.
26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce & my tongue
was glad: Moreouer also my flesh shall rest in hope:
27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in hell, nei-
ther wilt thou suffer thine holie One to see corruption.
28 Thou hast made knowne to mee the wayes of life,
and shalt make mee full of ioy with thy countenance.
29 Men and brethren, let mee freelie speake vnto you
of the Patriarch Dauid, that is both dead and buried,
and his Sepulchre is with vs vnto this day.
30 Therefore beeing a Prophet, and knowing that
God had sworne with an oath to him, that of the fruite
of his loynes according to the flesh, hee would raise vp
Christ, to sit on his Throne:
31 Hee seeing this before, spake of the resurrection
of Christ, that his Soule was not left in hell, neither
his flesh did see corruption.
32 This Iesus, hath God raised vp, whereof wee
are all witnesses.
33 Therefore beeing by the right hand of God exal-
ted, and hauing receiued of the Father the promise of
the holie Ghost, hee hath shedde forth this, which yee
now see and heare.
34 For Dauid is not ascended into the heauenes, but
he saith himselfe. The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit
thou on my right hand.
35 Until I make thy foes thy footestoole.
36 Therefore, let all the house of Israel know assu-
redlie, that God hath made that same Iesus whom yee
haue crucified, both Lord, and Christ.
37 ¶ Now whē they heard this, they were pricked in
their heart, and saide vnto Peter, and to the rest of the
Apostles, Men and brethren, What shall wee doe?

38 Then

38 Then Peter saide vnto them, Repent, and
baptized euerie one of you, in the Name of Ie
Christ, for the remission of sinnes, and yee shall rec
the gift of the holie Ghost.

39 For the promise is vnto you, and to your childr
and to all that are a far off, euen as manie as the L
our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did hee testifie
erhort, saying, Saue your selues from this vntow
generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladlie receiued his wor
were baptized: and the same day there were added
to them about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastlie in the Apostles
ctrine & fellowship, & in breaking of bread, & in prayer

43 And feare came vpon euerie Soule: and ma
wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beliued were together, and had
thinges common.

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and part
them to all men, as euerie man had nede.

46 And they continuing daylie with one accord
the Temple, and breaking of bread from house to house
did eate their Meate with gladnesse, and singlenesse
heart.

47 Praising God, and hauing fauour with all th
people. And the Lord added to the Church daylie such
as should bee saued.

## CHAP. III.

1. Peter with Iohn restored a lame man to his feete.
12. How the cure was wrought. 13. The people are
reprehended. 19. and exhorted to repentance.

CHAP.

## CHAP. III.

Dw Peter & John wẽt vp together into the Temple at the houre of prayer, being the ninth houre.

And a certaine man, lame from his Mothers be, was caried, whom they laide dayly at the gate Temple, which is called, Beautifull, to aske s of them, that entered into the Temple.

Who seeing Peter and John about to goe into the ple, asked an almes.

Peter fastening his eyes vpon him, with John, Looke on vs.

And hee gaue heede vnto them, expecting to re- something of them.

Then Peter saide, Siluer and gold haue I none, uch as I haue, giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus ll of Nazareth, Rise vp and walke.

nd he tooke him by the right hand, & lift him vp: & diately his feete & ancle bones receiued strength.

nd hee leaping vp, stood, & walked and entred with into the Tẽple, walking & leaping & praising God.

And all the people saw him walking and praising

And they knew that it was hee which sate for s at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they filled with wonder and amazement at that which apened vnto him.

And as the lame man which was healed, held Pe- John, all the people came together vnto them in ch, that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

¶ And whẽ Peter saw it, hee answered vnto the e, Ye men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or looke ye so earnestlie on vs, as though by our own r holinesse, we had made this man to walke?

The God of Abraham, & of Isaac, and of Iacob,

the

the God of our Fathers hath glorified his Son Ie
whom yee deliuered vp, and denied him in the pre
of Pilate, when hee was determinate to let him g
14 But yee denied the holie One, and the Iust,
desired, a Murtherer to bee granted vnto you.
15 And killed the Prince of life, whom God
raised from the dead; whereof yee are witnesses.
16 And his Name through faith in his Name
made this man strong, whome yee see and know:
the faith which is by him, hath giuen him this p
soundnesse in the presence of you all.
17 And now brethren, I wot that through i
rance yee did it, as did also your Rulers.
18 But those things which God before hath sh
by the mouth of all his Prophetes, that Christ s
suffer, hee hath so fulfilled.
19 ¶ Repent yee therefore, and bee conuerted
your sinnes may bee blotted out when the times o
freshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.
20 And hee shall send Iesus Christ, which b
was preached vnto you.
21 Whom the Heauen must receiue, vntil
times of restitution of all thinges, which God
spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophetes
the world began.
22 For Moses truelie saide, vnto the Father
Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto y
your brethren, like vnto mee; him shall yee heare
things whatsoeuer hee shall say vnto you.
23 And it shall come to passe that euerie
which will not heare that Prophet, shall bee dest
from among the people.
24 Yea, and all the Prophets from Samuel,

se that follow after, as many as haue spoken, haue
ewise foretold of these dayes.
25 Yee are the children of the Prophetes, and of the
ouenant which God made with our fathers, saying
to Abraham. and in thy Seede shall all the kinreds
the earth bee blessed.
26 Unto you first, God hauing raised vp his Son
sus, sent him to blesse you, in turning away euerie
e of you from his iniquities.

## CHAP. IIII.

The Rulers offended with Peters Sermon. 3. impri-
son him and Iohn. 5. They examine them. 8. Pe-
ers boldnesse. 13. They are commanded to preach
no more in Christs Name.

1 AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priestes
and the captaine of the Temple, and the Sadu-
s came vnto them,
2 Being grieued that they taught the people, & prea-
d through Iesus the Resurrection from the dead.
3 And they laide handes on them, and put them in
e vnto the next day: for it was now euentide.
4 Howbeit manie of them which heard the worde,
eued, and the number of the men was about fiue
usand.
5 ¶ And it came to passe on the Morrow, that
r Rulers, and Elders, and Scribes,
6 And Annas the high Priest, and Caiaphas, and
n, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kin-
of the high Priestes, were gathered together at
erusalem.
7 And when they had set them in the midst, they as-
, By what power or by what Name haue yee done
s?

8 Then Peter filled with the holie Ghost, saide vnto them, Yee Rulers of the people and Elders of Israel,

9 If wee this day bee examined of the good deede done to the impotent man, by what meanes he is made whole.

10 Bee it knowne vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, whom yee crucified, whom God raised from the dead, euen by him doeth this man stand heere before you, whole.

11 This is the stone which was set at naught of you buildiers, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there Saluation in anie other: for there is none other Name vnder heauen giuen among men whereby wee must bee saued.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and John, and perceiued that they were vnlearned and ignorant men, they marueiled, and they took knowledge of them, that they had beene with Iesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to goe out of the Counsell, they conferred among themselues,

16 Saying, What shall wee doe to these men? for that indeede a notable Miracle hath beene done by them, is manifested to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and wee cannot denie it.

17 But that it spread no farther among the people, let vs straitlie threaten them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 And they called them, and commaunded them not to speake at all, nor teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and John answered, and saide vnto

em, whether it bee right in the sight of God to hear-
en vnto you, more than vnto God, iudge yee.
20 For wee cannot but speake the things which we
aue seene and heard.
21 So when they had further threatned them they
t them goe, finding nothing how they might punish
em, because of the people: for all men glorified God
r that which was done.
22 For the man was about fourtie yeeres olde, on
hom this Miracle of healing was shewed.
23 ¶ And being let goe, they went to their owne
mpanie and reported all that the chiefe Priestes and
lders had said vnto them.
24 And when they heard that, they lift vp their
oyce to God with one accord, and said, Lord thou art
od which hast made heauen and earth, and the Sea,
nd all that in them is.
25 Who by the mouth of thy Seruant Dauid hast
id, Why did the Heathen rage, and the people ima-
ne vaine things?
26 The Kings of the earth stood vp, and the Rulers
ere gathered together against the Lord, and against
s Christ.
27 For of a trueth, against thine holy Child Iesus,
hom thou hast anointed, both Herode and Pontious
ilate with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel,
ere gathered together.
28 For to doe whatsoeuer thine hand and thy coun-
l determined before to bee done.
29 And now Lord, behold, their threatnings, and
ant vnto thy Seruants, that with all boldnesse they
ay speake thy word.
30 By stretching forth thine hand to heale: and

that signes and wonders may bee done by the Name thine holie Childe Iesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was sh ken where they were assembled together, & they wo all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the wo of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that believed, wer of one heart, and of one soule: Neither saide anie them, that ought of the thinges which hee possesse was his owne, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles wi nesse of the Resurrection of the Lord Iesus, and gr grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lack For as many as were possessours of lands, or house sold them, & brought the prices of the things y were s

35 And laid them downe at the Apostles feete: A distribution was made vnto euery man according hee had neede.

36 And Ioses, who by the Apostles was surnam Barnabas (which is beeing interpreted, The sonne consolation) a Leuite, and of the countrie of Cypr

37 Hauing land, solde it, and brought the mon and laide it at the Apostles feete.

## CHAP. V.

1. 10. Ananias and Sapphira fall down dead. 12. T Apostles worke many miracles. 18. They are imp foned, 19. deliuered by an Angel. 33. in danger bee killed, but Gamaliel keepeth them aliue.

BUt a certaine man, named Ananias, with S phira his wife, solde a possession.

2 And kept backe part of the price, his wife b bee

eeing priuie to it, and brought a certaine part, and
aide it at the Apostles feete.

3 But Peter saide, Ananias, Why hath Sathan
lled thine heart to lie to the holie Ghost? and to keepe
acke part of the price of the Land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine owne? And
fter it was solde, was it not in thine owne power?
Why hast thou conceiued this thing in thine heart?
Thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell downe,
nd gaue vp the ghost: and great feare came on all
hem that heard these thinges.

6 And the young men arose, wound him vp, and
arried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three houres after,
hen his wife, not knowing what was done, came in,

8 And Peter saide vnto her, Tell mee whether yee
olde the land for so much. And shee said, Yea, for
o much.

9 Then Peter said vnto her, How is it that yee haue
greed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord, Be-
old, the feete of them which haue buried thine husband,
re at the doore, and shall carrie thee out.

10 Then fell shee downe straightway at his feete,
nd yelded vp the ghost: And the young men came
n, and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried
er by her husband.

11 And great feare came vpon all the Church, and
pon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the Apostles, were many
ignes and wonders wrought among the people. (And
hey were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man ioyne himselfe to

them: But the people magnified them:
14 And beleuers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women)
15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sicke into the streetes, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by, might ouershadow some of them.
16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits: and they were healed euerie one.
17 ¶ Then the high Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him, (which is the Sect of the Sadducees) and were all filled with indignation.
18 And laide their hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.
19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison dores, and brought them forth, and said,
20 Goe, stand and speake in the Temple to the people all the words of this life.
21 And when they heard that, they entred into the Temple early in the Morning, & taught: but the high Priest came, and they that were with him, & called the Counsell together and all the Senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to haue them brought.
22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and told.
23 Saying, The prison truely found we shut with all safetie, and the Keepers standing without before the dores, but when we had opened, we found no man within.
24 Now when the high Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the chiefe Priests heard these things

ey doubted of them wherevnto this would grow.
25 Then came one, and tolde them, saying, Behold,
e men whome yee put in prison are standing in the
emple, and teaching the people.
26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and
ought them without violence: (For they feared the
ople, lest they should haue bene stoned.)
27 And when they had brought them, they set them
for the Counsell, and the high Priest asked them,
28 Saying, Did not we straitly commaund you,
at you should not teach in this Name? And beholde,
e haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and in-
nd to bring this mans blood vpon vs.
29 ¶ Then Peter, and the other Apostles answered,
d said, We ought to obey God rather than man.
30 The God of our fathers raised vp Iesus, whom
e slew, and hanged on a tree.
31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand, to bee
Prince and a Sauiour, for to giue repentance to I-
rael, and forgiuenesse of sinnes.
32 And we are his witnesses of these thinges, so is
lso the holy Ghost whom God hath giuen to them that
ey him.
33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the
art, and tooke counsell to slay them.
34 Then stood there vp one in the counsell, a Pha-
see, named Gamaliel, a Doctour of Law, had in re-
utation among all the people, and commanded to put
e Apostles forth a little space.
35 And said vnto them, Ye men of Israel, take
ede to your selues, what ye intend to doe as touching
ese men.
36 For before these dayes rose vp Theudas, boa-

king himselfe to bee some bodie, to whom a num
of men about foure hundreth joyned themselues: h
was slaine, and all, as manie as obeyed him, w
scattered and brought to nought.

37 After this man, rose vp Judas of Galilee, in
dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people a
him: hee also perished, and all, euen as manie as obe
him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say vnto you, Refraine from th
men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or
worke bee of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it bee of God, ye cannot ouerthrow
lest haplie yee bee found to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had
led the Apostles, and beaten them, they commaun
that they should not speake in the Name of Jesus
let them goe.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of
Counsell, rejoycing that they were counted wor
to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And daylie in the Temple, and in euerie hou
they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

## CHAP. VI.

1, The Apostles care for the poore, and for preachi
the word. Seuen men chosē for Deacons. 5. of wh
Steuen is one. 12. who is taken. 13. & falsely accus

AND in those dayes, whē the number of the Di
ples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring
the Grecians against the Hebrewes, because their
dowes were neglected in the daylie Ministration.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the D
ciples vnto them, and saide, It is not reason that

ld leaue the word of God, and serue Tables.
Wherefore brethren looke yée out among you se-
men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and
edome, whom wée may appoint ouer this businesse.
But wée will giue our selues continually to pra-
and to the Ministerie of the word.
¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude,
they chose Steuen, a man full of faith, and of the
Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor,
Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte
ntioch.
Whom they set before the Apostles: and when
had prayed, they laide their hands on them.
And the word of God increased, and the number
e Disciples multiplied in Hierusalem greatlie,
a great companie of the Priestes were obedient to
faith.
And Steuen full of faith and power, did great
ders and miracles among the people.
¶ Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue,
ich is called the Synagogue of the Libertines, and
enians and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia,
of Asia, disputing with Steuen.
And they were not able to resist the wisedome
the Spirit by which hée spake.
Then they suborned men which saide, Wée haue
d him speake blasphemous words against Moses,
against God.
And they stirred vp the people, and the Elders,
the Scribes, and came vpon him, and caught him,
brought him to the Counsell,
And set vp false witnesses, which said, This man
eth not to speake blasphemous wordes, against

this

this holy place, and the Law.

14 For wee haue heard them say, That this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customes which Moses deliuered vs.

15 And all that sate in the Counsell, looked stedfastly on him, saw his face, as it had been the face of an Angel.

## CHAP. VII.

1. Steuen answereth to his accusation. 51. He reprehendeth the peoples rebellion and murder of Christ. 54. Therevpon they stone him to death.

THen said the high Priest, Are these things so?

2 And hee saide, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken: That God of Glorie appeared vnto our father Abraham, when hee was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said vnto him, Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy Kinred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came hee out of the land of the Chaldees, and dwelt in Charren: and from thence when his father was dead, hee remoued him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to set his foote on: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession and to his seede after him, when as hee had no childe.

6 And God spake on this wise, That his seede should sojourne in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreate them euill foure hundreth yeeres.

7 And the Nation to whom they shall bee in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that shall

forth, and serue mee in this place.
And hee gaue him the couenant of Circumcision:
Abraham begate Isaac, and circumcised him
ght day: and Isaac begate Iacob, and Iacob be-
twelue Patriarchs.
And their Patriarchs moued with enuie, solde
him into Egypt: but God was with him.
And deliuered him out of all afflictions: and gaue
fauour and wisedome in the sight of Pharaoh,
of Egypt: and hee made him gouernour ouer E-
and all his house.
Now there came a dearth ouer all the land of E-
and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our Fa-
found no sustenance.
And when Iacob heard that there was corne in
t, hee sent out our fathers first,
And at the second time Ioseph was made known
brethren, and Iosephs kinred was made known
Pharaoh.
Then sent Ioseph, and called his Father Iacob
. and all his kinred, threescore & fiftæne soules.
So Iacob went downe into Egypt, and died, hee
ur fathers.
And were carryed ouer into Sichem, & laid in the
chre that Abraham bought for a summe of mo-
f the sonnes of Emor, the father of Sichem.
But when the time of the promise drew nigh,
God had sworne to Abraham, the people grewe
ultiplied in Egypt.
Till another king arose, which knew not Ioseph.
The same dealt subtillie with our kinred, and
ntreated our fathers, so that they cast out their
g children, to the end they might not liue.
In which time Moses was borne, and was

exceeding faire, and nourished vp in his father
three Moneths:

21 And when hee was cast out, Pharaohs d
tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedo
Egyptians, and was mightie in words and in

23 And when hee was full fourtie yeeres
came into his heart to visite his brethren the
of Israel.

24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he
ded him, and auenged him that was oppress
smote the Egyptian.

25 For hee supposed his brethren would h
derstode howe that God by his hande would
them, but they vnderstode not.

26 And ỹ next day he shewed himselfe vnto
they stroue, and would haue sette them at one
saying, Sirs, yee are brethren, Why doe ye
one another?

27 But hee that did his Neighbour wrong,
him away, saying, Who made thee a Ruler
Judge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill mee, as thou did the E
yesterday?

29 Then fledde Moses at this saying, an
stranger in the land of Madian, where hee bega
Sonnes.

30 And when fourtie yeeres were expyred, th
peared to him in the wildernesse of Mount Si
Angel of the Lord, in a flame of fire, in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, hee wondred at the
and as hee drew neare to behold it, the voyce of
came vnto him.

32

saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God
aham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Ja-
hen Moses trembled, and durst not behold.
Then said the Lord, to him, Put off thy shoes
thy foote: for the place where thou standest is ho-
ound.
I haue seene, I haue seene, the afflictions of my
which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their gro-
and am come downe to deliuer them: And nowe
I will send thee into Egypt.
This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who
the a Ruler and a Judge? the same did God send,
a Ruler and a deliuerer by the hands of the An-
hich appeared to him in the bush.
Hee brought them out, after he had shewed won-
nd signes in the Land of Egypt, and in the red
nd in the Wildernesse fourtie yeeres.
¶ This is that Moses which said vnto the chil-
of Israel, A Prophet shall the Lord your God
op vnto you of your brethren like vnto mee: him
ee heare.
This is hee that was in the Church in the wil-
e with the Angel, which spake to him in the
t Sinai: and with our fathers: who receiued the
Oracles to giue vnto vs.
To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust
om them, and in their heartes turned backe a-
into Egypt:
Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs gods to goe before
; as for this Moses which brought vs out of the
Egypt, wee wot not what is become of him.
And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offe-
rifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes

of

of their owne hands.

42 Then God turned, and gaue them vp to
the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the book
phets, O yee house of Israel, haue yee offered
slaine beastes and sacrifices, by the space of
yeres in the wildernesse?

43 Yea, yee tooke vp the Tabernacles of
and starre of your god Kamphan, figures wh
made to worship them: and I will carie you a
yond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the Tabernacle of wit
the wildernesse, as hee had appointed, speaking
Moses, that hee should make it according to
shion that hee had seene.

45 Which also our father that came after,
in with Iesus into the possession of the Ge
whom God draue out before the face of our fa
vnto the dayes of Dauid.

46 Who found fauour before God, and de
sinde a Tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 But Solomon built him an house.

48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in
ples made with hands, as saith the Prophet.

49 Heauen is my Throne, and earth is my
stoole: What house will yee builde mee saith the
Or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not mine hand made all these thing

51 ¶ Yee stif-necked and vncircumcised in
and eares, yee doe alwayes resist the holie Gh
your fathers did, so doe yee.

52 Which of the Prophetes haue not your
persecuted? And they haue slaine them which
before of the comming of the Iust One, of whe

bæne the betrayers and murderers:
who haue receiued the Law, by the disposition
gels, and haue not kept it.
¶ When they heard these thinges, they were
the heart, and they gnashed on him with their

But hee bæing full of the holie Ghost, loked vp
stlie into Heauen, and saw the glorie of God,
esus standing on the right hand of God.
And saide, Behold, I sæe the Heauens opened,
he Sonne of Man standing on the right hand of

Then they cryed out with a loude voyce, & stop-
eir eares, and ran vpon him, with one accord,
And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him:
e witnesses laid down their cloathes at a young
fæte, whose name was Saul.
And they stoned Steuen, calling vp on God,
g, Lord Iesus receiue my Spirit.
And hee knæled downe, and cryed with a loude
, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And
hæ had said this, hæ fell aslæepe.

## CHAP. VIII.

e Church is planted in Samaria by Philip, 14.
nfirmed, and enlarged by Peter and Iohn 26.
ilip is sent to baptize the Ethiopiane Eunuch.

d Saul was consenting vnto his death. And at
hat time there was a great persecution against
hurch which was at Hierusalem, and they were
ttered abroad, throughout the Regions of Iu-
and Samaria, except the Apostles.
And deuout men caried Steuen to his buriall,

and

and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul, hee made hauocke of the C
entring into euerie house, and hailing men an
men, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad
euerie where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the citie of S
ria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people with one accord gaue heed
those thinges which Philip spake, hearing and
the Miracles which hee did.

7 For vncleane spirites crying with loude
came out of manie that were possessed with the
many taken with palsies, and that were lame
healed.

8 And there was great ioye in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called S
which before time in the same citie vsed sorceri
bewitched the people of Samaria, giuing out th
selfe was some great one.

10 To whom they all gaue heede, from the
the greatest, saying, This man is the great
of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that
time hee had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they had beleiued Philip, pr
the things concerning the Kingdome of God, a
Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized bo
and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleiued also: and
hee was baptized, hee continued with Philip:
dered, beholding the miracles & signs which we

14 Now when the Apostles which were at

m, heard that Samaria had receiued the word of
, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.
5 Who when they were come downe, prayed for
, that they might receiue the holy Ghost.
(For as yet he was fallen vpon none of them: only
were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.)
7 Then laide they their hands on them, and they
ued the holy Ghost.
8 And when Simon sawe that through laying on
e Apostles hands, the holy Ghost was giuen, hee
ed them money.
Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whom-
r I lay hands, hee may receiue the holie Ghost.
But Peter saide vnto him, Thy Money perish
thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of
may bee purchased with Money.
Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter,
ne heart is not right in the sight of God.
Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and
God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may
giuen thee.
For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bit-
e, and in the bonde of iniquitie.
Then answered Simon, and saide, Pray yee to
rd for mee, that none of these thinges which yee
oken come vpon mee.
And they, when they had testified & preached the
of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, & preached
spel in many villages of the Samaritanes.
And the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip,
Arise, & goe toward the South, vnto the way
t downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which
t.

27 And hee arose, and went: and beholde, a m
Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authoritie under
dace Queene of the Ethiopians, who had the char
all her treasures, and had come to Hierusalem
worship.

+ 28 Was returning, and sitting in his Charet
read Esaias the Prophet.

+ 29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Goe nea
ioyne thy selfe to this Charet.

30 And Philip ranne thither to him, and
him read the Prophet Esaias, and said, Unders
thou what thou readest?

31 And hee saide, How can I, except some
should guide mee? And hee desired Philip, th
would come vp and sit with him.

32 The place of the Scripture which hee rea
this, Hee was ledde as a sheepe to the slaughter,
like a Lambe dumbe before the shearer, so open
not his mouth.

33 In his humiliation, his judgement was
away: and who shall declare his generation? f
life is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and
pray thee, of whom speakest the Prophet this,
selfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and beg
some Scripture, and preached vnto him Jesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they c
to a certaine water: and the Eunuch saide, S
is water, what doeth hinder mee to bee baptize

37 And Philip said, If thou beleuest with
heart, thou mayest. And hee answered, and s
lieue, that Jesus Christ is the Sonne of God.

38 And hee commanded the Charet to ſtand ſtill: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and hee baptized him.

39 And when they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip: that the Eunuch ſaw him no more: and he went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus, & paſſing thorow, he preached in all the cities, till hee came to Cæſarea.

## CHAP. IX.

Paul going toward Damaſcus, 4. is ſtricken downe to the earth, 10. is called to the Apoſtleſhip. 18. baptized by Ananias. 20. Hee preacheth Chriſt.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings & ſlaughter againſt the Diſciples of the Lord, went vnto the high Prieſt.

2 And deſireſt of him letters to Damaſcus to the Synagogues, that if hee found any of this way, whether they were men or women, hee might bring them bound vnto Hieruſalem.

3 And as hee iourneyed, he came neare Damaſcus, and ſuddenlie there ſhined round about him a light from heauen.

4 And hee fell to the Earth, and heard a voyce ſaying vnto him, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou mee?

5 And hee ſaid, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord ſaid, I am Jeſus whom thou perſecuteſt: It is hard for thee to kicke againſt the pricks.

6 And hee trembling and aſtonished, ſaide, Lord, what wilt thou haue mee to doe? And the Lord ſaide vnto him, Ariſe, and goe into the citie, and it ſhall bee told thee what thou muſt doe.

7 And the men which iourneyed with him, ſtood ſpeachleſſe,

speachlesse, hearing a voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his e
were opened, hee saw no man: but they led him by
hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And hee was three dayes without sight, and n
ther did eate, nor drinke.

10 ¶ And there was a certaine Disciple at Da
cus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a
sion, Ananias. And hee saide, Beholde, I am he
Lord.

11 And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe
the streete which is called Straight, and inquire in
house of Judas for one called Saul of Tarsus: for
hold, hee prayeth

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named An
as, comming in and putting his hand on him, that
might receiue his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard
manie of this man, how much euill hee had done t
Saincts at Hierusalem:

14 And heere hee hath authoritie from the
Priests, to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way, f
is a chosen vessell vnto mee, to beare my Name b
the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Isra

16 For I will shew him how great things he
suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred
the house, and putting his hands on him, said, B
Saul, the Lord (euen Jesus that appeared vnto thee
way as thou camest) hath sent mee, that thou mig
receiue thy sight and bee filled with the holy Gh

18 And immediatelie there fell from his e

had bene scales, and he receiued sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had receiued Meate, hee was strengthened. Then was Saul certaine dayes with the Disciples, which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he is the Sonne of God.

21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and said; Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this Name in Hierusalem? and came hither for that intent, that hee might bring them bound vnto the chiefe Priestes?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, proouing, that this is verie Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes toke counsell to kill him.

24 But their laying awaite was knowne of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the Disciples toke him by night, and let him downe by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe to the Disciples: but they were all afraide of him, and beleiued not that he was a Disciple.

27 But Barnabas toke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared vnto them how he had seene the Lord in the way, and that hee had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldlie at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And he was with them comming in, and going out at Hierusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the Name of the Lord

Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but t
went about to slay him:

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brou
him downe to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tar

31 Then had the Churches rest throughout all
dea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified,
walking in the feare of the Lord, and in the comfo
the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to passe, as Peter passed
rowout all quarters, he came down also to the Sai
which dwelt at Lydda:

33 And there hee found a certaine man, na
Aeneas, which had kept his bedde eight yeares,
was sicke of the Palsie.

34 And Peter said vnto him, Aeneas, Jesus Ch
maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And
arose immediatelie.

35 And all that dwelt in Lydda, and Saron,
him, and turned to the Lord.

36 Now there was at Joppa a certaine Disci
named Tabitha, which by interpretation is calle
cas: This woman was full of good workes, and al
deedes, which shee did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she
sicke and died: whom when they had washed,
laide her in an vpper Chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Jo
and the Disciples had heard that Peter was there
sent vnto him two men, desiring him, that hee
not delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose, and went with them:
hee was come, they brought him into the vpper
per: And all the Widowes stood by him weeping
the

wing the coates & garmentes which Dorcas made,
ile shée was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, knéeled downe,
prayed, and turning him to the bodie, said, Tabi-
, arise. And shée opened her eyes, and when shée
Peter, shée sate vp.

41 And hée gaue her his hand and lift her vp: and
en hée had called the Saincts and Widowes, pre-
ed her aliue.

42 And it was knowne throughout all Ioppa, and
ny beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that hée tarryed manie dayes
Ioppa, with one Simon a Tanner.

## CHAP. X.

Cornelius sendeth for Peter, 11. who by a vision, 15, 20. is taught not to dispise the Gentiles, 34. Peter preacheth. 44. The holie Ghost falleth on the hearers, 48. They are baptized.

1 There was a certaine man in Cesarea, called Corne-
lius, a Centuriõ of the band called the Italian bãd.

2 A deuout man and one that feared God with all
house, which gaue much almes to the people, and
ed to God alway.

3 Hée saw in a vision euidentlie about the ninth
re of the day, an Angel of God comming in to him,
saying vnto him, Cornelius,

4 And when hée looked on him, hée was afraid, & said,
at is it, Lord? And hée said vnto him, Thy prayers
y almes are come vp for a memoriall before God.

5 And now send men to Ioppa, and call for one Si-
, whose surname is Peter.

6 Hée lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner, whose

house, is by the Sea side; hee shall tell thee what
oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornel
was departed, hee called two of his household seruan
and a deuot Souldier of them that waited on him c
tinuallie:

8 And when hee had declared all these things
them, hee sent them to Ioppa.

9 On the Morrow as they went on their iour
and drew nigh vnto the Citie, Peter went vp vpo
house to pray about the sixt houre.

10 And hee became verie hungrie, and would
eaten, But while they made ready, he fell into a tr

11 And saw heauen opened, and a certaine v
descending vnto him, as it had beene a great k
knit at the foure corners, and let downe to the ea

12 Wherein were all manner of foure footed b
of the earth, and wilde beastes, and creeping thi
and foules of the aire.

13 And there came a voyce to him, Rise, Pe
kill, and eate.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lorde, for I haue
uer eaten anie thing that is common or vncleane.

15 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the se
time, What God hath cleansed, ỹ call not thou co

16 This was done thrise: and the vessell was
ued vp againe into heauen.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe, wha
vision which hee had seene, should meane, behold
men which were sent from Cornelius, had ma
quire for Simons house, and stode before the gat

18 And called, and asked whether Simon,
was surnamed Peter, were lodged there:

19 ¶ T

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the Spi-
t said vnto him, Behold, three men seeke thee.
20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe
ith them, doubting nothing: for I haue sent them.
21 Then Peter went downe to the men, which
ere sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold,
am hee whom yee seeke; what is the cause wherefore
e are come?
22 And they saide, Cornelius the Centurion, a iust
n and one that feareth God, and of good report a-
ng all the Nation of the Iewes, was warned from
d by an holie Angel, to send for thee in his house, and
eare words of thee.
23 Then called hee them in, and lodged them: And
the Morrow Peter went away with them, and cer-
ne brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.
24 And on the Morrow after they entred into Ce-
sea; and Cornelius waited for them, and had called
gether his kinsmen and neare friends.
25 And as Peter was comming in Cornelius met
m, and fell downe at his feete, and worshipped him.
26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp, I
selfe also am a man.
27 And as hee talked with him, hee went in, and
nd many that came together.
28 And hee said vnto them, Yee knowe how that it
n vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iew to keepe
mpanie or come vnto one of another Nation: but God
th shewed mee, that I should not call anie man com-
non or vncleane.
29 Therefore came I vnto you without gaine say-
, assoone as I was sent for, I aske therefore for
t intent yee haue sent for mee?

30 And

30 And Cornelius said, Foure dayes agoe, I
fasting vntill this houre, and at the ninth houre I
yed in mine house, and behold, a man stood before
in bright cloathing.

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard,
thine almes are had in remembrance in the sig
God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Si
whose surname is Peter, hee is lodged in the hou
one Simon a Tanner, by the Sea side, who wh
commeth shall speake vnto thee.

33 Immediatelie therefore I sent to thee,
thou hast well done, that thou art come. Now the
are wee all hære present before God, to hear
thinges that are commanded thæ of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said,
trueth I perceiue that God is no respecter of per

35 But in euerie Nation, hæ that feareth him,
worketh righteousenesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent vnto the childr
Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (hæ is
of all.)

37 That word (I say) you knowe which was
blished throughout all Iudea, and began from Ga
after the Baptisme which Iohn preached:

38 How God anointed Iesus of Nazareth wi
holie Ghost, and with power: who went about
good, and healing all that were oppressed of the
for God was with him.

39 And wæ are witnesses of all things which h
both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hieru
whom they slew, and hanged on a tree.

40 Him God raised vp the third day, and shew
openlie.

41

## CHAP. XI.

1 Not to all the people, but vnto witnesses chosen
e God euen to vs who did eate and drink with him
e hæ rose from the dead.
2 And hæ commanded vs to preach vnto the peo-
and to testifie that it is hæ which was ordained of
w hæ the Iudge of quicke and dead.
3 To him giue all the Prophetes witnesse, that
ugh his Name whosoeuer believeth in him, shall re-
e remission of sinnes.
4 ¶ While Peter yet spake these wordes, the ho-
Ghost fell on them which heard the word.
5 And they of the circumcision, which believed,
e astonished, as manie as came with Peter, be-
e that on the Gentiles also was powred out the
of the holie Ghost.
6 For they heard them speake with tongues, and
nifie God. Then answered Peter,
7 Can anie man forbide water, that these should
hæ baptized which haue received the holie Ghost
ell as wee?
8 And hæ commanded them to bee baptized in the
e of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarrie
ine dayes.

## CHAP. XI.

er accused for going in to the Gentiles. 5. maketh
is defence, 18. which accepted. 19. The Gospel
spread. 26. At Antioch the Disciples first called
Christians.

1 And the Apostles, and brethren that were in Iu-
dea, heard that the Gentiles had also receiued the
d of God.
2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem,
they

they that were of the circumcisiõ contended with
3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncir-
sed, and did eate with them.
4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the be-
ning, and expounded it by order vnto them, say-
5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and
traunce I saw a vision. A certaine vessell desce-
it had bene a great sheete, let downe from hea-
the foure corners, and it came euen to me.
6 Vpon the which when I had fastened mine
I considered, and saw foure footed beastes of the
and wilde beastes, and creeping thinges, and fo-
the aire.
7 And I heard a voyce, saying vnto me,
Peter, slay, and eate.
8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing comm-
vncleane hath at anie time entred into my mou-
9 But the voyce answered me againe from he-
What God hath cleansed, that call not thou com-
10 And this was done three times: and all
drawne vp againe into heauen.
11 And behold immediatelie there were thre-
alreadie come into the house where I was, sent
Cesarea vnto me.
12 And the Spirit bade me goe with them, no-
doubting. Moreouer these fiue brethren accomp-
me, and we entred into the mans house.
13 And he shewed vs how he had seene an
in his house, which stood and said vnto him, Send
to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is
14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou
thine house shall be saued.
15 And as I began to speake, the holie Ghos

hem, as on vs at the beginning.
16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, howe
hee said, John indeede baptized with water, but
shall bee baptized with the holy Ghost.
17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them the like gift
es did vnto vs, who beleeued on the Lord Iesus
ist: what was I that I could withstand God?
18 When they heard these thinges, they helde their
e, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also
e Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.
19 ¶ Now they which were scattered abroad, vp-
e persecution that arose about Steuen, trauailed
arre as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preа-
g the Lord, to none, but vnto the Iewes onlie.
20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cy-
: which when they were come to Antioch, spake
the Grecians, preaching the Lord Iesus.
21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and
eat number beleeued, and turned vnto the Lord.
22 ¶ Then tidinges of these thinges came vnto
ares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem: and
sent forth Barnabas, that hee should goe as farre
ntioch.
23 Who when hee came, and had seene the grace
od, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with
ole of heart they would cleaue vnto the Lord.
24 For hee was a good man, and full of the holy
and of faith: and much people was added vnto
ord.
25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to
Saul.
26 And when hee had found him, hee brought him
Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeere

they

they assembled themselues with the Church, & t
much people, and the Disciples were called Chri
rst in Antioch.

27 And in those dayes came Prophets from H
salem vnto Antioch.

28 And there stood vp one of them, named Aga
and signified by the Spirit that there should bee
dearth throughout all the world: which came to pa
the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the Disciples, euerie man accordi
his abilitie, determined to send releafe vnto the
then which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the E
by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

## CHAP. XII.

1. Herode persecuteth the Christians, killeth Ia
imprisoneth Peter, who is deliuered by an An
20. Herodes pride, and miserable death.

NOw about that time, Herode the king stre
forth his hands to vexe certaine of the Chur
2 And hee killed Iames the brother of Iohn,
the Sword.

3 And because hee saw that it pleased the Iewe
proceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were
dayes of vnleauened bread.

4 And when hee had apprehended him, hee pu
in prison, and deliuered him to foure quaternion
Souldiers to keepe him, intending after Eas
bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but p
was made without ceasing of the Church vnto
for him.

And when Herode would haue brought him forth, same night Peter was sleeping betweene two Soul-rs, bound with two chaines, and the Keepers before oore kept the prison.

7 And beholde the Angel of the Lorde, came vpon , and a light shined in the prison: and hee smote ter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise vp ckelie. And his chaines fell off from his hands.

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and de on thy Sandeles: And so hee did. And he saith vn-im, Cast thy garment about thee: and follow mee.

9 And hee went out, and followed him, and wist that it was true which was done by the Angel: but ught hee saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second rd, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto cite, which opened to them of his owne accord: and went out, and passed thorow one streete, and forth the Angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, hee said, I know that of a surtie, that the Lord hath sent Angel, and hath deliuered mee out of the hand of rode, and from all the expectation of the people of Iewes.

12 And when hee had considered the thing, hee came he house of Marie, the Mother of Iohn, whose sur-name was Marke, where manie were gathered toge-praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate, a mosell came to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when shee knew Peters voyce, shee opened he gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Pe-tood before the gate.

15 And

15 And they said vnto her, Thou art madde, ſ
ſhee conſtantlie affirmed that it was euen ſo, ſ
ſaid they. It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: & when they
opened the doore; and ſaw him, they were aſtoni

17 But hee beckning vnto them with the hand
hold their peace, declared vnto them how the Lo
brought him out of the priſon; And hee ſaid, Goe
theſe things vnto James and to the brethren. And
departed, and went into another place.

18 Now aſſoone as it was day, there was no ſ
ſtir among the Souldiers what was become of Pe

19 And when Herode had ſought for him, and f
him not, hee examined the Keepers, and comman
that they ſhould be put to death. And hee went do
from Judea to Ceſarea, and there abode.

20 ¶ And Herode was highlie diſpleaſed with
of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one acco
him, and hauing made Blaſtus the Kinges cham
laine their friend, deſired peace, becauſe their coun
was nouriſhed by the kinges countrey.

21 And vpon a ſet day, Herode arayed in roya
parell, ſate vpon his Throne, and made an Ora
vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a ſhoute, ſaying, It is
voyce of God, and not of a man.

23 And immediatelie the Angel of the Lord ſ
him, becauſe hee gaue not God the glorie, and hee
eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghoſt.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multi

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from H
ſalem when they had fulfilled their Miniſterie
tooke with them John, whoſe ſurname was Mar

CHA

Paul and Barnabas chosen to goe to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius *Paulus*, and Elymas the sorcerer. 14. Paul preacheth at Antioch. 42. The Gentiles beleeue, 45. The Iewes blaspheme.

NOw there were in the Church that was at Antioch, certaine Prophets and Teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius Cyrene and Manaen, which had been brought vp with Herode the Tetrach, and Saul.

As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate mee Barnabas and Saul for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

And when they had fasted and prayed, and laide their hands on them, they sent them away.

¶ So they beeing sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to their Minister.

And when they had gone thorow the Ile vnto Paphos, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, a Iew, whose name was Barjesus.

Which was with the Deputie of the countrey, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holie Ghost, set his eyes on him,

And said, O full of all subtiltie, and mischiefe, thou childe of the Deuill, thou enemie of all righteous-

nesse, wilt thou not cease to peruert the right wa
the Lord?

11 And nowe beholde the hand of the Lord is
thee, and thou shalt bee blind, not seeing the Sun
a season. And immediatelie there fell on him a
and a darkenesse, and hee went about seeking so
leade him by the hand.

12 Thē the Deputie, when hee saw what was
belieued, beeing astonished, at the doctrine of the

13 Now when Paul and his companie loosed
Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphilia: and
departing from them, returned to Hierusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga
came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the
gogue on the Sabbath day; and sat downe.

15 And after the reading of the Law and the
phets, the Rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto
saying, Yee men and brethren, if yee haue any
exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckned with his
said, Yen of Israel, & ye that feare God, giue au

17 The God of this people Israel, chose our f
and exalted the people when they dwelt as stra
in the land of Egypt, and with an high arme b
hee them out.

18 And about the time of fourtie yeeres suffe
their manners in the wildernesse.

19 And when hee had destroyed seuen Nation
land of Chanaan, hee diuided their land to them

20 And after that hee gaue vnto them Judges
the space of foure hundreth and fiftie yeares,
Samuell the Prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a king, and God
aue vnto them Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the
ibe of Benjamin, by the space of fourtie yeeres.
22 And when hee had removed him, hee raised vp
nto them Dauid to bee their King, to whom also hee
aue testimonie, and said, I haue found Dauid the son
f Jesse a man after mine owne heart, which shall
lfill all my will.
23 Of this mans seede hath God according to his
omise, raised vnto Israel a Sauiour, Jesus.
24 Whē John had first preached before his cōming
e baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.
25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom
inke ye that I am? I am not hee. But beholde, there
mmeth one after mee, whose shoes of his feete I am
t worthie to loose.
26 Men and brethren, children of the stocke of A-
aham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to
ou is the word of this Saluation sent.
27 For they that dwell at Hierusalem, and their
lers, because they knew him not nor yet the voyces
the Prophets which are reade euerie Sabbath day,
y haue fulfilled them in condemning him.
28 And though they found no cause of death in him,
t desired they Pilate that hee should bee slaine.
29 And when they had fulfiled all that was writ-
n of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and
e him in a Sepulchre.
30 But God raised him from the dead.
31 And hee was seene manie dayes of them, which
ne vp with him from Galilee to Hierusalem, who
his witnesses vnto the people.
32 And wee declare vnto you glad tidinges, how

that the promise which was made vnto the Fathers
33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their c
dren, in that hee hath raised vp Iesus againe, as
also written in the second Psalme, Thou art my
this day haue I begotten thee.
34 And concerning that hee raised vp him from
dead, now no more to returne to corruption, hee sai
this wise, I will giue you the sure mercie of Dau
35 Wherefore hee also saith in another Psal
Thou shalt not suffer thine holy One to see corrup
36 For Dauid after hee had serued his owne g
ration by the will of God, fell on sleepe, and was
vnto his Fathers, and saw corruption.
37 But hee whom God raised againe, saw no
ruption.
38 ¶ Bee it knowne vnto you therefore men
brethren, that through this man is preached vnto
the forgiuenesse of sinnes.
39 And by him all that beleiue, are iustified from
things, from which yee could not bee iustified by
Law of Moses.
40 Beware therefore, least that come vpon
which is spoken of in the Prophets.
41 Behold, yee dispisers, and wonder and per
for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which
shall in no wise beleiue, though a man should decla
vnto you.
42 And when the Iewes were come out of the
nagogue, the Gentiles besought that these wo
might bee preached to them the next Sabbath.
43 Now when the congregation was broken
many of the Iewes and religious Proselytes f
lowed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them
sw

ded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the nert Sabbath day came almost the
hole citie together, to heare the word of God.

45 But whē the Iewes saw the multitudes, they were
led with enuy, and spake against those things which
ere spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

46 Then Saul and Barnabas wared bolde, and
ide, It was necessarie that the worde of God should
st haue bæne spoken vnto you: but seeing yee put it
m you, and judge your selues vnworthie of everla-
ng life, loe, wæ turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, saying, I
ne set thee to bee a light of the Gentiles, that thou
ouldest bee for Saluation vnto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were
ad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many
ere ordained to eternall life, believed.

49 And the word of the Lord was published thorow-
t all the Region.

50 But the Iewes stirred vp the deuout and honou-
ble women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and rai-
persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and ex-
'ed them out of their coasts.

51 But they shooke off the dust of their feete against
m, and came vnto Iconium.

52 And the Disciples were filled with joye, and
th the holie Ghost.

## CHAP. XIIII.

Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 7. Paul healing a
reeple, they are reputed gods. 26. Paul is stoned.
1. They passed through diuerse Churches. 26. and
eturned to Antioch.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they we
both together into the Synagogue of the Iew
and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iew
and also of the Grækes, believed.

2 But the vnbelieuing Iewes stirred vp the G
tiles, and made their mindes euill affected against
brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking bo
in the Lord, which gaue testimonie vnto the word
his grace, and granted signes and wonders to bee
by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the citie was diuided:
part held with the Iewes, and part with the Apost

5 And when there was an assault made both of
Gentiles, and also of the Iewes with their Rule
vse them dispitefullie, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra
Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the Region
lyeth round about.

7 And there they preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ And there sate a certaine man at Lystra,
potent of his fæte, bæing a cræple from his mo
wombe, who neuer had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speake, who stedfastli
holding him, & perceiuing ỳ hee had faith to bee h

10 Said with a loude voyce, Stand vpright o
fæte, and hæ leaped and walked,

11 And when the people sawe what Paul had
they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speach of L
onia, the gods are come downe to vs in the likene
men.

12 And they called Barnabas Iupiter, and
Mercurius, because hæ was the chiefe speaker.

13

13 Then the priestes of Iupiter, which was before
ir citie, brought oxen and garlands vnto the gates,
would haue done sacrifice with the people.
14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas and
ul heard of, they rent their cloathes, and ranne in
ong the people, crying out,
15 And saying, Sirs, why doe yée those thinges?
e are also men of like passions with you, and
ch vnto you, that yee should turne from these vanie
, vnto the liuing God, which made heauen and
h, and the sea, and all thinges that are therein.
16 Who in times passe, suffered all Nations to
ke in their owne wayes.
17 Neuertheless, hee left not himselfe without wit-
e, in that hée did good, and gaue vs raine from heae
and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food
gladnesse.
18 And with these sayinges scarce restrained they
people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.
19 ¶ And there came thither certaine Iewes from
ioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, and
ing stoned Paul, drewe him out of the citie, suppo-
hée had bene dead.
20 Howbeit, as the Disciples stode round about
, hée rose vp, and came into the citie, and the next
hée departed with Barnabas to Derbe.
21 And when they had preached the Gospel to that
e, and had taught many, they returned againe to
ra, and to Iconium, and Antioch.
22 Confirming the soules of the Disciples, and ex-
ing them to continue in the faith, & that wee must
ugh much tribulatiõ enter into ỹ kingdom of God.
23 And when they had ordained them Elders in

euerie Church, and had prayed with fasting, they c
mended them to the Lord, on whom they beleeued.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pi
they came to Pamphilia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Pe
they went downe into Attalia.

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence
had bene recommended to the grace of God, fo
worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathere
Church together, they rehearsed all that God ha
with them, and how hee had opened the dore of
vnto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the
ciples.

## CHAP. XV.

1, Dissention about circumcision. 6, The Apo
consult about it. 22, Their determination.
Paul and Barnabas contend, and part asunder.

AND certaine men which came downe from
dea, taught the brethren, & said, Except ye b
cumcised after manner of Moses, ye cannot be s

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no
dissention and disputation with them, they dete
ned that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine oth
them, should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Ap
and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the Ch
they passed throw Phenice and Samaria, declarin
conuersion of the Gentiles, and they caused great
vnto all the Brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem,

e receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles, and
ers, and they declared all thinges that God had
with them.

5 But there rose vp certaine of the sect of the Pha-
es, which beliued, saying, That it was nedfull
circumcise them, and to command them to keepe the
of Moses.

6 ¶ And the Apostles and Elders came together,
to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had beene much disputing, Peter
vp, and said vnto them, Men and Brethren, yee
w how that a good while agoe, God made choyse a-
ng vs, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare
word of the Gospel, and beliue.

8 And God which knoweth ỹ hearts, bare them wit-
, giuing them the holy Ghost, euen as he did vnto vs.

9 And put no difference betweene vs and them, pu-
ing their hearts by Faith.

10 Nowe therefore why tempt yee God, to put a
e vpon the neckes of the Disciples, which neither
fathers nor wee were able to beare?

11 But we beliue that through the grace of the
d Iesus Christ, wee shall bee saued euen as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and
e audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what
acles and wonders God had wrought among the
tiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had holde their peace James
wered, saying, Men & Brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simõ hath declared how God at the first did visite
entiles, to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets,
is written,

14 After

16 After this, I will returne, & build againe the
bernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe: and I
build againe the ruines thereof, and I will set it
17 That the residue of men might seeke after
Lord, and all the Gentiles, vpon whom my Na
called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.
18 Knowne vnto God are all his workes, fr
beginning of the world.
19 Wherfore my sentence is that we trouble not
which from among the Gentiles are turned to G
20 But that wee writ vnto them, that they ab
from pollutions of idoles and from fornication,
things strangled, and from blood.
21 For Moses of olde time, hath in euerie citie
that preach him, being read in the Synagogues
Sabbath day.
22 Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders,
the whole Church, to send chosen men of their
companie to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas:
lie Judas, surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chiefe
among the brethren.
23 And wrote letters by them after this man
The Apostles, and Elders, and Brethren, send
ting vnto the Brethren, which are of the Gentiles
Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia,
24 Forasmuch as wee haue heard, that cer
which went out from vs, haue troubled you
wordes subuerting your soules, saying, Yee mu
circumcised, and keepe the Law; to whom wee gi
such commandement:
25 It seemeth good vnto vs, being assembled
one accord, to send chosen men vnto you, with o
loued Barnabas and Paule,

26

men that haue hazarted their liues, for the Name
Lord Iesus Christ.
We haue sent therefore Iudas and Silas, who
also tell you the same thinges by mouth.
For it seemed good to the holie Ghost, and to vs,
vpon you no greater burden than these necessa-
ings.
That yée abstaine from meates offered to idoles,
om blood, and from things strangled, and from
ation: From which if yée keepe your selues, yée
doe well, Fare yée well.
So when they were dismissed, they came to An-
and when they had gathered the multitude to-
r, they deliuered the Epistle.
Which when they had reade, they reioyced for
nsolation.
And Iudas and Silas, beeing Prophets also
selues, exhorted the Brethren with manie words,
confirmed them.
And after they had tarried there a space, they
let goe in peace from the brethren vnto the Apo-

Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abid there stil.
Paul also and Barnabas, continueth in Antioch,
ing and preaching the word of the Lord, with ma-
hers also.
¶ And some dayes after, Paul said vnto Bar-
s, Let vs goe againe, and visite our brethren, in
ry citie where wee haue preached the word of the
and see how they doe.
And Barnabas determined to take with them
, whose surname was Marke.
But Paul thought it not good to take him with
; who departed from them from Pamphilia,

and went not with them to the worke.

39 And the contention was so sharpe betwee
that they departed asunder one from the other:
Barnabas tooke Marke, and sailed vnto Cyp

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed,
recommended by the Brethren vnto the grac

41 And hee went thorow Syria and Cilic
firming the Churches.

## CHAP. XVI.

1. Paul circumciseth Timothie, 14. conuerteth
16. casteth out a spirit of diuination. 19. He
las are whipped and imprisoned. 27 And del

THen came hee to Derbe and Lystra: and be
certaine Disciple was there named Timot
sonne of a certaine woman, which was a Jewe
belieued: but his father was a Greeke.

2 Which was well reported of by the brethr
were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul haue to goe forth wi
and tooke, and circumcised him, because of the
which were in those quarters: for they knew a
his father was a Greeke.

4 And as they went through the cities, they
red them the decrees for to keepe, that were ord
the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hieru

5 And so were the Churches established in th
and increased in number daylie.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Ph
and the Region of Galatia, and were forbidden
holie Ghost to preach the word in Asia.

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed
into Bithynia, but the Spirit suffered them not

nd they passing by Mysia, came downe to Troas,
d a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There
man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying,
oner into Macedonia, and helpe vs.
And after hee had seene the vision, immediate-
endeuoured to goe into Macedonia, assuredlie
ing, that the Lord had called vs for to preach
spel vnto them.
Therefore losing from Troas, wee came with
ight course to Samothracia, and the next day to
olis:
And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe
f that part of Macedonia, and Colonie: and wee
n that citie abiding certaine dayes.
And on the Sabbath wee went out of the Citie
iuer side, where prayer was wont to bee made,
e sat downe, and spake vnto the women which
ed thither.
¶ And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller
ple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped
heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee
ed vnto the thinges which were spoken of Paul:
And when shee was baptized, and her household,
ought vs, saying, If yee haue judged mee to bee
ll to the Lord, come into mine house, and abide
and shee constrained vs.
¶ And it came to passe, as wee went to prayer,
ine Damosell possessed with a spirit of diuinati-
vs: which brought her Masters much gaine by
aying.
The same followed Paul, and vs, and cryed,
, These men are the seruantes of the most high
which shewe vnto vs the way of Saluation.

18 And

18 And this did shee manie dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned and said to the spirit, I co thee in the Name of Iesus Christ to come out And hee came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her Masters sawe that the their gaines was gone, they caught Paul and drew them into the Market place, vnto the Ru

20 And brought them to the Magistrates, s These men being Iewes, doe exceedinglie t our citie.

21 And teach customes which are not law vs to receiue, neither to obserue beeing Roman

22 And the multitude rose vp together a them, and the Magistrates rent off their cloath commanded to beate them.

23 And when they had laide manie stripes them. they cast them into prison, charging the to keepe them safelie.

24 Who hauing receiued such a charge, them into the inner prison, and made their feet the stockes.

25 ¶ And at mid night, Paul & Silas praye sang praises vnto God: and the prisoners heard

26 And suddenlie there was a great earth- so that the foundations of the prison were shaken immediatelie all the Doores were opened, and ones bands were losed.

27 And the Keeper of the prison awaking out sleepe and seeing the prison doores open, hee dr his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, sup that the prisoners had beene fled.

28 But Paul cryed out with a loude voyce, s Doe thy selfe none harme, for wee are all here.

29

29 Then hee called for a light, and sprang in, and
e trembling, & fell downe before Paul and Silas.
30 And brought them out, and saide, Sirs, what
t I doe to bee saued?
31 And they said, Beleeue on the Lord Iesus Christ,
thou shalt bee saued and thine house.
32 And they spake vnto him the word of the Lord,
to all that were in his house.
33 And hee tooke them the same houre of the night,
washed their stripes, and was baptized, hee and
is, straightway.
34 And when hee had brought them into his house,
set meate before them, and reioyced, beleeuing in
with all his house.
35 And when it was day, the Magistrates sent the
geants, saying, Let these men goe.
36 And the Keeper of the prison told this saying to
l, The Magistrates haue sent to let you goe: Now
efore depart, and goe in peace.
37 But Paul said vnto them, They haue beaten vs
nlie, vncondemned, being Romanes, and haue cast
nto prison, and now doe they thrust vs out priuate-
Nay verilie, but let them come themselues, and
bs out of it.
38 And the Sergeants told these words vnto the
gistrates: and they feared when they heard that
were Romanes.
39 And they came, and besought them, and brought
out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.
40 And they went out of the prison, and entred in-
e house of Lydia: and when they had seene the bre-
n, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XVII.

1. Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 10. 11. at Berea. 15. Hee disputeth and preacheth at Athens. 34. Manie are conuerted.

NOw when they had passed thorow Amphipolis and Apollonia they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul as his manner was, went in vnto them and three Sabbath dayes reasoned with them out of the Scriptures,

3 Opening and alleadging, that Christ must needs haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and that this Iesus whom I preach vnto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeued, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the deuout Grækes a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Iewes which beleeued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine lewde fellowes of the baser sort, and gathered a companie, and set all the citie on an vproare, and assaulted the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto the Rulers of the citie, crying, These that haue turned the world vp-side down are come hither also,

7 Whom Iason hath receiued: and these all do contrarie to the decrees of Cesar, saying That there is another King, one Iesus

8 And they troubled the people and the Rulers of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken securitie of Iason and of the other, they let them goe.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediatelie sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea: who com-

er, went into the Synagogue of the Iewes.
These were more noble than those in Thessaloni-
n that they receiued the word with all readinesse of
e and searched the Scriptures daylie, whither
things were so.
Therefore manie of them believed: also of honou-
e women which were Greekes, & of men not a few.
But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had Paul
ledge that the worde of GOD was preached of
erea, they came thither also, and stirred vp the
le.
And then immediatelie the brethren sent away
, to goe as it were to the Sea, but Silas and Ti-
eus abode there still.
And they that conducted Paul, brought him vn-
hens, and receiuing a commandement vnto Silas
Timotheus, for to come to him with all spæde,
departed.
¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens,
pirit was stirred in him, when hee saw the citie
lie giuen to idolatrie.
Therefore disputed hee in the Synagogue with
ewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the
ket daylie with them that met with him.
Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicureans,
f the Stoickes, encountred him: and some saide,
t will this Babler say? Other some, Hee sæmeth
a setter forth of strange gods: because hee prea-
vnto them Iesus, and the Resurrection.
And they toke him, and brought him vnto Areo-
s, saying, May wee know what this new doctrine
eof thou speakest, is?
For thou bringest certaine strange things to our

eares: wee would knowe therefore what these th
meane.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers
were there, spent their time in nothing else, b
ther to tell or to heare some new thing.)

22 Then Paul stood in the mids of Mars hill,
said, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all t
yee are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your deuot
I found an Altar with this inscription, To the
KNOVVNE GOD, Whom therefore yee ignorantli
ship, him declare I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, and all things
in, seeing that hee is Lord of heauen and earth,
leth not in Temples made with hands.

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hande
though hee needed any thing, seeing hee giueth
life and breath, and all things:

26 And hath made of one blood all Nations o
for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath
mined the times before appointed, and the boun
their habitation:

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if happil
might feele after him, and find him, though hee b
farre from euerie one of vs.

28 For in him wee liue, and moue, and ha
beeing, as certaine also of your own Poetes ha
For wee are also his off-spring.

29 Forasmuch then as wee are the off-sp
God, wee ought not to thinke that the God-
like vnto gold, or siluer, or stone grauen by a
mans deuice.

30 And the times of this ignorance God wi

now commandeth all men euerie where to repent:
1 Because hee hath appointed a day in the which
ill iudge the world in righteousnesse, by that
whom hæ hath ordained, whereof hæ hath giuen
rance vnto all men; in that hæ hath raised him
the dead.
2 ¶ And when they heard of the Resurrection of
ead, some mocked and others said, Wee will heare
gaine of this matter.
3 So Paul departed from among them.
4 Howbeit certaine men claue vnto him, & belie-
mong the which was Dionysius the Areopagite,
woman named Damaris, and others with them.

## CHAP. XVIII.

ul labouring with his handes, and preaching at
rinth. 9 is incouraged in a vision, 12 accused
fore the Deputie, but dismissed. 24. Of Apollos.

1 After these things, Paul departed from Athens,
and came to Corinth.
2 And found a certaine Iew named Aquila, borne
ntus, latelie came from Italie, with his wife
illa (because that Claudius had commanded all
s to depart from Rome) and came vnto them.
3 And because hæ was of the same craft, hæ abode
them, and wrought (for by their occupation they
tent makers)
4 And hæ reasoned in the Synagogue euerie Sab-
and perswaded the Iewes, and the Græekes.
5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from
onia, Paul was prested in Spirit, and testified
Iewes, that Iesus was Christ.
6 And when they opposed themselues, and blas-

phemed, hée shooke his rayment, and said vnto t
Your blood bee vpon your owne heades, I am cl
from henceforth I will goe vnto the Gentiles.
7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entred into a
taine mans house, named Justus, one that wor
God, whose house joyned hard to the Synagogue.
8 And Crispus, the chiefe Ruler of the Synag
believed on the Lord with all his house: and ma
the Corinthians, hearing, believed and were bap
9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the Nig
a vision, Bée not afraide but speake, and hold no
peace.
10 For I am with thée, and no man shall se
thee, to hurt thée: For I haue much people in this
11 And hée continued there a yéere and sixe mo
teaching the word of God among them.
12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputie of A
the Iewes made insurrection with one accord ag
Paul, and brought him to the judgement seate.
13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to
ship God contrarie to the Law.
14 And when Paul was nowe about to ope
mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, if it were a
ter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O yée Iewes
son would that I should beare with you.
15 But if it bee a question of wordes, and n
and of your Law, looke yée to it: for I will bée n
of such matters.
16 And hée draue them from the judgement se
17 Then all the Grækes tooke Sosthenes, the
Ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before th
ment seat: and Gallio cared for none of these th
18 ¶ And Paul after this, taried there yet

le, and then toke his leaue of the brethren, and
d thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and
ila: hauing shorne his head in Cenchrea: for hee
a vow.
9 And hee came to Ephesus, and left them there:
hee himselfe entred into the Synagogue, and rea-
d with the Iewes.
o When they desired him to tarrie longer time
them, hee consented not.
1 But hee bade them farewell, saying, I must by
meanes keepe this feast that commeth in Hierusa-
, but I will returne againe vnto you, if God will:
hee sailed from Ephesus.
2 And when hee had landed at Cesarea, and gone
nd saluted the Church, hee went downe to Antioch.
3 And after hee had spent some time there hee de-
ed, and went ouer all the countrey of Galatia and
gia in order, strengthening all the Disciples.
4 ¶ And a certaine Iew named Apollos, borne
lexandria, an eloquent man, and mightie in the
iptures, came to Ephesus.
5 This man was instructed in ỹ way of the Lord,
being fetuent in Spirit, hee spake and taught di-
ntlie the thinges of the Lord, knowing onelie the
isme of Iohn.
6 And hee began to speake boldlie in the Synago-
whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they
him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way
od more perfectlie.
7 And when hee was disposed to passe into Achaia,
brethren wrote exhorting the Disciples to receiue
who when hee was come, helped them much which
elæued through grace.

28 For hée mightilie conuinced the Iewes that publiklie, shewing by the Scriptures, that was Christ.

## CHAP. XIX.

6. The holy Ghost giuen by Pauls hands.

AND it came to passe, that while Apollos Corinth, Paul hauing passed thorow the coasts, came to Ephesus: finding certaine Dis

2 Hée said vnto them, Haue yée receiued the Ghost since yée beleeued? And they said vnto him haue not so much as heard whether there bée any Ghost.

3 And hée said vnto them, Vnto what then were baptized? And they said, Vnto Johns Baptisme.

4 Then said Paul, John verilie baptized with baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people they should beleeue on him which should come him, that is, on Christ Iesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 And when Paul had laide his handes vpon the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake tongues and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 And hée went into the Synagogue, and boldly for the space of thrée months, disputing and swading the things concerning the kingdome

9 But when diuerse were hardned and beleeu but spake euill of that way before the multitud departed from them, and separated the Disciple puting onelie in the Schole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two

at all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of
Lord Jesus, both Jewes and Greekes.
1 And GOD wrought speciall Miracles by the
of Paul:
2 So that from his bodie were brought vnto the
s, handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases depar-
rom them, and the euill spirits went out of them.
3 ¶ Then certaine of the vagabond Jewes, exor-
, tooke vpon them to call ouer them which had euill
ts, the Name of the Lord Jesus, saying, Wee ad-
you by Jesus, whom Paul preacheth.
4 And there were seuen sonnes of one Sceua a Jew,
chiefe of the Priests, which did so.
5 And the euill spirit answered, and said, Jesus I
w, and Paul I know, but who are yee?
6 And the man in whom the euill spirit was, leapt
em, and ouercame them, and preuailed against
, so that they fledde out of the house naked and
nded.
7 And this was known to all the Jewes & Greeks
welling at Ephesus, and feare fell on them all,
he Name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.
8 And many that beleiued, came and confessed,
shewed their deedes.
9 Many also of them which vsed curious arte,
ght their bookes together, and burned them, be-
all men: and they counted the price of them, and
it fiftie thousand pieces of siluer.
10 So mightily grew the word of God, & preuailed.
11 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed
e Spirit, when hee had passed thorow Macedonia
Achaia, to goe to Hierusalem, saying, After I
beene there, I must also see Rome.

22 So hee sent them into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him Timotheus, and Erastus: but hee himselfe stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius, a silver smith, which made siluer shrines for Diana, brought no small gaine vnto the craftes-men:

25 Whom hee called together, with the workemen of like occupation, and saide, Sirs, yee know that by this craft wee haue our wealth.

26 Moreouer, yee see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying That they bee no gods, which are made with hands.

27 So that not onelie this our craft is in danger to bee set at naught: but also that the Temple of the great goddesse Diana should bee despised, and her magnificence, should bee destroyed, whome all Asia, and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was filled with confusion: and hauing caught Caius and Aristarchus men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in trauaile, they rushed with one accord into the Theatre.

30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the Disciples suffered him not.

31 And certaine of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends sent vnto him, desiring him that hee would not aduenture himselfe into the Theatre.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some

for the assemblie was confused, and the more part
w not wherefore they were come together.
3 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude,
Iewes putting him forward. And Alexander bek-
with the hand, and would haue made his defence
the people.
4 But when they knewe that hee was a Iew: all
y one voyce, about the space of two houres, cryed
Great is Diana of the Ephesians.
5 And when the towne Clerke had appeased the
le, hee saide, Yee men of Ephesus, what man is
that knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephe-
s is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and
image which fell downe from Iupiter.
6 Seeing then that these things cannot bee spoken
l, yee ought to bee quiet and doe nothing rashlie.
7 For yee haue brought hither these men, which
either Robbers of Churches, nor yet blaspheiners
ur goddesse.
8 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftesmen
hare with him, haue a matter against anie man,
Law is open, and there are Deputies, let them im-
one another.
9 But if yee inquire any thing concerning other
ters, it shall be determined in a lawfull assemblie.
10 For wee are in danger to bee called in question
his dayes vproare, there beeing no cause whereby
may giue an account of this concourse.
11 And when he had thus spoken, hee dismissed the
mblie.

## CHAP. XX.

Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth ỹ Lords Supper

Supper, and preacheth. 9. Eutichus falling d
dead, 10. is raised to life. 18. & 18. At Miletu
committeth the flocke to the Elders, 36. & depa

AND after the vproare was ceased, Paul calle
to him the Disciples, and imbraced them, a
parted for to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when hee had gone ouer these parts, a
giuen them much exhortation, hee came into G

3 And there abode three monethes: and wh
Iewes laide wait for him, as hee was about to sa
to Syria, hee purposed to returne thorow Mace

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sop
of Berea, and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus
Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus
of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for vs at Troas.

6 And wee sailed away from Philippi, aft
dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto the
Troas in fiue dayes, where wee abode seuen days

7 And vpon the first day of the weeke, when the
ciples came together to breake bread, Paul pre
vnto them, readie to depart on the morrow, and
tinued his speech vntill midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the vpper c
ber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine y
man, named Eutichus, being fallen into a dead
and as Paul was long preaching, hee sunke d
with sleepe, and fell downe from the third loft,
was taken vp dead.

10 And Paul went downe, and fell on him,
embracing him, said, Trouble not your selues, for
life is in him.

11 C

11 When hée therefore was come vp againe, and
broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while,
till breake of day, so hée departed.
12 And they brought the young man aliue, and
were not a little comforted.
13 ¶ And wée went before to ship, and sailed vnto
Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had hée
appointed, minding himselfe to goe afoote.
14 And when hée met with vs at Assos, wée tooke
him in, and came to Mitylene.
15 And hée sailed thence, and came the next day
ouer against Chios, and the third day wée arriued at
Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium: and the next day
came to Miletus.
16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus,
because hée would not spend the time in Asia: for hee
hasted if it were possible for him, to bee at Hierusalem
the day of Pentecost.
17 ¶ And from Miletus hée sent to Ephesus, and
called the Elders of the Church.
18 And when they were come to him, hée said vnto
them, Yée know from the first day that I came in-
to Asia, after what manner I haue beene with you at
all seasons.
19 Seruing the Lord with all humilitie of minde,
and with manie teares and temptations, which befell
me by the lying in wait of the Iewes.
20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profi-
table vnto you, but haue shewed you, and haue taught
you publikelie, and from house to house.
21 Testifying both to the Iewes, and also to the
Grekes, repentance toward God, and faith toward
our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I goe bound in the Spirit
Hierusalem, not knowing the things that shall
mee there:

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in
citie, saying, That bonds and afflictions abide

24 But none of these thinges moue mee,
count I my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I
finish my course with ioye, and the Ministerie
I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie th
spel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that yee all, a
whom I haue gone preaching the Kingdome of
shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day,
am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue not shuned to declare vnto y
the counsell of God.

28 ¶ Take heede therefore vnto your selues,
to all the flocke, ouer the which the holie Ghost
made you ouer-seers to feede the Church of God,
hee hath purchased with his owne Blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing
grieuous Wolues enter in among you, not sparin
flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shall men arise, spe
peruerse things, to draw away Disciples after t

31 Therefore watch, and remember, that b
spaces of three yeeres, I ceased not to warne euer
night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God
to the word of his grace, which is able to build y
and to giue you an inheritance among all them
are sanctified.

I haue coueted no mans siluer, or gold, or ap-
ll.
yea, you your selues knowe, that these handes
ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that
with mee.
I haue shewed you all thinges, how that so la-
ing, yee ought to support the weake, and to re-
ber the wordes of the Lord Iesus, how hee said,
more blessed to giue, than to receiue.
¶ And when hee had thus spoken, hee knæled
e, and prayed with them all.
And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls neck,
issed him:
Sorrowing most of all for the wordes which hee
e, that they should not see his face no more. And
accompanied him vnto the Shippe.

## CHAP. XXI.

ul will not bee diswaded from going to Hierusa-
m, 9. Philips daughters Prophetesses, 17. Paul at
ierusalem. 27. is apprehended, and in great
nger. 31. but rescued by the chiefe Captaine.

Nd it came to passe, that after wee were gotten
from them, and had launched, wee came with a
ght course vnto Choos, and the day following vn-
hodes, and from thence vnto Patara.
And finding a ship sayling ouer vnto Phenicea,
went abroad, and set forth.
Now when wee had discouered Cyprus, wee left it
e left hand, and sayled into Syria, and landed at
e: for there the ship was to vnload her burden.
And finding Disciples, wee tarried there seuen
s, who said to Paul through the Spirit, that hee
should

ſhould not goe vp to Hieruſalem.

5 And when wee had accompliſhed thoſe dayes departed, and went our way; and they all brought on our way, with wiues and children, till wee out of the citie: and wee knæled downe on the ſhore prayed.

6 And when wee had taken our leaue one of an wee tooke ſhip, and they returned home againe.

7 And when we had finiſhed our courſe from wee came to Ptolomais, and ſaluted the brethren abode with them one day.

8 And the next day, wee that were of Pauls nie, departed, and came vnto Ceſarea, and wee entred into the houſe of Philip the Euangeliſt, (which one of the ſeuen) and abode with him.

9 And the ſame man had foure daughters, gines, which did propheſie.

10 And as wee tarried there many dayes, came downe from Iudea, a certaine Prophet, Agabus.

11 And when hee was come vnto vs, he Pauls girdle, and bound his owne handes and and ſaid, Thus ſaieth the holie Ghoſt, So ſhall Iewes at Hieruſalem bind the man that oweth girdle, and ſhall deliuer him into the handes Gentiles.

12 And when wee heard theſe things, both we they of that place, beſought him not to goe vp to ruſalem.

13 Then Paul anſwered, What meane weepe, and to breake mine heart? for I am not to bee bound onelie, but alſo to die at Hieruſ for the Name of the Lord Ieſus.

14

And when hee would not bee perſwaded, we ceaſ-
ying, The will of the Lord bee done.
And after thoſe dayes, wee toke vp our carria-
nd went vp to Hieruſalem.
There went with vs alſo certaine of the Diſ-
s of Ceſarea, and brought with them one Mna-
Cyprus, an olde Diſciple, with whom wee ſhould
e.
And when wee were come to Hieruſalem, the
en receiued vs gladlie.
And the day following Paul went in with vs
James, and all the Elders were preſent.
And when hee had ſaluted them, hee declared
ularlie what things God had wrought among
entiles by his miniſterie.
And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord,
nd vnto him, Thou ſeeſt brother, how many thou-
s of the Iewes there are which belieue, and they
l zealous of the Law.
And they are informed of thee, that thou teacheſt
e Iewes which are among the Gentiles, to forſak
s, ſaying, That they ought not to circumciſe
childzen, neither to walke after the cuſtomes.
What is it therefore? the multitude muſt needes
together: for they will heare that thou art come.
Doe therefore this, that wee ſay to thee: Wee
foure men which haue a vow on them.
Then take and purifie thy ſelfe with them
e at charges with them, that they may ſhaue
heades: and all may knowe that thoſe thinges
of they were informed concerning thee, are no-
, but that thou thy ſelfe walkeſt orderlie, and
ſt the Law.

25 As touching the Gentiles which beléeue, haue written and concluded, that they obserue no thing, saue onelie that they kéepe themselues thinges offered to idoles, and from blood, and things strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul toke the men, and the next da ryfying himselfe with them, entred into the Te to signifie the accomplishment of the dayes of pur tion, vntill that an offering should bée offered fo rie one of them.

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost e the Iewes which were of Asia, when they saw the Temple, stirred vp all the people, and laide on him.

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, helpe: this man that teacheth all men euerie-where again people, and the law, and this place: and farther, b Grékes also into the Temple, and hath polluted holie place.

29 (For they had séene before with him in the Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they suppose Paul had brought into the Temple.)

30 And all the citie was moued, and the peop together: and they toke Paul, and drew him the Temple: and forth-with the doores were shu

31 And as they went about to kill him, ti came vnto the chiefe Captaine of the band, th Hierusalem was in an vproare.

32 Who immediatelie toke Souldiers, and turions, and ran downe vnto them: and when saw the chiefe Captaine and the Souldiers, th beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neare and

e him, and commanded him to bee bound with two
nes, and demanded who hee was, and what hee had

4 And some cryed one thing, and some another, a-
g the multitude: and when hee could not know the
aintie for the tumult, hee commaunded him to bee
ied into the Castle.

5 And when hee came vpon the staires, so it was
hee was borne of the Souldiers, for the violence of
eople.

6 For the multitude of the people followed after,
ng, Away with him.

7 And as Paul was to bee led into the Castle, hee
vnto the chiefe Captaine May I speake vnto thee?
o said, Canst thou speake Greeke?

8 Art not thou that Egyptian which before these
es madst an vproare, and leddest out into the wil-
esse foure thousand men that were murderers?

9 But Paul said I am a man which am a Iew of
sus, a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no meane citie:
I beseech thee suffer mee to speake vnto the people.

10 And when hee had giuen him licence Paul stood
e staires, and beckned with the hand vnto the peo-
nd when there was made a great silence, he spake
them in the Hebrew tongue, saying:

## CHAP. XXII.

ul declareth how hee was conuerted, 17. and cal-
d to his Apostleship. 22. Mentioning the Gen-
es, the people exclaime on him. 24. He escapeth
ourging by the priuiledge of a Romane.

Men, Brethren, and Fathers, heare yee my de-
fence, which I make now vnto you.

2 (And when they heard, that he spak in the
tongue to them, they kept the more silence: &
3 I am verilie a man which am a Iewe, b
Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, yet brought vp in thi
at the feete of Gamaliel, and taught accordin
perfect manner of the Law, of the Fathers, a
zealous towards God, as yee all are this day.
4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death
dings, and deliuering into prison both men and
5 As also the high Priest doeth beare mee wi
and the estate of the Elders: from whom also I
ued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Dam
to bring them which were there, bound vnto
lem, for to bee punished.
6 And it came to passe, that as I made my j
and was come nigh vnto Damascus, about no
denlie there shone from heauen a great light r
bout mee.
7 And I fell vnto the ground, & heard a voyce
vnto mee, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou m
8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? A
said vnto mee, I am Iesus of Nazareth whom
persecutest.
9 And they that were with mee, sawe indee
light, and were afraide: but they heard not the
of him that spake to mee.
10 And I said, What shall I doe, Lord? A
Lord said vnto mee: Arise, and goe into Dam
and there it shall bee told thee of all thinges wh
appointed for thee to doe.
11 And when I could not see for the glorie
light, being ledde by the hands of them that w
mee, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a deuout man according to the Law, hauing a good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there.

13 Came vnto mee, and stood, and saide vnto mee, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight. And the same houre I looked vp vpon him.

14 And hee said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt bee his witnesse vnto all men, of that thou hast seene and heard.

16 And now, why tarriest thou? Arise and be baptized and wash away thy sinnes, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, euen while I prayed in the temple, I was in a traunce.

18 And saw him, saying vnto mee, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy testimonie concerning mee.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beate in euerie Synagogue them that beleeued on thee:

20 And when the blood of thy Martyr Steuen was shed, I also was standing by, and consented vnto his death, and kept the rayment of them that slew him.

21 And hee said vnto mee, Depart: for I will send thee farre-hence, vnto the Gentiles.

22 And they gaue him audience vnto this word, and then lift vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he should liue.

23 And as they cryed out, and cast off their cloathes, and threw dust into the aire,

24 The chiefe Captaine commaunded him t
brought into the Castle and bade that hee should be
amined by scourging, that hee might know whe
they cryed so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul
vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for
to scourge a man that is a Romane & vncondem

26 When the Centurion heard that, hee went
folde the chiefe Captaine, saying, Take heede
thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe Captaine came, and saide
him, Tell mee, art thou a Romane? Hee said, Y

28 And the chiefe Captaine answered, With a g
summe obtained I this freedome. And Paul said,
I was free borne.

29 Then straightway they departed from
which should haue examined him: and the chiefe C
taine also was afraid after hee knewe that hee w
Romane, and because hee had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because hee would haue kn
the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Je
hee losed him from his bandes, and commaunde
chiefe Priestes, and all their counsell, to appeare,
brought Paul downe, and set him before them.

## CHAP. XXIII.

1. As Paul pleadeth his cause, Ananias comman
to smite him. 7. Dissention among his accusers.
God encourageth him. 14. The Iewes lay w
for him. 20. Hee is rescued by the chiefe Capt
27. And sent to Felix.

AND Paul earnestlie beholding the Cou
saide, Men and Brethren, I haue liued

o conſcience before God, vntill this day.
2 And the high Prieſt Ananias commanded them
t ſtood by him, to ſmite him on the mouth.
3 Then ſaith Paul vnto him, God ſhall ſmite thée,
u whited wall: for ſitteſt thou to iudge mæ after the
w, and commandeſt mæ to bee ſmitten contrarie to
Law?
4 And they that ſtood by, ſaid, Reuileſt thou Gods
h Prieſt?
5 Then ſaid Paul, I wiſt not Brethren, that hee
s the high Prieſt: For it is written, Thou ſhalt not
ake euill of the Ruler of thy people.
6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part was
adducees, and the other Phariſees, hee cryed out in
Counſell, Men and brethren, I am a Phariſee, and
ſonne of a Phariſee: of the hope and reſurrection of
dead, I am called in queſtion.
7 And when hee had ſo ſaid, there aroſe a diſſention
tweene the Phariſees, and the Sadducees: and the
ltitude was diuided.
For the Sadducees ſay, that there is no reſurrectiõ,
ther Angel, nor ſpirit, but the Phariſees cõfeſſe both.
9 And there aroſe a great cry, and the Scribes that
re of the Phariſees parte aroſe, and ſtroue, ſaying,
e find none euill in this mã: but if a ſpirit or an An-
hath ſpoken to him, let vs not fight againſt God.
10 And when there aroſe a great diſſention, the
efe Captaine fearing, leſt Paul ſhould haue beene
led in pieces of them, commanded the Souldiers to
down, and to take him by force from among them,
to bring him into the Caſtle.
11 And the Night following, the Lord ſtood by him,
ſaid, Bee of good cheare, Paul: for as thou haſt

testified of mee in Hierusalem, so must thou beare
nesse also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certaine of the Je
banded together, and bound themselues vnder a c
saying, That they would neither eate nor drinke
they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more than fourtie which
made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priestes and
ders, and saide, Wee haue bound our selues vn
great curse, that wee will eate nothing vntill we
slaine Paul.

15 Now therefore yee with the Counsell, sig
to the chiefe Captaine, that hee bring him downe
you to Morrow, as though yee would inquire
thing the more perfectlie concerning him: and we
euer hee come neare, are readie to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sister sonne heard of their
ing in waite: hee went and entred into the Castle
told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the Centurions
him, and said, Bring this young man vnto the
Captaine: for hee hath a certaine thing to tell him.

18 So hee tooke him, and brought him to the
Captaine: and said, Paul the prisoner called me
him, and prayed mee to bring this young man
thee, who hath something to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe Captaine tooke him by the
and went with him aside priuatelie, and asked
What is that thou hast to tell mee?

20 And hee said, The Iewes haue agreed to
thee, that thou wouldest bring downe Paul to
row into the Counsell, as though they would en

mewhat of him moze perfectlie.
21 But doe not thou yælde vnto them: foz there lie wait foz him of them moe than fourtie men, which e bound themselues with an oathe, that they will ther eate noz drinke, till they haue killed him: and w are they readie, loking foz a promise from thæ.
22 So the chiefe Captaine then let the young man part, and charged him, Sæ thou tell no man that u hast shewed these thinges to mæ.
23 And hee called vnto him, two Centurions, say- , Make readie two hundreth Souldiers to goe to sarea, and horsemen thræscoze and ten, and Spear- n two hundreth, at the third houre of the night.
24 And prouide them beastes, that they may set ul on, and bring him safe vnto Felix the gouernour.
25 And hee wrote a letter after this manner:
26 Claudius Lysias, vnto the most excellent Go- nour Felix, sendeth græting.
27 This man was taken of the Iewes, and should e bæne killed of them: Then came I with an ar- e, and rescued him, hauing vnderstood that hæ was omane.
28 And when I would haue knowne the cause erefoze they accused him, I brought him fozth in- their Counsell.
29 Whom I perceiued to bæ accused of questions their lawe, but to haue nothing laide to his charge thie of death, oz of bonds.
30 And when it was tolde mæ, how that the Iewes d wait foz the man, I sent straight way to thee, and e commandement to his accusers also, to say befoze e what they had against him. Farewell.
31 Then the Souldiers, as it was commãded them,

toke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatr

32 On the Morrow they left the horse-men t with him, and returned to the Castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and uered the Epistle to the Gouernour, presented Pa so before him.

34 And when the Gouernour had read the lett asked of what prouince hee was. And when hee u stood that hee was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, saide hee when thine acc are also come. And hee commanded him to bee k Herodes iudgement Hall.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

1. Paul accused by Tertullus. 10. Answereth for h selfe. 24. Preacheth Christ to the Gouernour his wife. 27. Hee going out of his office, lea Paul in prison.

AND after fiue dayes, Ananias the high Pri ascended with the Elders, and with a certain ratour, named Tertullus, who enformed the Go nour against Paul.

2 And when hee was called forth, Tertullus b to accuse him, saying, Seeing that wee by thee e great quietnesse, and that verie worthie deeds, are vnto this Nation by thy prouidence.

3 Wee accept it alwayes, and in all places, Noble Felix, with all thankefulnesse.

4 Notwithstanding that I bee not farther te vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs clemencie a few words:

5 For wee haue found this man a pestilent Fel and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes th

the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Naza-
s.
6 Who also hath gone about to prophaine the Temple,
om wee tooke, and would haue iudged according to
Law.
7 But the chiefe captain Lysias came vpon vs, and
h great violence tooke him away out of our hands :
8 Commanding his accusers to come vnto thee: by
mining of whom, thy selfe mayest take knowledge
l these things whereof wee accuse him.
9 And the Iewes also assented, saying, That these
gs were so.
10 Then Paul, after that the gouernour had beck-
vnto him to speak, answered, forasmuch as I know
thou hast beene of many yeeres a Iudge vnto this
tion, I doe the more chearfully answere for my self.
11 Because that thou mayest vnderstand, that there
yet but twelue dayes, since I went vp to Hierusa-
for to worship:
12 And they neither found mee in the Temple di-
ing with any man, neither raising vp the people,
her in the Synagogues nor in the citie:
13 Neither can they proue the things whereof they
accuse mee.
14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way
ch they call Heresie, so worship I the God of my
hers, believing all things which are written in the
w and the Prophets.
15 And haue hope towards God, which they them-
es also allow, that there shall bee a resurrection of
dead, both of the iust and vniust.
16 And herein doe I exercise my selfe, to haue al-
yes a conscience voyde of offence toward God, and
ard men,

17 Now

17 Now after manie yeeres, I came to bring
to my Nation, and offerings.

18 Whereupon certaine Iewes from Asia
mee purified in the Temple, neither with mult
nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to haue beene heere before thee
obiect, if they had ought against mee.

20 Or else let these same heere say, If they
found any euill doing in mee, while I stoode bef
Counsell:

21 Except it bee for this one voyce, that I
standing among them: Touching the Resurrec
the dead, I am called in question this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having
perfect knowledge of that way, hee deferred them
said, When Lysias the chiefe Captaine shall
downe, I will know the vttermost of your matte

23 And hee commanded a Centurion to keepe
and to let him haue libertie, and that hee should
none of his acquaintance to minister, or come
him.

24 And after certaine dayes, when Felix
with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iew: hee se
Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Ch

25 And as hee reasoned of righteousnesse, te
rance, and iudgement to come, Felix trembled,
answered, Goe thy way for this time, when I h
conuenient season, I will call for thee.

26 Hee hoped also that Money should haue bee
uen him of Paul, that hee might loose him: wher
hee sent for him the oftner, and communed with

27 But after two yeeres, Portius Festus came
Felix roome: and Felix willing to shewe the Iew
pleasure, left Paul bound.

ul accused before Festus, 8. answereth for him-
fe. 11. appealeth to Cesar. 14. Festus openeth his
tter to Agrippa. 23, Hee is brought fourth, 15.
declared by Festus.

Owe when Festus was come into the prouince,
after three dayes hee ascended from Cesarea to
usalem.

Then the high Priest and the chiefe of the Iewes
med him against Paul, and besought him.

And desired fauour against him, that hee would
him to Hierusalem, laying waite in the way to
im.

But Festus answered, that Paul should bee kept
esarea, and that hee himselfe would depart shortly
her.

Let them therefore, saide hee, which among you
ble, goe downe with mee, and accuse this man, if
bee any wickednesse in him.

And when hee had tarried among them more than
ayes, hee went downe vnto Cesarea, and the nert
, sitting in the Iudgement seate, commanded
l to bee brought.

And when hee was come, the Iewes which came
ne from Hierusalem, stood round about, and laide
y and grieuous complaints against Paul, which
could not proue.

While hee answered for himselfe, Neither against
Law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple,
et against Cesar haue I offended anie thing at

But Festus willing to doe the Iewes a pleasure,
wered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hieru-
m, and there bee iudged of these things before mee.

10 Then

10 Then said, Paul, I stand at Cesars judg
seat, where I ought to bee judged, to the Jewes
done no wrong, as thou verie well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or haue commit
thing worthie of death, I refuse not to die: but
bee none of these thinges whereof they accuse
man may deliuer me vnto them, I appeal vnto

12 Then Festus, when hee had conferred w
Counsell, answered, Hast thou appealed vnto
vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrip
Bernice came vnto Cesarea, to salute Festus.

14 And when they had bene there manie
Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, s
There is a certaine man left in bonds by Felix

15 About whom, when I was at Hierusale
chiefe Priests and the Elders of the Jewes in
me, desiring to haue judgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the man
the Romanes to deliuer any man to die, before
which is accused, haue the accusers face to fa
haue licence to answere for himselfe concern
crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, w
any delay, on the morrow, I sate on the judg
seat, and commanded the man to bee brought fo

18 Against whom when the accusers stood u
brought none accusation of such things as I sup

19 But had certaine questions against him, o
owne superstition, and of one Jesus which was
whom Paul affirmed to bee aliue.

20 But because I doubted of such manner o
tions, I asked him whether hee would goe to

, and there bee iudged of these matters.

But when Paul had appealed to bee reserued
the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to
pt, till I might send him to Cesar.

Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also
the man my selfe. To Morrow, said hæ, thou shall
him.

And on the Morrow when Agrippa was come,
ernice, with great pompe, and was entred into
ace of hearing, with the chiefe Captaines, and
pall men of the citie: at Festus commaunde-
, Paul was brought forth.

And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men
are present hære with vs, yee see this man, about
all the multitude of the Iewes haue dealt with
both at Hierusalem, and also hære, crying, that
ght not to liue anie longer.

But when I found that hee had committed no-
worthie of death, and that hee himselfe hath ap-
to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vn-
lord: Wherefore I haue brought him forth be-
ou, and espiciallie before thee, O King Agrippa,
fter examination had, I might haue somewhat
ite.

For it seemeth to mee vnreasonable, to send a
er, and not withall to signifie the crimes laide
st him.

## CHAP. XXVI.

al before Agrippa declareth his life. 12. his com-
sion and calling. 24. Festus chargeth him to bee
d. 28. Agrippa almost perswaded to bee a Chri-
an.

Then

THen Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art per to speake for thy selfe. Then Paul stretche the hand, and answered for himselfe.

2 I thinke my selfe happie, King Agrippa, I shall answere for my selfe this day before the thing all the thinges whereof I am accused Iewes.

3 Especiallie, because I know thee to bee ex all customes and questions which are amo Iewes: Wherefore I beseech thee to heare tientlie.

4 My manner of life from my youth, which the first among mine owne Nation at Hier know all the Iewes.

5 Which knew mee from the beginning, ( would testifie) that after the most straitest Se Religion, I liued a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am judged for the the promise made of God, vnto our Fathers:

7 Vnto which promise our twelue Tribes in seruing God day and night, hope to come: Fo hopes sake, King Agrippa, I am accused of the

8 Why should it bee thought a thing inc with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verilie thought with my selfe, that I o doe many things contrarie to the Name of Nazareth.

10 Which thing I also did in Hierusalem; a nie of the Saints did I shut vp in prison, hau ceiued authoritie from the chiefe Priests: and they were put to death, I gaue my voyce agai

11 And I punished them oft in euerie gogue, and compelled them to blaspheme: and be

inglie madde against them, I persecuted them e-
vnto strange cities.

12 Whereupon, as I went to Damascus, with au-
itie and commission from the chiefe Priests:

13 At mid day, O King, I saw in the way a light
n heauen, aboue the brightnesse of the Sun, shining
nd about mee, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when wee were all fallen to the earth, I
d a voyce speaking vnto mee, and saying in the
ewe tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou
e? It is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

15 And I said, Who art thou Lord? And hee said,
m Iesus, whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand vpon thy feete, for I haue
eared vnto thee for this purpose, to make thee a mi-
er and a witnesse, both of these thinges which thou
seene, and of those things in the which I will ap-
e vnto thee.

17 Deliuering thee from the people, and from the
ntiles, vnto whom now I send thee.

18 To open their eyes, and to turne them from
nesse to light, and from the power of Sathan vnto
d, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and
eritance among them which are sanctified by faith
is in mee.

19 Whereupon, O King Agrippa, I was not dis-
dient vnto the heauenlie vision:

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at
rusalem, and throughout all the coastes of Iudea,
then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and
ne to God, and doe workes meete for repentance.

21 For these causes the Iewes caught mee in the
mple, and went about to kill mee.

22 Hauing

22 Hauing therefore obtained helpe of God, I
tinue vnto this day, witnessing both to small &
saying none other thinges than those which the
phets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that hee shou
the first that should rise from the dead, and should
light vnto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as hee thus spake for himselfe, Festus
with a loud voyce, Paul, thou art beside thy selfe,
learning doeth make thee mad.

25 But hee said, I am not mad, most noble Fe
but speake forth the words of trueth and soberne
26 For the King knoweth of these thinges, b
whom also I spake freelie: for I am perswaded
none of these thinges are hidden from him, for
thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophet
know that thou beleeuest.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou
swadest mee to bee a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not o
thou, but also all that heare mee this day, were bot
most and altogether such as I am, except those bo

30 And when hee had thus spoken, the King ro
and the Gouernour, and Bernice, and they that
with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talke
twæne themselues, saying. This man doeth not
worthie of death, or of bonds.

32 Then saide Agrippa vnto Festus, This
might haue bene set at libertie, if hee had not app
vnto Cesar.

CH

aul shipping toward Rome. 10. foretelleth the nger of his voyage. 11. but is not beleiued. 14. ey are tossed with a tempest. 41. and suffer ship- racke. 42. 43. 44. yet come all safe to land.

d when it was determined, that wee should saile into Italie, they deliuered Paul and certaine o- risoners, vnto one named Julius, a Centurion gustus band.

And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, wee ed, meaning to saile by the coastes of Asia, one archus, a Macedonian, of Thessalonica being vs.

And the next day wee touched at Sidon: And Ju- courteously entreated Paul, and gaue him liber- goe vnto his friendes to refresh himselfe.

And when wee had launched from thence, wee sai- der Cyprus, because the windes were contrarie.

And when wee had sailed ouer the Sea of Cilicia Pamphilia, wee came to Myra, a citie of Lycia.

And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexan- sailing into Italie: and hee put vs therein.

And when wee had sailed slowlie many dayes, arce were come ouer against Gnidus, the winde ffering vs, wee sailed vnder Crete, ouer against one.

And hardlie passing it, came vnto a place which ed the Faire hauens, nigh whereunto was the Lasea.

ow when much time was spent, and when sai- as now dangerous, because the Fast was now e past. Paul admonished them.

And saide vnto them, Sirs, I perceiue that this will bee with hurt and much dainnage, not on-

lie of the lading and shippe, but also of our liues

11 Neuertheleſſe, the Centurion belieued th
ſter and the owner of the ship, more than thoſe
which were ſpoken by Paul.

12 And becauſe the hauen was not commod
winter in, the more part aduiſed to depart ther
if by any meanes they might attaine to Pheni
there to winter; which is an hauen of Creete a
toward the South-weſt, and North-weſt.

13 And when the South winde blew ſoftlie,
ſing that they had obtained their purpoſe,
thence: they ſailed cloſe by Creete.

14 But not long after, there aroſe againſt it
peſtuous winde, called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ſhippe was caught, and c
beare vp into the winde, wee let her driue.

16 And running vnder a certaine Yland,
is called Clauda, wee had much worke to com
Boate.

17 Which when they had taken vp, they vſe
vnder-girding the ſhippe: and fearing leſt the
fall, into the quicke ſands ſtrake ſaile, and
driuen.

18 And being exceedinglie toſſed with a tem
next day, they lightened the ſhippe.

19 And the third day wee caſt out with o
hands, the tackling of the ſhippe.

20 And when neither Sunne nor Starre
nie dayes appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt lay
hope, that wee ſhould bee ſaued, was then take

21 But after long abſtinence, Paul ſtood
the mids of them, and ſaide, Sirs, yee ſh
hearkened vnto mee, and not haue loſed from

to haue gained this harme and losse.
2 And now I exhort you to bee of good cheare: for
e shall bee no losse of any mans life among you,
of the shippe.
3 For there stode by mee this night an Angel of
, whose I am, and whom I serue,
Saying; Feare not Paul, thou must bee brought
ye Cesar, and loe, God hath giuen thee all them
saile with thee.
5 Wherefore, Sirs, bee of good cheare: For I be-
God, that it shall bee euen as it was tolde mee.
Howbeit, we must be cast vpon a certaine yland.
But when the fourteenth Night was come, as we
e driuen vp and downe in Adria, about midnight,
ipmen deemed that they drew neare to some coun-
.
8 And sounded, and found it twentie fathomes:
when they had gone little further, they sounded a-
e, and found it fifteene fathomes.
9 Then fearing lest wee should haue fallen vpon
es, they cast foure Ancres out of the sterne, and
d for the day.
0 And as the shipps-men were about to flee out of
ippe, when they had let downe the Boate into the
vndercolour as though they would haue cast An-
out of the fore-shippe,
Paul said to the Centurion, and to the Souldiers,
t these abid in the shippe, yee cannot bee saued.
Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the Boate,
t her fall off.
And whyle the day was comming on, Paul
ot them all to take Meate, saying, This day
fourteenth day that yee haue tarried, and con-

continued fasting, and hauing taken nothing.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take some meate this is for your health: for there shall not an haire from the head of any of you.

35 And when hee had thus spoken, hee tooke b and gaue thankes to God in presence of them all: when hee had broken it, hee began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good cheare, and th so tooke some Meate.

37 And wee were in all in the ship, two hund threescore, and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they ligh the shippe, and cast out the Wheate into the Sea

39 And when it was day, they knew not the but they discouered a certaine creeke, with a shor to the which they were minded, if it were possibl thrust in the shippe.

40 And when they had taken vp the Ancres committed themselues vnto the Sea, and loos rudder bandes, and hoysed vp the maine sayle wind, and made toward shore.

41 And falling into a place where two Seas they ran the shippe a ground, and the fore-part fast, and remained vnmoueable, but the hinde was broken with the violence of the waues.

42 And the souldiers counsell was to kill the ners, lest any of them should swimme out and e

43 But the Centurion, willing to saue Paul them from their purpose, and commanded, th which could swimme, should cast themselues fir the Sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boordes, and some ken pieces of the shippe: and so it came to pas they escaped all safe to land.

# CHAP. XXVIII.

The Barbarians kindneſſe to Paul. 5. The Viper on his hand. 11. They depart toward Rome. 17. hee declareth the cauſe of his comming. 24. Some elieue his preaching, and ſome doe not. 30. yet hee reacheth there two yeeres.

AND when they were eſcaped, then they knew that the Iland was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarous people ſhewed vs no little neſſe: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs ll one, becauſe of the preſent raine, and becauſe cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of ſticks, laid them on the fire, there came a Viper out of heate, and faſtened on his hand.

4 And whē the Barbarians ſaw the venemous beaſt on his hand, they ſaide among themſelues, No this man is a murderer, whom though hee hath ed the Sea, yet vengeance ſuffereth not to liue.

5 And hee ſhooke off the beaſt into the fire, and felt harme.

6 Howbeit, they looked when hee ſhould haue ſwol- or fallen downe dead ſuddenlie: But after they oked a great while, and ſaw none harme come , they changed their mindes, and ſaid, That hee God.

7 In the ſame quarters were poſſeſſions of the chiefe of the Iland, whoſe name was Publius, who re- vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteouſlie.

8 And it came to paſſe, that the father of Publius ke of a feuer, and of a bloodie flixe, to whom Paul in, and prayed, and laide his hands on him, ealed him.

9 So when this was done, others alſo which had

diſeaſes in the Yland, came, and were healed.
10 Who alſo honoured vs with many honou
when wee departed, they laded vs with ſuch t
as were neceſſarie.
11 And after three monethes, wee departed in
of Alexandria, which had wintered in the Ile,
ſigne was Caſtor and Pollux.
12 And landing at Syracuſe, wee tarried
three dayes.
13 And from thence wee ſet a compaſſe, and
to Rhegium: and after one day, the South winde
and wee came the next day to Puteoli:
14 Where wee found brethren, and were de
tarrie with them ſeuen dayes: and ſo wee we
ward Rome.
15 And from thence, when the brethren heard
they came to meete vs as farre as Appii forum,
three Tauernes: whom when Paul ſaw, he
God, and toke courage.
16 And when hee came to Rome, the Centu
liuered the priſoners to the Captaine of the guar
Paul was ſuffered to dwell by himſelfe, with
dier that kept him.
17 And it came to paſſe, that after three
Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together. An
they were come together, hee ſaid vnto them, M
brethren, though I haue committed nothing
the people, or cuſtomes of our fathers, yet was
uered priſoner from Hieruſalem into the hand
Romanes.
18 Who when they had examined mee,
haue let mee goe, becauſe there was no cauſe o
in mee.

But when the Iewes spake against it, I was
ained to appeale vnto Cesar, not that I had ought
use my Nation of.
For this cause therefore haue I called for you,
you, and to speake with you: because that for the
of Israel I am bound with this chaine.
And they said vnto him, Wee neither receiued
rs out of Iudea concerning thee: neither anie of
ethren that came, shewed or spake anie harme
e.
But wee desired to heare of thee what thou thin-
for as concerning this Sect, wee know that eue-
here it is spoken against.
And when they had appointed him a day, there
manie to him into his lodging, to whom hee er-
ed and testified the Kingdome of God, persua-
them concerning Iesus, both out of the Lawe of
s, and out of the Prophets, from Morning till
ning.
And some beleiued the thinges which were spo-
and some beleiued not.
And when they agreed not among themselues,
departed, after that Paul had spoken one worde,
l spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vn-
fathers:
Saying, Goe vnto this people, and say, Hea-
ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and see-
e shall see, and not perceiue.
For the heart of this people is waxed grosse,
heir eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue
closed, lest they should see with their eyes, & heare
their eares, and vnderstand with their heart, and
d bee conuerted, and I should heale them.

28 Bee it knowne therefore vnto you, that the
uation of God is sent vnto the Gentiles, and that
will heare it.

29 And when hee had said these words, the
departed, and had great reasoning among themse

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeeres in his
hyred house, and receiued all that came in vnto

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and te
those thinges which concerne the Lord Iesus C
with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAV
## THE APOSTLE,
### To the Romanes.

## CHAP. I.

1. Pauls calling. 9. His desire to come to the
What his Gospel is. 18. Gods anger ag
sinne. 21. The Gentiles sinnes.

PAul a seruant of Iesus Christ, ca
bee an Apostle, separated vnto t
spel of GOD,

2 (Which hee had promised a
his Prophets in the holy Scriptu

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesu
our Lord, which was made of the seede of Dauid
ding to the flesh.

And declared to bee the Sonne of God, with po-
, according to the Spirit of holinesse, by the Re-
rection from the dead.

By whom wee haue receiued grace and Apostle-
pe, for obedience to the faith among all Nations
his Name:

Among whom are yee also the called of Iesus
ist.

To all that bee in Rome, beloued of God called to
Saincts: Grace to you, and peace from GOD
Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for
all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the
le world.

For GOD is my witnesse, whome I serue
my Spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne, that with-
ceasing, I make mention of you alwayes in my
yers.

Making request (if by any meanes nowe at
gth I might haue a prosperous journey by the will
od) to come vnto you.

For I long to see you, that I may impart vnto
some spirituall gift, to the end you may bee esta-
ed.

That is, that I might bee comforted together
you, by the mutuall faith both of you and mee.

Now I would not haue you ignorant, brethren,
oftentimes I purposed to come vnto you, (but
let hitherto) that I might haue some fruit among
also, euen as among other Gentiles.

I am debter both to thee Grecks, and to the
barians both to the wise, and to the vnwise.

So, as much as in mee is, I am readie to preach

the

the Gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Ch
for it is the power of God vnto Salvation, to euer
that beléeueth, to the Iew first, and also to the Gr

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God re
led from faith to faith, as it is written, The just
liue by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from h
against all vngodlinesse, and vnrighteousnesse of
who hold the trueth in vnrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may bee knowne of G
manifest in them, for God hath shewed it vnto th

20 For the inuisible things of him from the c
on of the world, are clearely séene beeing vnders
the things that are made, euen his eternall powe
God-head, so that they are without excuse.

21 Because that when they knew God, they gl
ed him not as God, neither were thankfull but be
vaine in their imaginations and their foolish
was darkened:

22 Professing themselues to bee wise, they be
fooles:

23 And changed the glorie of the incorruptible
into an image made like to corruptible man,
birds, and foure footed beastes, and créeping thi

24 Wherefore God also gaue them vp to vn
nesse, through the lusts of their owne hearts, to
nour their owne bodie betwéene themselues:

25 Who changed the trueth of God into a li
worshipped and serued the creature more th
Creator, who is blessed for euer. Amen.

26 For this cause God, gaue them vp into v
fections: for euen their women did change th

vse into that which is against Nature.

27 And likewise also the men, leauing the naturall
of the woman, burned in their lust one towards a-
er, men with men, working that which is vnseem-
and receiuing in themselues that recompense of
errour which was meete.

28 And euen as they did not like to retaine God
heir knowledge, God gaue them ouer to a reprobat
e, to doe those thinges which are not conuenient:

29 Beeing filled with all vnrighteousnes, fornica-
, wickednesse, couetousnesse, maliciousnesse, full of
e, murther, debate, deceite, malignitie, whisperers,

30 Backebiters, haters of God, despitefull, proud
ers, inuenters of euill thinges, disobedient to
nts;

31 Without vnderstanding, couenant breakers,
out naturall affection, implaceable, vnmercifull.

32 Who knowing the iudgement of God, (that
which commit such things, are worthie of death)
melie to doe the same, but haue pleasure in them
doe them.

---



hey that condemne sin in others, and yet sin, are
excusable, 3. whether they be Iewes or Gentiles.

Therefore, thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer
ou art that iudgest: for wherein thou iudgest ano-
thou condemnest thy selfe, for thou that iudgest,
the same things.

But wee are sure that the iudgment of God is accor-
to truth, against them which cõmit such things.

And thinkest thou this, O man, that iudgest them
h doe such thinges, and doest the same, that thou

shalt

shall escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse, forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing that goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thine hardnesse, and impenitent heart treasurest vp vnto thy selfe wrath against the day wrath, and reuelation of the righteous iudgement God:

6 Who will render to euerie one according to deedes.

7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing, seeke for glorie, and honour, and immortalitie eternall life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and do not obey the trueth, but obey vnrighteousnesse, indignation, and wrath.

9 Tribulation and anguish vpon euerie soule of man that doeth euill, of the Iew first, and also of the Gentile.

10 But glorie, honour, and peace to euerie man that worketh good, to the Iewe first, and also to the Gentile.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as haue sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as haue sinned in the law, shall bee iudged by the law.

13 (For not the hearers of the law are iust before God, but the doers of the law shall bee iustified.

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the law, doe by Nature the things contained in the law: these hauing not the law, are a law vnto themselues.

15 Which shew the worke of the lawe written in their heartes, their conscience also bearing witnesse,

their thoughts the meane while accusing, or else
ding one another:
In the day when God shall judge the secretes
n by Iesus Christ according to my Gospel.
Behold, thou art called a Iewe, and restest in the
and makest thy boast of God.
And knowest his will, and approuest the things
are more excellent, beeing instructed out of the

And art confident that thou thy selfe art a guide
blinde, a light of them which are in darknesse:
An instructer of the foolish, a teacher of babes:
hast the forme of knowledge and of the trueth in
aw.
Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest
not thy selfe? thou that preachest a man should
eale, doest thou steale?
Thou that sayest, a man should not commit a-
rie, doest thou commit adulterie? thou that ab-
t idoles, doest thou commit sacriledge?
Thou that makest thy boast of the Law, thorow
king the Law, dishonourest thou God?
For the Name of God is blasphemed among the
les through you, as it is written:
For circumcision verilie profiteth, if thou kepe
aw, but if thou bee a breaker of the Law, thy cir-
sion is made vncircumcision.
Therefor, if the circumcision kepe the righte-
e of the Lawe, shall not his vncircumcision bee
ed for circumcision?
And shall not vncircumcision which is by na-
if it fulfill the Law, judge thee, who by the letter
ircumcision doest transgresse the Law?

28 For hee is not a Iew, which is one outwa
neither is that Circumcision, which is outward
flesh:

29 But hee is a Iew which is one inwardlie:
Circumcision is that of the heart, in the Spirit, a
in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of G

## CHAP. III.

1. The Iewes prerogatiue. 9. Yet the Law conui
them also of sinne.: 20. None justified by the
28 But all by *Faith*,

WHat aduantage then hath the Iew? o
profite is there of Circumcision?

2 Much euerie way: chiefly because that vnto
were committed the Oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeue? shall the
belieke make the Faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God bee true, but euery
a liar, as it is written, That thou mightest bee ju
in thy sayings, and mightest ouercome when th
iudged.

5 But if our vnrighteousnesse commend the r
ousnesse of God, what shall wee say? is God u
teous, who taketh vengeance? (I speake as a

6 God forbid: for then how shall God iud
world?

7 For if the trueth of GOD hath more ab
through my lye vnto his glorie, why yet am
iudged as a sinner.

8 And not rather as wee bee slanderously re
and as some affirme that wee say, Let vs do
that good may come: whose damnation is just.

9 What then? are wee better than they?

ile: for wee haue before proued both Iewes and
ntiles, that they are all vnder sinne.
10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no
one:
11 There is none that vnderstandeth, there is none
seeketh after God.
12 They are all gone out of the way, they are to-
ther become vnprofitable, there is none that doeth
, no not one.
13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their
gues they haue vsed deceit, the poyson of aspes is
er their lips:
14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse:
15 Their feete are swift to shed blood.
16 Destruction and miserie are in their wayes.
17 And the way of peace haue they not knowne.
18 There is no feare of God before their eyes.
19 Nowe wee knowe that what thinges soeuer the
saieth, it saieth to them that are vnder the Law:
euerie mouth may bee stopped, and all the world
become guiltie before God.
20 Therefore by the deedes of the Law, there shall
esh bee iustified in his sight: for by the Law is the
ledge of sinne.
21 But nowe the righteousnesse of God without the
is manifested, beeing witnessed by the Law and
rophets.
22 Euen the righteousnesse of God, which is by
of Iesus Christ vnto all, and vpon all them that
eue: for there is no difference:
23 For all haue sinned, and come short of the glory
od.
24 Being iustified freelie by his grace, through the
redemption

redemption that is in Iesus Christ.

25 Whom God hath set forth to bee a propitia
through faith in his blood, to declare his righteous
for the remission of sinnes, that are past, through
forebearance of God:

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righte
nesse: that hee might bee just, and the justifier of
which beleeueth in Iesus.

27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded.
what law? of workes? Nay: but by the law of fa

28 Therefore wee conclude, that a man is just
by faith, without the deedes of the law.

29 Is hee the God of the Iewes onelie? Is he
also of the Gentiles? Yea, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God, which shall justifie
circumcision by faith, and vncircumcision th
faith.

31 Doe wee then make voide the Law through fa
God forbid: yea, wee establish the Law.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Abrahams faith imputed for righteousnesse. 10 fore he was circumcised. 16. Abraham the fa of all beleeuers. 24. Our faith shall bee also puted.

WHat shall wee say then, that Abraham o
ther as pertaining to the flesh, hath found

2 For if Abraham was justified by workes, he
whereof to glorie, but not before God.

3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beli
God, and it was counted vnto him for righteousn

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not
koned of grace, but of debt:

5

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on
that justifieth the ungodlie, his Faith is counted
righteousnesse.
6 Euen as Dauid also described the blessednesse of
man vnto whom God imputeth not righteous-
nesse without workes.
7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are
pardoned, and whose sinnes are couered.
8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not im-
pute sinne.
9 Commeth this blessednesse then vpon the circum-
cision onelie, or vpon the vncircumcision also? for we
say that Faith was reckoned to Abraham for righte-
ousnesse.
10 How was it then reckoned? when hee was in
circumcision, or in vncircumcision? not in circumci-
sion, but in vncircumcision.
11 And hee receiued the signe of circumcision, a
seale of the righteousnesse of the Faith, which hee had
yet being vncircumcised: that he might be the father of
all them that believe, though they bee not circumcised,
that righteousnesse might bee imputed vnto them also.
12 And the father of circumcision to them who are
not of the circumcision onelie, but also walke in the
steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which hee
had being yet vncircumcised.
13 For the promise that hee should bee Heire of the
world was not to Abraham or to his seede through the
Law, but through the righteousnesse of Faith.
14 For if they which are of the Law bee heires, Faith
is made voyde, and the promise made of none effect.
15 Because the Law worketh wrath: for where
no Law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore it is of Faith, that it might b
grace; to the end the promise might bee sure to
seede, not to that onely which is of the Lawe,
that also which is of the Faith of Abraham, who
father of vs all.

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a Fa
manie Nations) before him whom hee beleeued
God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those
which bee not, as though they were.

18 Who against hope beleeued in hope, t
might become the father of manie Nations: ac
to that which was spoken, So shall thy seede be.

19 And being not weake in Faith, hee con
not his owne bodie now dead, when hee was
an hundreth yeeres olde, neither yet the deadn
Saraes wombe.

20 Yee staggered not at the promise of G
row vnbeliefe: but was strong in Faith, giuin
rie to God.

21 And beeing fullie perswaded, that what
promised, hee was able also to performe.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him fo
teousnesse.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alo
it was imputed to him:

24 But for vs also, to whom it shall bee im
if wee beleeue on him that raised vp Iesus ou
from the dead.

25 Who was deliuered for our offences, a
raised againe for our iustification.

## CHAP. V.

1. Beeing iustified by faith, vvee haue pe

d. 12. Sinne and death came by Adam. 17. Righteousnesse and life by Christ.

1 Therefore being justified by Faith, wee haue peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ,

2 By whom also wee haue accesse by Faith, into grace wherein wee stand, and reioyce in hope of glorie of God.

3 And not onelie so, but wee glorie in tribulations, knowing that tribulation worketh patience.

4 And patience, experience: and experience hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holie Ghost ich is giuen vnto vs.

6 For when wee were yet without strength, in due e Christ died for the vngodlie.

7 For scarcelie for a righteous will one die: yet aduentures for a good man, some would euen dare ie.

8 But God commendeth his loue towardes vs, in while wee were yet sinners, Christ died for vs.

9 Much more then being nowe iustified by his d, wee shall bee saued from wrath through him.

10 For if when wee were enemies, wee were re- iled to God, by the death of his Sonne: much more ing reconciled, wee shall bee saued by his life.

11 And not onelie so, but wee also ioye in God thor our Lord Jesus Christ, by whome wee haue nowe iued the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entered into world, and death by sinne: and so death passed vp- all men, for that all haue sinned.

13 For vntill the Law, sinne was in the world: but e is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Neuertheleſſe, death raigned from Ad
Moſes, euen ouer them that had not ſinned afte
ſimilitude of Adams tranſgreſſion, who is the f
of him that was to come.

15 But not as the offence, ſo alſo is the free gi
if through the offence of one, manie bee dead:
more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, wh
by one man, Ieſus Chriſt, hath abounded vnto m

16 And as it was by one that ſinned, ſo is the
for the iudgement was by one to condemnation
the free gift is of manie offences vnto iuſtificati

17 For if by one mans offence, death reign
one, much more they which receiue aboundan
grace and of the gift of righteouſneſſe, ſhall rei
life by one, Ieſus Chriſt.

18 Therefore as by the offence of one, iudge
came vpon all men to condemnation: euen ſo b
righteouſneſſe of one, the free gift came vpon all
vnto iuſtification of life.

19 For as by one mans diſobedience manie
made ſinners: ſo by the obedience of one ſhall
bee made righteous.

20 Moreouer, the Law entred, that the o
might abound: but where ſinne aboundeth, gra
much more abound.

21 That as ſinne hath reigned vnto death
ſo might grace reigne through righteouſneſſe, u
ternall life by Ieſus Chriſt our Lord.

## CHAP. VI.

1. We may not liue in ſinne, 12. nor let ſinne r
in vs. 23. Death is the wages of ſinne.

## CHAP. VI.

1 What shall wee say then? shall wée continue in
sinne, that grace may abound?
2 God forbid: how shall wée that are dead to sinne,
e any longer therein?
3 Know yée not that so manie of vs as were bapti-
vnto Iesus Christ, were baptized into his death?
4 Therefore wée are buried with him by baptisme
to death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the
d by the glorie of the Father: euen so wée also should
ke in newnesse of life.
5 For if wée haue beene planted together in the like-
e of his death: wée shall bee also in the likenesse of
Resurrection.
6 Knowing this, that our olde man is crucified with
m, that the bodie of sinne might bee destroyed, that
hencefoorth wée should not serue sinne.
7 For hée that is dead, is freed from sinne.
8 Now if wée bée dead with Christ, wée beleiue that
e shall also liue with him.
9 Knowing that Christ beeing raised from the dead,
no more, death hath no more dominion ouer him.
10 For in that hee died, hee died vnto sinne once:
in that hee liueth, hee liueth vnto God.
11 Likewise reckon yee also your selues to bee dead
eede vnto sinne: but aliue vnto God, through Iesus
ist our Lord.
12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall
ie, that yée should obey it in the lustes thereof.
13 Neither yéelde yee your members as in'stru-
nts of vnrighteousnesse vnto sinne: but yéelde your
es vnto God, as those that are aliue from the dead,
your members as instrumentes of righteousnesse
God.

14 For sinne shall not haue domination ouer
for yee are not vnder the Law but vnder grace.
15 What then? shall wee sinne, because w
not vnder the Law, but vnder grace? God forbid.
16 Know yee not, that to whom yee yeeld yo
ues seruants to obey, his seruants yee are to wh
obey: whether of sinne vnto death, or of obedien
to righteousnesse?
17 But God bee thanked, that yee were th
uants of sin: but yee haue obeyed from the heart
forme of doctrine, which was deliuered you.
18 Beeing then made free from sinne, yee b
the seruants of righteousnesse.
19 I speake after the manner of men, becau
the infirmitie of your flesh: for as yee haue yo
your members seruantes to vncleannesse and t
quitie, vnto iniquitie: euen so now yeelde your
bers seruants to righteousnesse vnto holinesse.
20 For when yee were the seruantes of sinne
were free from righteousnesse.
21 What fruites had yee then in those th
whereof yee are nowe ashamed? for the ende of
things is death.
22 But now beeing made free from sinne, an
come seruants to God, yee haue your fruite vnt
nesse, and the end euerlasting life.
23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the
God is eternall life, through Iesus Christ our L

## CHAP. VII.

1. No law hath power ouer a man longer than h
ueth. 7. The lawe is not sinne: But holie,
and good.

## CHAP. VII.

Know yée not, Brethren, (for I speak to them that know the Law) how that the Law hath dominion over a man, as long as hée liueth:

For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the Law to her husband so long as hee liueth: but if her husband be dead, shee is loosed from the law of the husband.

So then, if while her husband liueth, shee bee married to another man, shée shall bee called an adulteresse: but if her husband bee dead, shee is free from the law, so that shee is none adulteresse, though shee be married to another man.

Wherefore, my brethren, yee also are become dead to the Law by the Bodie of Christ, that yee should be married to another, euen to him who is raised from the dead, that wee should bring forth fruit vnto God:

For when wee were in the flesh, the motions of sinnes which were by the Lawe, did worke in our members, to bring forth fruite vnto death.

But now wee are deliuered from the Law that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serue in newnesse of spirit, & not in the oldnesse of the letter.

What shall wee say then? Is the Law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not knowne sinne, but by the Law, for I had not knowne lust, except the Law had saide, Thou shalt not couet.

But sinne taking occasion by the Commaundement, wrought in mee all manner of concupiscence; for without the Law, sinne, was dead.

For I was aliue without the Law once but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued, and I died.

And the commaundement which was ordained to life, I found to bee vnto death.

11 For sinne taking occasion by the commaun-
ment, deceiued mee, and by it slew mee.

12 Wherefore the Law is holie, and the Com-
dement holie and iust and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made death
mee, God forbid. But sinne, that it might ap-
sinne, working death in mee by that which is
that sinne by the Commandement might becom-
ceding sinfull.

14 For wee know that the Law is spirituall: b
am carnall, solde vnder sinne.

15 For that which I doe, I allow not: for wh
would, that doe I not, but what I hate, that I

16 If then I doe that which I would not, I
sent vnto the Law, that it is good.

17 Now then it is no more I that doe it, but
that dwelleth in mee.

18 For I knowe that in mee (that is in my
dwelleth no good thing: For to will is present
mee: but how to performe y which is good, I find

19 For the good that I would doe, I doe not: b
euill which I would not, that I doe.

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no m
that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in mee.

21 I finde then a Law, that when I would doe
euill is present with mee.

22 For I delight in the Lawe of God after th
ward man.

23 But I see another law in my members war
against the law of my minde, & bringing mee into
tiuitie to the law of sinne, which is in my mem

24 O wretched man that I am, who shall de
mee from the bodie of this death?

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christe our Lord.
Then with the minde I my selfe serue the Lawe of
God, but with the flesh, the law of sinne.

---

## CHAP. VIII.

Who are free from condemnation. 5. 13, What harme commeth of the flesh: 6. 14. And what good of the Spirit: 17. And what of beeing Gods child.

1 There is therefore no condemnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, who walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Iesus, hath made mee free from the law of sinne and death.

3 For what the Law could not doe, in that it was weake through the flesh, God sendeth his owne Son, in the likenesse of sinfull flesh, and for sinne condemned sinne in the flesh:

4 That the righteousnesse of the Law might be fulfilled in vs, who walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, doe minde the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For to bee carnallie minded is death: but to bee spirituallie minded is life and peace:

7 Because the carnall minde is enmitie against God: for it is not subiect to the Law of God, neither indeede can bee.

8 So then, they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 But yee are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man haue not the Spirit of Christ, hee is none of his.

10 And

10 And if Christ bee in you, the bodie is dead, be
of sinne: but the spirit is life, because of righte
11 But if the spirit of him that raised vp Jesus
the dead, dwell in you: hee that raised vp Christ
the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies
Spirit that dwelleth in you.
12 Therefore brethren, wee are debters, not
flesh, to liue after the flesh.
13 For if yee liue after the flesh, yee shall die:
yee through the Spirit doe mortifie the deeds of t
die, yee shall liue.
14 For as manie as are led, by the Spirit of G
they are the Sonnes of GOD.
15 For yee haue not receiued the Spirit of bo
againe to feare: but yee haue receiued the Spirit
option, whereby wee cry, Abba, Father.
16 The Spirit it selfe beareth witnesse with
Spirit, that wee are the children of God.
17 And if children, then heires, heires of God,
ioynt-heires with Christ: if so bee that wee suffer
him, that wee may bee also glorified together.
18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this p
time, are not worthie to bee compared with the
which shall bee reuealed in vs.
19 For the earnest expectation of the creature,
teth for the manifestation of the Sonnes of God.
20 For the creature was made subiect to van
not willinglie, but by reason of him who hath sub
the same in hope.
21 Because the creature it selfe also shall bee de
red from the bondage of corruption, into the glo
liberties of the children of God.
22 For wee know that the whole creation

and trauaileth in paine together vntill now.
And not on elie they, but our selues also, which
the first fruites of the Spirit, euen wee our selues
ne within our selues, waiting for the adoption, to
the redemption of our bodie.
For wee are saued by hope: but hope that is seene,
t hope: for what a man seeth, why doeth hee yet
for?
But if wee hope for that wee see not, then doe we
patience waite for it.
Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities:
ee know not what wee should pray for as wee
t: but the Spirit it selfe maketh intercession for
ith groanings, which cannot bee vttered.
And hee that searcheth the heartes, knoweth
t is the minde of the Spirit, because he maketh in-
ession for the Saints according to the wil of God.
And wee know that all thinges worke together
good, to them that loue God, to them who are the
d according to his purpose.
For whom hee did foreknow, hee also did prede-
nate to bee conformed to the Image of his Sonne,
he might be the first borne among many brethrē.
Moreouer whom hee did predestinate, them hee
called: and whom hee called, them hee also iustifi-
and whom hee iustified, them hee also glorified.
What shall wee then say to these thinges? If
d bee with vs, who can bee against vs?
He that spared not his owne Sonne, but deli-
him vp for vs all: how shall hee not with him al-
freely giue vs all things?
Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods
ct? It is God that iustifieth:

34 Who is hée that condemneth? It is Chri
died, yea, rather that is risen againe, who is
the right hand of God, who also maketh inter
for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of C
shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or fa
or nakednesse, or perill, or sword?

36 (As it is written, For thy sake wee are
all the day long, wee are accounted as sheepe
slaughter.)

37 Nay, in all these things wée are more tha
querours through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death
life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers
things present, nor things to come.

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other cre
shall bee able to separate vs from the loue of God
is in Iesus Christ our Lord.

## CHAP. IX.

1. Pauls sorrow for the Iewes. 7. All Abraham
were not children of the promise. 25. The calli
the Gentiles, and rejecting of the Iewes.

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my cons
also bearing mee witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and cont
sorrow in mine heart,

3 For I could wish that my selfe were acc
from Christ, for my brethren, my kinsmen acc
to the flesh:

4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth
doption, and the glorie, & the couenants, and the
ing of the Law, and the seruice of God, and the p
ses:

5 W

whose are the Fathers, and of whom as concer-
the flesh, Christ came, who is ouer all, GOD
ed for euer. Amen.

Not as though the Word of GOD hath taken
effect. For they are not all Israel which are of
el:

Neither because they are the seede of Abraham
they all children: but in Isaac shall thy seede bee
d.

That is, They which are the children of the flesh,
are not the children of God: but the children of
promise are counted for the seede.

For this is the worde of promise, At this time
I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

And not onely this, but when Rebecca also had
ceiued by one, euen by our Father Isaac.

(For the children beeing not yet borne, neither
ing done any good or euill that the purpose of God
ding to election might stand, not of workes, but
m that calleth.)

It was said vnto her, The elder shall serue the
ger.

As it is written, Iacob hath I loued, but Esau
I hated.

What shall wee say then? Is there vnrighte-
ousnesse with God? God forbid.

For hee saith to Moses, I will haue mercie on
m I will haue mercie, and I will haue compassion
hom I will haue compassion.

So then, it is not of him that willeth, nor of him
runneth, but of God that sheweth mercie.

For the Scripture sayeth vnto Pharaoh. Euen
his same purpose haue I raised thee vp, that I

might

might shewe my power in thee, and that my
might bee declared throughout all the earth.
18 Therefore hath hee mercie on whom he
haue mercie, and whom hee will, hee hardeneth.
19 Thou wilt say then vnto mee: Why doe
yet finde fault? For who hath resisted his will?
20 Nay, but O man, who art thou that repli
gainst God? Shall the thing formed, say to hi
formed it, Why hast thou made mee thus?
21 Hath not the potter power ouer the clay,
same lumpe, to make one vessell vnto honour, an
ther vnto dishonour?
22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath,
to make his power knowne, indured with much
suffering, the vessels of wrath fitted to destructio
23 And that hee might make knowne the rich
his glorie, on the vessels of mercie, which hee had
prepared vnto glorie.
24 Euen to vs whom hee hath called, not of th
wes onelie, but also of the Gentiles.
25 As hee also saith in Osee: I will call them my
ple which were not my people: and her, beloued,
was not beloued.
26 And it shall come to passe, that in the
where it was said vnto them, Ye are not my pe
there shall they be called the children of the liuing
27 Esaias also cryed concerning Israel, Th
the number of the children of Israel bee as the sa
the Sea, a remnant shall bee saued.
28 For hee will finish the worke, and cut it sh
righteousnesse: because a short worke will the L
make vpon the earth.
29 And as Esaias said before, Except the L
Sabb

oth had left vs a sæde, wee had bæne as Sodoma, bæne made like to Gomorrha.

What shall wee say then? That the Gentiles y followed not after righteousnesse, haue attained hteousnes, euen the righteousnes, which is faith.

But Israel which followed after the Law of righ- lnes, hath not attained to the law of righteousnes.

Wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, as it were by the workes of the Law: for they stum- at that stumbling stone;

As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stum- g stone, and Rocke of offence: and whosoeuer belæ- on him, shall not bæ ashamed.

## CHAP. X.

The difference of the righteousnesse of the Law, d that of Faith. 11. No belieuer shall bee con- ounded, whether Iew or Gentile.

Brethren, mine hearts desire and prayer to GOD for Israel is, that they might bæ saued.

For I beare them record, that they haue a zeale od, but not according to knowledge.

For they bæing ignorant of Gods righteousnes, & about to establish their own righteousnes, haue submitted themselues vnto the righteousnesse of

For Christ is the end of the Lawe for righteous- to euerie one that belæueth.

For Moses describeth the righteousnesse which is Law, that the man which doth these things shall y them.

But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh is wise. Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend aauen? that is, to bring Christ down fr aboue.

7 Or who shall descend into the deepe? t
to bring vp Christ againe from the dead.

8 But what saith it? The word is nigh tha
in thy mouth, and in thine heart, that is, th
of faith which wee preach.

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mo
Lord Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart th
raised him from the dead, thou shalt bee saued.

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto
teousnesse, and with the mouth confession is ma
to Saluation.

11 For the Scripture saith, Whosoeuer be
on him, shall not bee ashamed.

12 For there is no difference betweene the
and the Greeke: for the same Lord ouer all,
vnto all that call vpon him.

13 For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name
Lord, shall bee saued.

14 How then shall they call on him in who
haue not beleeued? and how shall they beleeue
of whom they haue not heard? and how shall the
without a Preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be
As it is written, How beautifull are the feete
that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring
dings of good things!

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gosp
Esaias saith, Lord, who hath beleeued our rep

17 So then, Faith commeth by hearing, a
ring by the word of God.

18 But I say, Haue they not heard? yes
their sound went into all the earth, and their
vnto the ends of the world.

But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses
I will prouoke you to sealousie by them that are
ople, and by a foolish Nation, I will anger you.
But Esaias is verie bolde, and saith, I was
of them that sought mee not: I was made mani-
to them that asked not after mee.
But to Israel hee saith, All day long haue I
hed forth mine handes vnto a disobedient and
saying people.

## CHAP. XI.

d hath not cast off all Israel. 7. Some were ele-
d, though the rest were hardened. 18. The Gen-
s may not insult vpon them.

y, then, hath God cast away his people? God
id. For I am an Israelite of the sæde of Abra-
of the tribe of Benjamin.
God hath not cast away his people which hee
new. Wot yee not what the Scripture saith of
how hee maketh intercession to God against
, saying,
Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets, and digged
thine Altars, and I am left alone, and they
my life.
But what saith the answere of God vnto him?
reserued to my selfe seuen thousand men, who
not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.
Euen so then at this present time also there is a
nt according to the election of grace.
And if by grace, then it is no more of workes:
ise grace is no more grace. But if it bee of
s, then it is no more grace, otherwise worke is
e worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that
hée sæketh for, but the election hath obtained
the rest were blind.

8 According as it is written, God hath giuen
the spirit of slumber: eyes that they should not se
eares that they should not heare vnto this day.

9 And Dauid saith, Let their table bee made
and a trap, and a stumbling blocke, and a recom
vnto them.

10 Let their eyes bee darkened, that they m
see, and bow downe their backe alway.

11 I say then, Haue they stumbled that they
fall? God forbid. But rather through their fall
uation is come vnto the Gentiles, for to prouoke
to iealousie.

12 Nowe if the fall of them, bee the riches
world, and the diminishing of them, the riches
Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speake to you Gentiles, in as much, as
the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine off

14 If by any meanes I may prouocke to
sion them which are my flesh, and might save
of them.

15 For if the casting away of them bee the re
ling of the worlde: what shall the receiuing of
bee, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruite bee holie, the lumpe
holie: and if the rote bee holie, so are the branc

17 And if some of the branches bee broken
thou being an wilde oliue tree wert grafted in a
them, and with them partakest of the rote and
of the Oliue tree:

18 Boast not against the branches: but

thou beareſt not the roote, but the roote thee.
Thou wilt ſay then, The branches were broken
at I might bee grafted in:
Well: becauſe of vnbeliefe, they were broken
d thou ſtandeſt by faith. Bee not high minded,
are.
For if God ſpared not the naturall branches,
ede leſt hee alſo ſpare not thee.
Behold therefore the goodneſſe and ſeueritie of
on them which fell, ſeueritie: but towards thee,
ſſe, if thou continue in his goodneſſe: otherwiſe
alſo ſhalt bee cut off
d they alſo, if they bide not ſtill in vnbeliefe, ſhal
fted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.
For if thou were cut out of the Oliue tree which
e by nature, and wert grafted contrary to na-
nto a good Oliue tree: how much more ſhall theſe
bee the naturall branches, bee grafted into their
Oliue tree?
or I would not brethren, that yee ſhould be igno-
of this miſterie (leſt yee ſhould bee wiſe in your
ceits) that blindnes in part is happned to Iſrael,
e fulneſſe of the Gentiles bee come in.
And ſo all Iſrael ſhall bee ſaued, as it is written,
ſhall come out of Sion, a Deliuerer, and ſhall
away vngodlineſſe from Iacob.
For this is my couenant vnto them, when I
e away their ſinnes.
As concerning the Goſpel, they are enemies
ſake: but as touching the election, they are be-
or the fathers ſakes.
For the gifts and calling of God are without
nce,

30 For as yee in times past haue not b
GOD, yet haue now obtained mercie throu
vnbeliefe:

31 Euen so haue these also now not believe
through your mercie they may also obtaine mer

32 For God hath concluded them all in vnb
that hee might haue mercie vpon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wi
and knowledge of God! howe vnsearchable
iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 For who hath knowne the minde of the
or who hath beene his counseller?

35 Or who hath first giuen to him and it s
recompensed vnto him againe?

36 For of him, and through him, and to h
all things: to whom bee glorie for euer. Amen

## CHAP. XII.

1. Gods mercie must moue vs to please God. 6. e
man must attend his calling. 9. Loue and
dueties required. 19. Reuenge forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore Brethren, by the mer
God, that yee present your bodies a liuing
sacrifice, holie, acceptable vnto God, which is, y
sonable seruice.

2 And bee not conformed to this world: but
transformed by the renuuing of your minde, t
may proue what is that good, that acceptable a
fect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace giuen vnto
euerie man that is among you, not to thinke
selfe more highlie than hee ought to thinke
thinke soberlie, according as God hath deal

an the measure of Faith.
For as wee haue many members in one bodie, and
embers haue not the same office:
So wee beeing manie, are one bodie in Christ, and
one members one of another.
Hauing then giftes, differing according to the
that is giuen to vs, whether prophecie, let vs
ecie according to the proportion of Faith.
Or ministerie, let vs wait on our ministring: or
at teacheth, on teaching:
Or hee that exhorteth, on exhortation: hee that
h, let him doe it with simplicitie: hee that ruleth,
ligence: hee that sheweth mercie, with cheare-
lle.
Let loue bee without dissimulation: abhorre that
is euill, cleaue to that which is good.
Bee kindlie affectioned one to another with bro-
ie loue, in honour preferring one another.
Not slouthfull in businesse; feruent in spirit, ser-
the Lord.
Rejoycing in hope, patient in tribulation, con-
ing instant in prayer.
Distributing to the necessities of Saintes, gi-
g hospitalitie.
Blesse thē which persecute you, blesse; curse not.
Rejoyce with them that doe rejoyce, and weepe
them that wœpe.
Bee of the same minde one towardes another.
e not high thinges, but condescend to men of
state. Wee not wise in your owne conceits.
Recompense to no man euill for euill. Prouide
s honest in the sight of all men.
If it bee possible, as much as lyeth in you, liue

peaceablie with all men.

19 Dearelie beloued, auenge not your selues rather giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine, I will repay saith the Lord.

20 Therefore if thine enemie hunger, fede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing thou shalt heape coales of fire vpon his heade.

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with good.

## CHAP. XIII.

1. Our dueties to Magistrates. 8. Loue is the fulfilling of the Law. 11. Against gluttonie, drunkennesse, and the workes of darknesse.

LEt euerie soule bee subiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God. The powers that bee, are ordained of God.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues damnation.

3 For Rulers are not a terrour to good workes, but to the euill. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? doe that which is good, and thou shalt haue praise of the same.

4 For he is the Minister of God to thee for good. But if thou doe that which is euill, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vaine: for he is the Minister of God, a reuenger to execute wrath vpon him that doeth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must needes be subiect, not onely for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For this cause pay you tribute also: for they are GODS Ministers, attending continually vpon this verie thing.

7

## CHAP. XIIII.

Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to
tribute is due, custome to whom custome, feare
om feare, honour to whom honour.
Owe no man anie thing, but to loue one another,
that loueth another hath fulfilled the Law.
For this, Thou shalt not commit Adulterie, Thou
not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not
false witnesse: Thou shalt couet: and if there
nie other Commandement, it is briefly compre-
ed in this saying: namely, Thou shalt loue thy
bour as thy selfe.
Loue worketh none ill to his Neighbour, there-
loue is the fulfilling of the Law.
And that, knowing the time, that nowe it is
time to awake out of sleepe, for now is our Sal-
nnearer than when wee beleeued.
The night is farre spent, the day is at hand, let
erefore cast off the workes of darkenesse, and let
t on the armour of light.
Let vs walke honestlie as in the day, not in ry-
and drunkennesse, not in chambering and wan-
sse, not in strife and enuying.
But put yee on the Lord Iesus Christ & make
ouision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

## CHAP. XIIII.

en may not contemne nor condemne one another
thinges indifferent, 13. but take heede of giu-
offence in them.
Im that is weake in the Faith receiue you, but
not to doubtfull disputations.
For one beleeueth that hee may eate all thinges:
er who is weake, eateth hearbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that
not: and let not him which eateth not, judge h
eateth. For God hath receiued him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another mans ser
to his own Master hee standeth or falleth: Yea, h
bee holden vp: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day aboue another:
ther esteemeth euerie day alike. Let euerie ma
fullie perswaded in his owne minde.

6 Hee that regardeth a day, regardeth it t
Lord: and he that regardeth not the day to the L
doeth not regard it. Hee that eateth, eateth to the
for hee giueth God thankes: and hee that eateth
the Lord hee eateth not, and giueth God thankes.

7 For none of vs liue to himselfe, and no man
to himselfe.

8 For whether wee liue, wee liue vnto the Lo
whether wee die, wee die vnto the Lord: whether
liue therefore or die, wee are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose & ra
that hee might bee Lord both of the dead and liuin

10 But why doest thou judge thy brother? o
doest thou set at naught thy brother? wee shall all
before the Iudgement seate of Christ.

11 For it is written, As I liue, saith the Lo
uerie knee shall bowe to mee, and euerie tongue
confesse to God.

12 So then, euerie one of vs shall giue acco
himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore judge one another any
but judge this rather, that no man put a stum
blocke, or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, & am perswaded by the Lord Iesus,

nothing vnclean of it self: but to him that estée-
ny thing to bée vncleane, to him it is vncleane.
But if thy brother bée grieued with thy Meate,
walkest thou not charitablie. Destroy not him
by meate, for whom Christ died.
Let not then your good bée euill spoken of.
For the Kingdome of God, is not meat & drink,
ghteousnesse, and peace, & joy in the holy Ghost.
For hée that in these thinges serueth Christ, is
able to God, and approued of men.
Let vs therefore follow after these things which
for peace, and thinges wherewith one may edifie
er.
For meat destroy not the worke of GOD: all
s indéede are pure: but it is euill for that man
ateth with offence.
It is good neither to eate flesh, nor to drink wine,
ny thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is of-
d, or is made weake.
Hast thou Faith? Haue it to thy selfe before
Happie is hée that condemneth not himselfe in
ing which hee alloweth.
And hée that doubteth, is damned if hée eate, be-
hée eateth not of Faith: For whatsoeuer is not of
is sinne.

## CHAP. XV.

he strong muste beare with the weake. 2. Wee
ust not please our selues, 7. but receiue one ano-
er, as Christ did vs all.

WE the that are not strong, ought to beare the in
firmities of ỹ weak, & not to please our selues.
et euerie one of vs please his neighbour for his good
dification.

3 For

3 For euen Christ pleased not himselfe, b
is written, The reproaches of them that re
thee, fell on mee.

4 For whatsoeuer things were written af
were written for our learning, that wee thr
tience and comfort of the Scriptures, might ha

5 Now the God of patience and consolatio
you to be like minded one towardes another, ac
to Christ Iesus:

6 That ye may with one minde, and one mo
rifie God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus C

7 Wherefore receiue yee one another, as C
so receiued vs, to the glorie of God.

8 Now, I say, that Iesus Christ was a mini
the Circumcision for the trueth of God, to co
the promises made vnto the Fathers.

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God
mercie, as it is written. For this cause I will c
to thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy N

10 And againe hee saith, Reioyce yee Ge
with his people.

11 And againe, Praise the Lord all yee Ge
and laude him all yee people.

12 And againe, Esaias saith, There shall be
of Iesse, and hee shall rise to reigne ouer the Ge
in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all ioy
peace in beleeuing, that yee maye abound in
through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you
brethren that yee also are full of goodnesse, fille
all knowledge, able also to admonish one anothe

15 Neuertheles, brethren, I haue written the

vnto you, in some sort, as putting you in mind,
e of the grace that is giuen to mee of God.
That I should bee the Minister of Iesus Christ
Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God that the
g vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being
ed by the holie Ghost.
I haue therefore whereof I may glorie through
Christ, in those things which pertaine to God.
For I will not dare to speake of any of those
s which Christ hath not wrought by mee, to
the Gentiles obedient by word and deede.
Through mightie signes and wonders, by the
e of the Spirit of God, so that from Hierusalem,
und about vnto Illyricum, haue I fullie prea-
he Gospel of Christ.
Yea, so haue I striued to preach the Gospel, not
e Christ was named, lest I should build vpon
er mans foundation:
But as it is written, To whom hee was not spo-
, they shall see: and they that haue not heard,
vnderstand.
For which cause also, I haue bene much hinde-
om comming to you.
But now hauing no more place in these partes,
ning a great desire these many yeeres to come
you.
Whensoeuer I take my iourney into Spaine,
ll come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney
to bee brought on my way thitherward by you, if
I bee somewhat filled with your companie.
But now I goe vnto Hierusalem, to minister
the Saincts.
For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and
Achaia,

Achaia, to make a certaine contribution for the Saincts which are at Hierusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verilie, and their debters they are. For if the Gentiles haue bene made partakers of their spirituall things, their duetie is to minister vnto them carnall things.

28 When therefore I haue performed this, and haue sealed to them this fruite, I will come by you to Spaine.

29 And I am sure, that when I come vnto you, I shall come in the fulnesse of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, Brethren, for the Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the Spirite, that you striue together with mee, in your prayers to God for mee,

31 That I may be deliuered from them that doe not beleiue in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue for Hierusalem, may bee accepted of the Saincts:

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you bee refreshed.

33 Now, the God of peace bee with you all. Amen.

## CHAP. XVI.

3. Paul sendeth greeting to many, 17. and admonisheth to take heede of those who cause dissention and offences. 21, and endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea.

2 That yee receiue her in the Lord, as becommeth Saints, & that yee assist her in whatsoeuer businesse she hath need of you: for she hath bene a succourer

, and of my ſelfe alſo.
Greet Priſcilla and Aquila, mine helpers in
Jeſus:
(Who hath for my life laide downe their owne
: vnto whom not onelie I giue thankes, but
ll the Churches of the Gentiles.)
Likewiſe greet the Church that is in their houſe.
e my welbeloued Epenetus, who is the firſt
es of Achaia vnto Chriſt.
Greet Mary, who beſtowed much labour on vs:
Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinſmen, and
llow priſoners, who are of note among the Apo-
who alſo were in Chriſt before mee.
Greet Amplias my beloued in the Lord.
Salute Urbane our helper in Chriſt, and Sta-
my beloued.
Salute Apelles approued in Chriſt. Salute
which are of Ariſtobulus houſhold.
Salute Herodion my kinſman. Greet them that
the houſhold of Narciſſus, which are in the Lord.
Salute Tryphena and Tryphoſa, who labour in
rd. Salute the beloued Perſis, which laboured
in the Lord.
Salute Rufus choſen in the Lord, and his Mo-
and mine.
Salute Aſyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patro-
Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.
Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus, and his
, and Olympas, and all the Saintes which are
them.
Salute one another with an holie kiſſe. The
ches of Chriſt ſalute you.
Now I beſeech you Brethren, marke them
them

which cause diuisions and offences, contrarie
doctrine which yee haue learned, and auoide the
18 For they that are such, serue not our Lo
sus Christ, but their owne bellie; and by good
and faire speaches, deceiue the hearts of the sim
19 For your obedience is come abroad
men. I am glad therefore on your behalfe: but
would haue you wise vnto that which is good; an
ple concerning euill.
20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan
your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus
be with you. Amen.
21 Timotheus my worke-fellow, and Lucius
Jason, and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.
22 I Tertius who wrote this Epistle, sal
in the Lord.
23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Chur
luteth you. Erastus the Chamberlaine of the
luteth you and Quartus a brother.
24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be
you all. Amen.
25 Now to him that is of power to establish
cording to my Gospel, and the preaching of
Christ, according to the reuelation of the my
which was kept secret, since the world began:
26 But now is made manifest, and by the
tures of the Prophets according to the comma
ment of the euerlasting God, made knowne to all
tions for the obedience of Faith.
27 To God onelie wise, bee glorie through
Christ, for euer. Amen.
¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus
sent by Phebe, seruant of the Church at Cench

# HE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE, To the Corinthians.

## CHAP. I.

r salutations and thankesgiuing, 10. he exhor-
to vnitie: 12. And reproueth their dissention.
God destroyeth the wisedome of the wise.

Aul called to bee an Apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother.

2 Unto the Church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to bee Saints, with in euery place call vpon the Name of Jesus ur Lord, both theirs and ours.

race bee vnto you, and peace from God our Fa- nd from the Lord Jesus Christ.

thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe, for re of God which is giuen you by Jesus Christ.

hat in euerie thing yee are enriched by him, in rance, and in all knowledge:

uen as the Testimonie of Christ was confirmed

o that yee come behinde in no gift, waiting for ming of our Lord Jesus Christ,

ho shall also confirme you vnto the end, that yee blameles in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

od is faithfull, by whom yee were called vnto lowship of his Sonne Jesus Christ our Lord.

Now I beseech you, Brethren, by the Name of

our

our Lord Iesus Christ, that yee all speake the
thing, and that there bee no diuision among ye
that yee bee perfectlie ioyned together in the
minde, and in the same iudgement,

11 For it hath beene declared vnto mée of ye
brethren, by them which are of the house of Cloe,
there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that euery one of you saith
am of Paul, and I of Apollo, and I of Cephas,
of Christ.

13 Is Christ diuided? was Paul crucified fo
or were yee baptized in the name of Paul.

14 I thanke God that I baptised none of you
Crispus and Gaius.

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in
owne name.

16 And I baptized also the houshold of Step
besides, I know not whether I baptized any ot

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to
the Gospel: not with wisedome of wordes,
Crosse of Christ should bee made of none effect.

18 For the preaching of the Crosse is to the
perish, foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saue
the power of God.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wi
of the wise, and will bring to nothing the vnd
ding of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise? where is the Scribe?
is the disputer of this world? Hath not God m
lish the wisedome of this world?

21 For after that in the wisedome of God
world by wisedome knew not God, it pleased
the foolishnesse of preaching, to saue them that

For the Iewes require a signe, and the Græks after wisedome.

But wee preach Christ crucified, vnto the Iewes a stumbling blocke, and vnto the Greekes foolishnes:

But vnto them which are called, both Iewes and Greekes, Christ the power of God, and the wisedome of God.

Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser than men, and the weaknesse of God is stronger than men.

For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

But God hath chosen the foolish thinges of the world, to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weake thinges of the world, to confound the things which are mighty.

And base thinges of the worlde, and thinges which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things that are not, to bring naught things that are.

That no flesh should glorie in his presence.

But of him are ye in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisedome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption.

That according as it is written. He that glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.

## CHAP. II.

Pauls preaching, though without excellencie of speach or of wisedome, yet 6. excelleth the wisedome of this world, and 14. the naturall mans vnderstanding.

And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellencie of speach, or of wisedome, declar-

ting vnto you the testimonie of God.

2 For I determined not to know anie thing
you, saue Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakenesse, and
and in much trembling.

4 And my speach, and my preaching was
entising words of mans wisedome, but in dem
tion of the Spirit, and of power.

5 That your Faith should not stand in
dome of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit wee speake wisedome among
are perfect: yet not the wisedome of this world,
the princes of this world, that come to naught.

7 But wee speake the wisedome of God in
tie: euen the hidden wisedome which God ordai
fore the world, vnto our glorie.

8 Which none of the princes of this world
for had they knowne it, they would not haue
the Lord of glorie.

9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seene,
heard, neither haue entred into the heart of m
things which God hath prepared for them ŷ lo

10 But God haue reuealed them vnto vs by
rit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea,
things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a
the Spirit of man which is in him? Euen so th
of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of G

12 Now we haue receiued not the spirit of th
but the Spirit which is of God, that wee migh
things that are freelie giuen to vs of God.

13 Which things also we speak, not in ŷ wor
mans wisedome teacheth, but which the hol

heth, comparing ſpirituall things with ſpirituall.
But ỹ natural mã receiueth not ỹ things of ỹ ſpi-
f God, for they are fooliſhnes vnto him, neither can
now them, becauſe they are ſpiritually diſcerned.
But hee that is ſpirituall, iudgeth all things, yet
imſelfe is iudged of no man.
For who hath knowne the minde of the Lord, that
ay inſtruct him? But we haue the minde of Chriſt.

## CHAP. III.

rife and diuiſions are arguments of a fleſhly mind.
Hee that planteth and hee that watereth are no-
ing.
Nd I, brethren, could not ſpeake vnto you as vn-
to ſpirituall, but as vnto carnall, euen as vnto
s in Chriſt.
I haue fed you with milke, and not with meate,
itherto yee were not able to beare it, neither yet
are yee able.
For yee are not carnall: for whereas there is a-
g you enuying, and ſtrife, and diuiſions, are yee
arnall, and walke as men?
For while one ſaith, I am Paul, and another, I
f Apollo, are yee not carnall?
Who then is Paul? and who is Apollo? but Mi-
rs by whom yee beleeued, euen as the Lord gaue
erie man.
I haue planted, Apollo watered: but God gaue
ncreaſe.
o then neither is hee that planteth any thing, nei-
he ỹ watereth: but God that giueth the increaſe.
Now hee that planteth, and hee that watereth,
e: and euery man ſhall receiue his owne reward
ding to his owne labour.

9 For wee are labourers together with God, are Gods husbandrie, yee are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God, which is g vnto mee, as a wise Master builder haue I laide foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But man take heed how hee buildeth therevpon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, than is laide, which is Iesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build vpon this foundati gold, siluer, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble.

13 Euerie mans worke shall bee made man For the day shall declare it, because it shall bee re led by fire, and the fire shall try euery mans wo what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke abide which hee hath therevpon, hee shall receiue a reward.

15 If any mans worke shalbe burnt, hee shall l losse: but hee himselfe shall bee saued: yet so, as by

16 Know yee not that yee are the Temple of and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If anie man defile the Temple of God, him God destroy: For the Temple of God is holie, Temple yee are,

18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: if any man a you seemeth to bee wise in this world, let him b a foole, that hee may bee wise.

19 For the wisedome of this world is foolis with God: for it is written, Hee taketh the w their owne craftinesse.

20 And againe, the Lorde knoweth, the tho of the wise that they are vaine.

21 Therefore let no man glorie in men, thing es are yours.

22

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the
rld, or life, or death, or thinges present, or things
come, all are yours,
23 And yee are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

## CHAP. IIII.

How to account of Ministers. 17. We haue nothing but wee haue receiued it. 9. The Apostles 15. are our fathers in Christ.

Et a man so account of vs as of the Ministers of Christ, and stewardes of the misteries of God.
2 Moreouer, it is required in stewardes that a man
found faithfull.
3 But with mee it is a verie small thing that I
uld bes judged of you, or of mans judgement: yea,
udge not mine owne selfe.
4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not
reby justified: but hee that judgeth mee, is the Lord.
5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, vntill
Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden
ngs of darknesse, and will make manifest the coun-
of the heartes, and then shall euerie man haue
ise of God.
6 And these thinges, Brethren, I haue in a figure
ransferred to my selfe, and to Apollo, for your sakes:
t yee might learne in vs not to thinke of men, aboue
t which is written, that no one of you bee puffed vp
one against another.
For who maketh thee to differ from another? And
at hast thou, that thou didst not receiue? Nowe if
u didst receiue it, why doest thou glorie, as if thou
not receiued it?
8 Now yee are full, now yee are rich, yee haue reig-

ned as kinges without vs, and I would to God ye
reigne, that wee also might reigne with you.

9 For I think that God hath set forth vs the Ap
last, as it were approued to death. For wee are m
spectacle vnto the world, and to Angels, and to m

10 Wee are fooles for Christs sake, but yee are
in Christ. Wee are weake, but yee are strong; ye
honourable, but wee are despised.

11 Euen vnto this present houre wee both h
and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and
no certaine dwelling place.

12 And labour, working with our own hands:
reuiled, wee blesse: being persecuted, wee suffe

13 Being defamed, wee intreat: wee are ma
the filth of the world, and are the off-scouring
thinges vnto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but
beloued sonnes I warne you.

15 For though you haue ten thousand instruct
Christ, yet haue yee not many fathers: for in
Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers
17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timo
who is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lor
shall bring you into remembrance of my wayes
be in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery C

18 Now some are puffed vp as though I wo
come vnto you.

19 But I will come to you shortlie, if the Lor
and will know, not the speach of them which ar
fed vp, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word
in power.

21 W

what will yee? Shall I come vnto you with a
or in loue, and in the Spirit of meekenesse?

## CHAP. V.

The incestuous person. 7. The old leauen must bee
purged out. 10. Hainous offenders to bee auoided.

It is reported commonlie, that there is fornication
among you, and such fornication as is not so much
named among the Gentiles, that one should haue
his fathers wife.

And yee are puffed vp, and haue not rather mour-
, that hee that hath done this deede might bee tak-
away from among you.

For I verilie, as absent in bodie, but present in spi-
haue judged alreadie, as though I were present,
cerning him that hath done this deede.

In the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, when yee
gathered together, and my spirit with the power
ur Iesus Christ,

To deliuer such a one vnto Satan, for the destru-
of the flesh, that the spirit may bee saued in the
of the Lord Iesus.

Your glorying is not good: know yee not that a
leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

Purge out therefore the olde leauen, that yee
bee a new lumpe, as yee are vnleauened. For e-
Christ our Passeouer is sacrificed for vs,

Therefore let vs keepe the Feast, not with old lea-
neither with the leauen of malice & wickednesse:
with the leauened bread of sinceritie and trueth.

I wrote vnto you an Epistle, not to companie
fornicators.

Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this

world, or with the couetous, or extortioners, or
idolaters, for then must yee needs goe out of the
11 But now I haue written vnto you, not to
companie, if anie man that is called a brother
fornicator, or couetous, or an idolater, or a re
or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with such a one
not to eate.
12 For what haue I to doe to judge them also
are without? doe not yee judge them that are wi
13 But them y are without God judgeth. Ther
put away from among your selues y wicked perso

## CHAP. VI.

1. Goe not to Law with the brethren, 6. espec
vnder infidels. 9. The vnrighteous shall not
rite Gods Kingdome. 15. our bodies are th
members.

DAre any of you, hauing a matter against
ther, goe to Lawe before the vnjust, and n
fore the Saintes.
2 Doe yee not know that the Saintes shall
the world? And if the world shall bee judged by
are yee vnworthie to judge the smallest matters?
3 Know yee not that yee shall judge Angels?
much more things that pertaine to this life?
4 If then yee haue iudgement of thinges per
ing to this life, set them to judge who are least est
in the Church.
5 I speake to your shame: Is it so, that ther
not a wise man among you? no not one, that sha
able to judge betweene his brethren?
6 But brother goeth to Law with brother, and
before the vnbelieuers.

Now therefore, there is vtterlie a fault among
because yee goe to Lawe one with another: Why
yee not rather take wrong? Why doe yee not ra-
suffer your selues to bee defrauded?
Nay, you doe wrong and defraud, and that your
hren.
Know yee not that the vnrighteous shall not in-
te the Kingdome of God? Bee not deceiued: nei-
fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effe-
nate, nor abusers of themselues with mankind.
o Nor thæues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor
lers, nor extortioners, shall inherite the Kingdome
God.
1 And such were some of you: but yee are washed,
yee are sanctified, but yee are iustified in the Name
e Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.
2 All things are lawfull vnto mee, but all things
not expedient: all things are lawfull for mee, but I
not bee brought vnder the power of any.
3 Meates for the bellie, and the bellie for meates,
God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body
od for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord
he bodie.
4 And God hath both raised vp the Lord, and will
raise vp vs by his owne power.
5 Know yee not that our bodies are the members
hrist? Shall I then take the members of Christ,
make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.
6 What, know yee not that hee which is ioyned
n harlot, is one bodie? For two (saith hee) shall
ne flesh.
7 But hee that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one
rit.

18 Flee fornication: Euerie sinne that a m
eth, is without the bodie: but hee that committ
nication sinne against his owne bodie.

19 What? knowe yee not that your bodie
Temple of the holy Ghost, which is in you, wh
haue of God and yee are not your owne?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore
God in your body, and in your spirit which are

## CHAP. VII.

2. Marriage, 4. a remedie against fornication. 10
lightlie to bee dissolued. 18. 20. Euerie on
bee content with his calling. 25. Of virgin

NOw concerning the things whereof yee wr
mée, It is good for a man not to touch a wo

2 Neuertheless, to auoid fornication, let
man haue his owne wife, and let euery woman
her owne husband.

3 Let the husband render vnto the wife due
volence: and likewise also the wife vnto the hus

4 The wife hath not power of her owne bodie
the husband: and likewise also the husband hath
wer of his owne bodie, but the wife.

5 Defraude you not one the other, except it b
consent for a time, that yee may giue your sel
fasting and prayer, and come together againe,
Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, and not of
mandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as
selfe: but euerie man hath his proper gift of G
after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the vnmarried and wid

good for them if they abide euen as I.
But if they cannot containe, let them marrie: for
better to marrie than to burne.
And vnto the married, I command, yet not I,
the Lord, Let not the wife depart frō her husband,
But and if shee depart, let her remaine vnmar-
or bee reconciled to her husband: and let not the
and put away his wife.
But to the rest speake I, not the Lord, If anie
er hath a wife that beleeueth not, and shee bee
ed to dwell with him, let him not put her away.
And the woman which hath an husband that
eth not, and if hee bee pleased to dwell with her,
et not leaue him.
For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified by the
, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified by the hus-
: else were your children vncleane, but now are
holie.
But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart.
ther or a sister is not vnder bondage in such cases:
God hath called vs to peace.
For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou
saue thine husband? Or how knowest thou, O
, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?
But as God hath distributed to euerie man, as
ord hath called euerie one, so let him walke, and
daine I in all Churches.
Is any man called being circumcised? let him
become vncircumcised? Is any called in vncir-
cision, let him not be circumcised.
Circumcision is nothing, & vncircumcision is no-
g, but the keeping of the cōmandements of God.
Let euerie man abide in the same calling wherein
was called,

21 Art thou called beeing a seruant? care
it: but if thou mayest bee made free, vse it rath
22 For hee that is called of the Lord, beei
uant, is the Lords free man: likewise also, he
called beeing free, is Christs seruant.
23 Yee are bought with a price, but bee not
seruants of men.
24 Brethren, let euerie man wherein hee i
therein abide with God.
25 Now concerning virgines, I haue no
dement of the Lord: yet I giue my judgement
that hath obtained mercie of the Lord to bee f
26 I suppose therefore that this is good for
sent distresse, I say, that it is good for a man so
27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke no
loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not
28 But and if thou marrie, thou hast not sin
if a virgine marrie, shee hath not sinned: neuert
such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spar
29 But this, I say, Brethren, the time i
It remaineth, that both they that haue wiues
though they had none.
30 And they that weepe, as though they wep
and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced n
they that buy, as though they possessed not.
31 And they that vse this world, as not abu
for the fashion of this world passeth away.
32 But I would haue you without carefulne
that is vnmarried, careth for the things that be
the Lord how hee may please the Lord.
33 But hee that is married, careth for the
that are of the world, how hee may please his wif
34 There is difference also betweene a wif

e: the vnmarried woman careth for the thinges
Lord, that shee may bee holie, both in bodie and
it: but shee that is married, careth for the things
world, how shee may please her husband.
And this I speake for your owne profit, not that
cast a snare vpon you, but for that which is
ie, and that you may attend vpon the Lord with-
traction.
But if any man thinke that hee behaueth him-
ncomelie toward his virgine, if shee passe the
of her age and need so require, let him doe what
ll, hee sinneth not: let them marrie.
Neuertheless, hee that standeth stedfast in his
hauing no necessitie, but hath power ouer his
will, and hath so decreede in his heart, that hee
epe his virgine, doeth well.
So then he that giueth her in marriage, doth wel:
e that giueth her not in marriage, doeth better.
The wife is bound by the Lawe as long as her
husband liueth: but if her husband bee dead, shee is at
e to bee married on whō she wil, only in the Lord.
But shee is happier if shee so abide, after my
ment, and I thinke also that I haue the Spirit of



emust abstaine from meates offereth to idoles:
9. and not abuse our libertie to offend our bre-
n: 11. but bridle our knowledge with charitie.
Now as touching things offered vnto idoles, wee
know that wee all haue knowledge. Knowledge
b vp: but charitie edifieth.
And if any man thinke, that hee knoweth anie
thing

thing, hee knoweth nothing yet as hee ought to
3 But if anie man loue God, the same is kno
him.
4 As concerning therefore the eating of those
that are offered in sacrifice vnto idoles, wee kno
an idole is nothing in the world, and that there
other God but one.
5 For though there bee that are called gods,
ther in heauen or in earth (as there bee gods
and lords many:)
6 But to vs there is but one God, the Fathe
whom are all thinges, and wee in him, and one
Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, and wee by
7 Howbeit there is not in euery man that
ledge: for some with conscience of the idole vnt
houre, eate it as a thing offred vnto an idole, and
conscience beeing weake, is defiled.
8 But meat commendeth vs not to God: for
ther if wee eate, are wee the better: neither if we
not, are wee the worse.
9 But take heede lest by any meanes this liber
yours become a stumbling block to them ý are w
10 For if any man see thee which hast kno
sit at meate in the idole Temple: shall not the
ence of him which is weake, bee emboldened t
those things which are offered to idoles?
11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak
ther perish, for whom Christ died?
12 But when ye sinne so against the brethre
wound their weake conscience, ye sin against Ch
13 Wherefore, if meate make my brother to
I will eate no flesh while the world standeth,
make my brother to offend.

## CHAP. IX.

auls libertie. 7. The Minister must liue by the Go-
el. 15. 18. Yet hee would not bee chargeable,
or offensiue. 24. Our life like a race.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not frée? haue I not
sæne Iesus Christ our Lord? Are not you my
e in the Lord?

If I bée not an Apostle vnto others, yet doubt-
I am to you: for the seale of mine Apostleship are
in the Lord.

Mine answere to them that doe examine mee, is
:

Haue wée not power to eate and to drinke?

Haue wee not power to leade about a sister, a
, as well as other Apostles, and as the brethren
e Lord, and Cephas?

Or I onelie and Barnabas, haue not wée power
beare working?

Who goeth a warfare anie time at his own char-
who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not the fruit
eof? or who fœdeth a flocke, and eateth not of the
e of the flocke?

Say I these thinges as a man? or saith not the
the same also?

For it is written in the Law of Moses, Thou shalt
muzzell the mouth of the ore that treadeth out the
e: doeth God take care for oxen?

Or saith hee it altogether for our sakes? for our
s, no doubt, this is written, That hee that plowеth,
ld plowe in hope, and hee that threshеth in hope,
ld bee partaker of his hope.

If wee haue sowne vnto you spirituall thinges,
great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?

If others bee partakers of this power ouer you,

are

are not wee rather? Neuertheleſſe, wee haue not
this power: but ſuffer all things, leſt wee ſhould
the Goſpel of Chriſt.

13 Doe yee not know that they which miniſter
holy things, liue of the things of the Temple? and
which wait at the Altar, are partakers with the

14 Euen ſo hath the Lord ordained, that they
preach the Goſpel, ſhould liue of the Goſpel.

15 But I haue vſed none of theſe things. Neither
haue I written theſe things, that it ſhould bee ſo
vnto mee: for it were better for mee to die, than
anie man ſhould make my glorying voyde.

16 For though I preach the Goſpel, I haue not
to glorie of: for neceſſitie is laid vpon mee, yea,
is vnto mee, if I preach not the Goſpel.

17 For if I doe this thing willinglie, I haue
ward: but if againſt my will, a diſpenſation of
Goſpel is committed vnto mee.

18 What is my reward then? verilie that
I preach the Goſpel, I may make the Goſpel
Chriſt without charge, that I abuſe not my pow
the Goſpel.

19 For though I bee free from all men, yet
made my ſelfe ſeruant vnto all, that I might
the more.

20 And vnto the Iewes, I became as a
that I might gaine the Iewes: to them that are
the Law, as vnder the Law, that I might gaine
that are vnder the Law.

21 To them that are without the Law, as with
Law (beeing not without Law to God, but vnder
Law to Chriſt,) that I might gaine them that
without Law.

## CHAP. XI.

To the weake became I as weake, that I might
e the weake: I am made all things to men, that
ght by all meanes saue some.
And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might
rtaker thereof with you.
Know yee not that they which run in a race, run
t one receiueth the prize? So runne, that yee
obtaine.
And euery man that striueth for the masterie, is
erate in all things: Now they doe it to obtaine a
ptible crowne, but wee an incorruptible.
I therefore so run, not as vncertainlie: so fight
t as one that beateth the aire.
But I keepe vnder my bodie, and bring it into
ction: lest that by any meanes, whe I haue prea-
to others, I my selfe should bee a cast-away.

## CHAP. X.

e Iewes Sacraments, 6. are tipes of ours. 7. and
ir punishments. 11. our examples. 21 Wee must
t make the Lords Table the table of deuils.

Moreouer, brethren, I would not that yee should
bee ignorant, all how that our fathers were vn-
e cloud, and all passed thorow the Sea:
And were all baptized vnto Moses in the cloud,
n the Sea.
And did all eate the same spirituall meat.
And did all drink the same spirituall drinke, (for
dranke of that spirituall Rocke that followed
: and that Rocke was Christ)
But with many of them God was not well plea-
for they were ouerthrowne in the wilderneſſe.
Now these things were our examples, to the in-

tent wee should not lust after euill thinges, as
also lusted.

7 Neither bee yee idolaters, as were some of
as it is written, The people sate downe to eate,
drinke and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornicatiõ, as some of
committed, & fell in one day three & twentie thou

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of the
so tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also
mured, and were destroyed of the Destroyer.

11 Now all these thinges happened vnto the
ensamples: and they are written for our admon
vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh hee st
take hæde lest hee fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but
as is common to man: but God is faithfull, wh
not suffer you to bee tempted aboue that you are
but will with the temptation also mak a way to
that yee may bee able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my dearly beloued, flee from idol

15 I speake as to wise men: judge yee what I

16 The cup of blessing which wee blesse, is it
communiõ of the blood of Christ? The bread wh
breake, is it not the communiõ of the bodie of C

17 For wee beeing manie are one bread, a
bodie: for wee are partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they
eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the Altar.

19 What say I then? that the idoles is any th
ỹ which is offered in sacrifice to idoles is any th

20 But I say, that the things which the Gen

ce, they sacrifice to deuils, and not to God: and I
ld not that ye should haue followship with deuils.
Yee cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, and the
f deuils: yee cannot bee partakers of the Lordes
le, and the table of deuils.
Doe wee prouocke the Lord to iealousie? are wee
ger than hee?
All things are lawfull for mee, but all thinges
ot expedient: All things are lawfull for mee, but
hings edifie not.
Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man ano-
wealth.
Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, that eate,
g no question for conscience sake.
For the earth is the Lords, & the fulnesse thereof.
If any of them that believe not, bid you to a
and yee bee disposed to goe, whatsoeuer is set be-
ou, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.
But if any man say vnto you, This is offered
crifice vnto idoles, eate not for his sake that she-
it, and for conscience sake sake. The earth is the
, and the fulnesse thereof.
Conscience, I say, not thine owne, but of the
: for why is my libertie judged, of another mans
ience.
For, if I by grace bee a partaker, why am I
poken of, for that for which I giue thankes?
Whether therefore yee eate, or drinke, or what-
yee doe, doe all to the glorie of God.
Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to
entiles, nor to the Church of God.
Euen as I please all mē in all things not seeking
own profite, but the profite of many, y they may

## CHAP. XI.

1. Hee reproueth them because in holie assemblies men prayed with their heads couered. 6. and men vncouered. 21. for profaning the Lords Supper. 15. The first institution thereof.

BE yée followers of mée, euen as I am also of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember mée in all things, and kéepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.

3 But I would haue you know, that the head of euerie man is Christ: and the head of the woman is man, and the head of Christ is God.

4 Euerie man praying or prophesying, hauing his head couered, dishonoureth his Head.

5 But euerie woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head vncouered, dishonoureth her head: for that is euen all one as if shée were shauen.

6 For if the woman bee not couered, let her also bée shorne: but if it bée a shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her bée couered.

7 For a man indéede ought not to couer his head, forasmuch as hée is the image and glorie of God: but the woman is the glorie of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman, but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to haue power on her head, because of the Angels.

11 Neuertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither is the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: euen so is the man also by the woman; but all thinges of God

13 Iu

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comelie that a wo-
n pray vnto God vncouered?
14 Doeth not euen nature it selfe teach you, that if
an haue long haire, it is a shame vnto him?
15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a glorie
er: for her haire is giuen her for a couering.
16 But if any man seeme to bee contentious, wee
e no such custome, neither the Churches of God.
17 Now in this that I declare vnto you, I praise
not, that you come together not for the better, but
the worse.
18 For first of all when yee come together in the
rch, I heare that there bee diuisions among you,
I partly beleeue it.
19 For there must bee also heresies among you,
they which are approued may bee made manifest
ong you.
20 When yee come together therefore into one
e, this is not to eate the Lords Supper.
21 For in eating, euerie one taketh before other
owne supper: and one is hungrie, and another is
nken.
22 What, haue yee not houses to eate and to drinke
Or dispise yee the Church of God, and shame
m that haue not? What shall I say to you? shall I
se you in this? I praise you not.
23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which also
liuered vnto you, That the Lord Iesus, the same
ht in which hee was betrayed, tooke bread:
24 And when hee had giuen thankes, hee brake it,
said, Take, eate, this is my bodie, which is broken
you: this doe in remembrance of mee.
25 After this same manner also hee tooke the cup,

when hee had supped, saying, This cup is the ne
Testament in my blood: this doe yee, as oft as
drinke it, in remembrance of mee.

26 For as oft as ye eate this bread, and drinke
cup, yee doe shew the Lords death till hee come.

27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread
drinke this cup of the Lord vnworthilie, hee shall
guiltie of the bodie and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himselfe, and so let
eate of that bread, and drinke of that cup.

29 For hee that eateth and drinketh vnworth
eateth and drinketh damnation to himselfe, not dis
ning the Lords bodie.

30 For this cause many are weake and sickely
mong you, and many sleepe.

31 For if wee would iudge our selues, wee sh
not bee iudged.

32 But whē wee are iudged, wee are chastned o
Lord, that we should not be condemned with the wo

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when yee come t
ther to eate, tarrie one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eate at ho
that yee come not together vnto condemnation.
the rest will I set in order, when I come.

## CHAP. XII.

1, Spirituall gifts, 4. are diuers. 7. yet all to pro
12. As it is in the naturall body, 17. so it shoul
in the mysticall bodie of Christ.

NOw concerning spirituall giftes, brethren
would not haue you ignorant.

2 Yee know that yee were Gentiles, carried a
vnto these dumbe idoles, euen as yee were led.

3 Wh

Wherefore I giue you to vnderstand that no man
king by the Spirit of God, calleth Iesus accursed:
that no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but
e holy Ghost.

Now there are diuersities of giftes, but the
Spirit.

And there are differences of administrations, but
same Lord.

And there are diuersities of operations, but it is
me God which worketh All in All.

But the manifestation of the Spirit, is giuen to
e man to profite withall.

For to one is giuen by the Spirite, the worde of
omie, to another the worde of knowledge, by the
Spirit.

To another Faith, by the same Spirit: to ano-
the giftes of healing, by the same Spirit,

To another the working of miracles, to another
ecie, to another discerning of spirits, to another
e kindes of tongues, to another the interpreta-
f tongues.

But all these worketh that one and the selfe same
it, diuiding to euery man seuerallie as hee will.

For as the bodie is one and hath manie members,
l the members of that one body, beeing many,
e bodie: so also is Christ.

For by one Spirit are wee all baptized into one
, whether wee bee Iewes or Gentiles, whether
e bond or free: and haue beene all made to drink
ne Spirit.

For the bodie is not one member, but many.

If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand,
not of the bodie: is it therefore not of the bodie?

16 And if the eare shall say, Because I am n
eye, I am not of the bodie: is it therefore not
bodie?

17 If the whole bodie were an eye, where we
hearing? If the whole were hearing, where we
smelling?

18 But now God hath set the members, euer
of them in the bodie as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where
the bodie?

20 But now are they manie members, yet bu
bodie.

21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I ha
næde of thæ: nor againe the head to the fæte, I
no næde of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the b
which sæme to bee more fæble, are necessarie,

23 And those members of the bodie, which
thinke to bee lesse honourable, vpon these wæ b
more aboundant honour, and our vncomelie p
haue more aboundant comelinesse.

24 For our comelie partes haue no næde: but
hath tempered the bodie together, hauing giuen
aboundant honour to that part which lacked.

25 That there should bee no schisme in the bodi
that the members should haue the same care one f
nother.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the m
bers suffer with it: or one member bee honoured
the members rejoyce with it.

27 Now yæ are the bodie of Christ, and me
in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the Church,
Apo

les, secundarilie Prophets, thirdlie Teachers, that miracles, then gifts of healinges, helpes in ernments, diuersities of tongues.

Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all chers? are all workers of Miracles?

Haue all the giftes of healing? doe all speake tongues? doe all interprete?

But couet earnestlie the best giftes: And yet I vnto you a more excellent way.

## CHAP. XIII.

The most excellent gifts are nothing without Charitie. 4. The praise thereof. 13. It is preferred before Hope and Faith.

Though I speake with the tongues of men, and of Angels, and haue not Charitie, I am become as ding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.

And though I haue the gift of prophecie, and vnderand all mysteries, and all knowledge: and though e all Faith, so that I could remoue Mountaines, aue no Charitie, I am nothing.

And though I bestow all my goods to feede the , and though I giue my bodie to bee burned, and not Charitie, it profiteth mee nothing.

Charitie suffereth long, & is kind, Charitie enuieth Charitie vaunteth not it selfe, is not puffed vp.

Doeth not behaue it selfe vnseemelie, seeketh not one, is not easilie prouocked, thinketh none euill.

Rejoyceth not in iniquitie, but rejoyceth in the h.

Beareth all things, beleeueth all thinges, hopeth ings, endureth all things.

Charitie neuer faileth: but whether there bee pro-

phe-

pheſies, they ſhall faile: whether there bee tong
they ſhall ceaſe: whether there bee knowledge, it
vanith away.

9 For wee know in part, and wee prophesie in
10 But when that which is perfect is come,
that which is in part, ſhall bee done away.

11 When I was a childe, I ſpake as a childe, I
derſtood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but w
became a man, I put away childiſh things.

12 For now wee ſee through a glaſſe, darklie:
then face to face: now I know in part, but then
I know euen alſo as I am knowne.

13 And now abideth Faith, Hope, Charitie,
three, but the greateſt of theſe is Charitie.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1. Prophecie commended and preferred before
king with tongues: 12. Both muſt be referred to
cation. 34. Women muſt not ſpeake in the Churc

FOllow after Charitie, and deſire ſpirituall gi
but rather that yee may prophesie.

2 For hee that ſpeaketh in an vnknowne tong
ſpeaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man
derſtandeth him: howbeit in the ſpirite hee ſpea
myſteries.

3 But hee that prophesieth, ſpeaketh vnto m
edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that ſpeaketh in an vnknowne tongue, edi
himſelfe: but hee that prophesieth, edifieth the Ch

5 I would that yee all ſpake with tongues, bu
ther that yee prophesied: for greater is hee that pr
ſieth, than hee that ſpeaketh with tongues, except
interprete, that the Church may receiue edifying.

6 F

Now, brethren, if I come vnto you with speaking tongues, what shall I profite you, except I speake to you either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

And euen things without life giuing sound, whether pipe or harpe, except they giue a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

For if the Trumpet giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to the battell?

So likewise you, except yee vtter by the tongue a speech easie to bee vnderstood, how shall it bee knowne what is spoken? for yee shall speake into the aire.

There are, it may bee so many kindes of voyces in the world, & none of them are without signification.

Therefore if I knowe not the meaning of the voice, I shall be vnto him that speaketh, a Barbarian, and he that speaketh shall bee a Barbarian vnto mee.

Euen so yee, forasmuch as yee are zealous of spiritual gifts, seeke that yee may excell to the edifying of the Church.

Wherefore, let him that speaketh in an vnknowne tongue, pray that hee may interprete.

For if I pray in an vnknowne tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my vnderstanding is vnfruitfull.

What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

Else, when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, say Amen at thy giuing of thankes, seeing hee vnderstandeth not what thou sayest?

For thou verilie giuest thankes well: but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake with tongues than you all.

19 Yet in the Church I had rather speake fiue with my vnderstanding, that by my voyce I teach others also, than ten thousand wordes in knowne tongue.

20 Brethren, bee not children in vnderst howbeit in malice bee yee children, but in vnd ding bee men.

21 In the Law it is written, With men o tongues, and other lips, will I speake vnto this yet for all that will they not heare me, saith the

22 Wherefore tongues are for a signe, not to that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not, but p cying, serueth not for them that beleeue not, b them which beleeue.

23 If therefore the whole Church bee come ther into some place, and all speake with tongues there come in those that are vnlearned, or vnbeli will they not say that yee are mad.

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in on beleeueth not, or one vnlearned: hee is conuinced hee is judged of all.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart mad nifest, and so falling down on his face, he will w God and report that God is in you of a trueth.

26 How is it then, Brethren? when yee co gether, euery one of you hath a Psalme, hath a d hath a tongue, hath a reuelation, hath an interp tion Let all thinges bee done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake in an vnknowne tong it bee by two, or at the most by three, and that by and let one interpret.

But if there be none interpreter, let him kéepe si-
in the Church, & let him speak to himself, & to God.
Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let
er judge.
If any thing bee reuealed to another that sitteth
t the first hold his peace.
For yée may all prophesie one by one, that all
arne, and all may bee comforted.
And the Spirites of the Prophets are subiect to
ophets.
For God is not the author of confusion, but of
as in all Churches of the Saintes.
et your womẽ keepe silence in the Churches, for
t permitted vnto thẽ to speake: but they are cõ-
d to bee vnder obedience: as also saith the Law.
And if they will learne any thing, let them aske
husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to
in the Church.
What? came the worde of God out from you?
e it vnto you onelie.
If any man thinke himselfe to bée a Prophet, or
all, let him acknowledge, that the things that I
nto you, are the commandements of the Lord.
But if any man bée ignorant, let him bée igno-

Wherefore, brethren, couet to prophesie, and
ot to speake with tongues.
Let all things bee done decently, and in order.

## CHAP. XV.

Christs resurrectiõ, 12. he proueth the necessitie
our resurrection. 21. The fruit. 35. and maner
roof. 51. and the change of them that shall be
aliue:

More-

MOreouer, brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which also haue receiued, and wherein yee stand.

2 By which also yee are saued, if yee keepe in memorie what I haue preached vnto you, vnlesse ye beleeued in vaine.

3 For I deliuered vnto you first of all, that which I also receiued, howe that Christ died for our sinnes according to the Scriptures:

4 And that hee was buried, and that hee rose againe the third day according to the Scriptures.

5 And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue:

6 And that hee was seene of aboue fiue hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remaine vnto this present, but some are fallen asleepe.

7 After that, hee was seene of James, then of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all hee was seene of mee also, as of one borne out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meete to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed vpon mee, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

11 Therefore, whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so yee beleeued.

12 Now if Christ bee preached, that hee rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there bee no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15

yea, and we are found false witnesses of God, be-
we haue testified of God, that he raised vp Christ:
n hee raised not vp, if so be that the dead rise not.
For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.
and if Christ bee not raised, your Faith is vaine,
e yet in your sinnes.
Then they also which are fallen asleepe in
, are perished.
If in this life onelie wee haue hope in Christ,
e of all men most miserable.
But nowe is Christ risen, from the dead, and
e the first fruites of them that slept.
For since by man, came death, by man came al-
resurrection of the dead.
For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall
made aliue.
But euery man in his owne order: Christ the first
afterwards they that are Christs at his cõming
Thẽ commeth the end, when he shall haue delite-
the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when hee
ut downe all rule, and all authoritie, & power.
For hee must reigne, till hee hath put all ene-
nder his feete.
The last enemie that shalbe destroyed, is death.
for he hath put all things vnder his feete: but whẽ
h, All things are put vnder him, it is manifest
is excepted, which did put al things vnder him.
nd whẽ all things shalbe subdued vnto him, thẽ
e Sonne also himselfe be subiect vnto him, that
things vnder him, that God may bee all in all.
Else what shall they doe, which are batized for
d if the dead rise not at all, why are they then
d for the dead?

30 And why stand wæ in jeopardie euerie hou
31 I protest by your reioycing which I ha
Christ Iesus our Lord, I die daylie.
32 If after the manner of men I haue fought
beasts at Ephesus, what aduantageth it mæ, if the
rise not, let vs eate and drinke, for to morrow w
33 Bæ not deceiued: euill communications co
good manners.
34 Awake to righteousnes, & sin not: for som
not the knowledge of God, I speak this to your
35 But some men will say, How are the deade
vp? and with what bodie doe they come?
36 Thou fole that which thou sowest, is not
kened except it die.
37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest n
bodie that shall bee, but bare graine, it may cha
wheate, or some other graine.
38 But God giueth it a bodie as it hath pleas
and to euery sæde his owne bodie.
39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there
kinde of flesh of men, another flesh of beastes, a
of fishes, and another of birds.
40 There are also celestiall bodies and bodies
strial: but the glorie of the celestiall is one, a
glorie of the terrestriall is another.
41 There is one glorie of the Sunne, another
Mone, and another glorie of the Starres: f
Starre differeth from another Starre in glorie.
42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is
in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.
43 It is sowne in dishonour, it is raised in
it is sowne in weakenesse, it is raised in power.
44 It is sowne a naturall bodie, it is raised a

bodie. There is a naturall bodie: and there is a
all bodie.
And so it is written, The first man Adam was
aliuing soule, the last Adam was made a quicke-
spirit.
owbeit ỹ was not first, which is spirituall but ỹ
is naturall & afterward that which is spiritual.
The first man is of the earth earthlie: the second
s the Lord from heauen.
s is the earthly, such as they ỹ are earthly: & as
heauenly, such are they also that are heauenlie.
And as wee haue borne the image of the earthly,
all also beare the image of the heauenlie.
Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood
inherite the kingdome of God: neither doeth
tion inherite incorruption.
Behold, I shew you a mysterie, wee shall not
e, but wee shall all bee changed.
a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last
e (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall
ed incorruptible, and wee shall bee changed.)
For this corruptible must put on incorruption,
s mortall must put on immortalitie.
So when this corruptible shall haue put on
ption, and this mortall shall haue put on im-
itie, then shall bee brought to passe the saying
written, Death is swallowed vp in victorie.
O death, where is thy sting? O graue, where
ictorie?
The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of
s the Law.
But thankes bee to God, which giueth vs the
, through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren bee, yee stedfast vnmoueable, alwayes abounding in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

## CHAP. XVI.

1. The brethrens wants must bee relieued. 10. Timothie commended. 13. Friendlie admonitions. Salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the Saints, as I haue giuen order to the Churches of Galatia, euen so doe yee.

2 Vpon the first day of the weeke, let euerie one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there bee no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoeuer you shall approue by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it bee meete that I goe also, they shall goe with mee.

5 Now I will come vnto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: for I doe passe through Macedonia.

6 And it may bee that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that yee may bring mee on my iourney whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I will not see you nowe by the way; but I trust to tarie a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarie at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto mee, and there are many aduersaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that hee may be with you without feare: for hee worketh the worke of the Lord, as I also doe.

Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct
forth in peace, that hee may come vnto mee: for
he for him with the brethren.

As touching our brother Apollos, I greatlie de-
him to come vnto you with the brethren, but his
was not at all to come at this time: but hee will
when hee shall haue conuenient time.

Watch ye, stand fast in the Faith, quit you like
: bee strong.

Let all your things bee done with Charitie.

I beseech you brethrē, yee (know the house of Ste-
ey it is the first fruits of Achaia, & that they haue
ed themselues to the ministerie of the Saints.

That yee submit your selues vnto such, and
rie one that helpeth with vs and laboureth.

I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and
natus, and Achaicus: for that which was lac-
on your part, they haue supplied.

For they haue refreshed my spirit, and yours:
fore acknowledge yee them that are such.

The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and
illa salute you much in the Lord, with the Church
in their house.

All the brethren greet you: greet yee one ano-
with an holy kisse.

The salutation of me Paul with mine own hād.

If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let
e an Anathema Maranatha.

The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you.

My loue bee with you all in Iesus Christ, Amen.

The first Epistle to the Corinthians was writ-
ten from Philippi, by Stephanas, and For-
tunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE, To the Corinthians.

## CHAP. I.

3. The Apoſtle encourageth them againſt trou
12. and ſheweth the ſinceritie of his preaching,
and excuſeth his not comming to them.

PAul an Apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, by
will of God, and Timothie our
ther, vnto the Church of God, w
is at Corinth, with all the Saint
which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace bee to you, and peace
God our Father, and from the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 Bleſſed bee God, euen the Father of our Lo
ſus Chriſt, the Father of mercies, and the God
comfort,

4 Who comforteth vs in all our tribulation, tha
may bee able to comfort them which are in any tr
by the comfort, wherewith wee our ſelues are co
ted of God.

5 For as the ſufferings of Chriſt abound in vs
our conſolation alſo aboundeth by Chriſt.

6 And whether wee bee afflicted, it is for our c
lation and Saluation, which is effectuall in the e
ring of the ſame ſufferinges which wee alſo ſuffe
whether wee bee comforted, it is for your conſola
and Saluation.

7 And our hope of you is ſtedfaſt, knowing that as
are partakers of the ſufferings, ſo ſhall yee bee al-
the conſolation.
8 For wee would not, brethren, haue you igno-
of our trouble which came to vs in Aſia, that wee
were preſſed out of meaſure, aboue ſtrength, in ſo
much that wee deſpaired euen of life.
9 But wee had the ſentence of death in our ſelues,
that wee ſhould not truſt in our owne ſelues, but in
God, which raiſeth the dead.
10 Who deliuered vs from ſo great a death, & doth
deliuer: in whom wee truſt that hee will yet deliuer vs.
11 You alſo helping together by prayer for vs, that for
the gift beſtowed vpon vs by the meanes of many per-
ſons, thankes may bee giuen by many on our behalfe.
12 For our rejoycing is this, the teſtimonie of our
conſcience, that in ſimplicitie and godlie ſinceritie, not
in fleſhlie wiſedome, but by the grace of God, wee
haue had our conuerſation in the world, and more a-
boundantlie to youwards.
13 For wee wrote none other thinges vnto you,
but what you reade or acknowledge, and I truſt you
ſhall acknowledge euen to the end.
14 As alſo you haue acknowledged vs in part, that
we are your rejoycing, euen as alſo ye are ours, in the
day of the Lord Jeſus.
15 And in this confidence I was minded to come vn-
to you, before that yee might haue a ſecond benefite:
16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come
againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and of you to bee
brought on my way towards Judea.
17 When I therefore was thus minded did I vſe
lightneſſe? or the things that I purpoſe, doe I purpoſe

according to the flesh, that with mee there should
yea, yea, and nay, nay?

18 But as God is true, our word toward you,
not yea, and nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who
preached among you by vs, euen by mee and Silua
and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay, but in
was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea
in him Amen, vnto the glorie of God by vs.

21 Nowe hee which stablisheth vs with you
Christ, and hath anointed vs, is God,

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and giuen the
nest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreouer, I call God for a record vpon my
that to spare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinth

24 Not for that we haue dominion ouer your
but are helpers of your ioye: for by Faith wee sta

## CHAP. II.

1. The reason of his not comming. 6. Of theer
municate person. 12 Paul commeth to Troas,
from thence to Macedonia. 14. The successe
preaching in euery place.

BUt I determined this with my selfe, that I
not come againe to you in heauinesse.

2 For if I mak you sorry, who is he then that m
anee glad: but the same which is made sore by m

3 And I wrote the same vnto you, lest when I
I should haue sorrow from them of whom I ough
rejoyce, hauing confidence in you all, that my
the joye of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of he

yote vnto you with manie teares, not that you
uld bee grieued, but that yee might know the loue
ch I haue more aboundantlie vnto you.
But if any haue caused griefe, hee hath not grieued
, but in part: that I may not ouercharge you all.
Sufficient to such a man is this punishment,
ch was inflicted of manie.
So that contrariwise yee ought rather to forgiue
, and comfort him, lest perhaps, such a one should
swallowed vp with ouer much sorrow.
Wherefore I beseech you, that you would con-
r your loue towardes him.
for to this end also did I write, ỹ I might know the
le of you, whether yee bee obedient in all things.
o To whom yee forgiue anie thing, I forgiue al-
for if I forgiue anie thing, to whom I forgiue it,
our sakes forgiue I it, in the person of Christ.
1 Lest Satan should get an aduantage of vs: for
ars not ignorant of his deuices.
2 Furthermore when I came to Troas to preach
ilkes Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto mee of
Lord,
3 I had no rest in my spirite because I found not
ng my brother, but taking my leaue of them, I
t from thence into Macedonia.
4 Now thankes bee vnto God, which alwayes
ed vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest
sauour of his knowledge by vs in euerie place.
5 For wee are vnto God a sweete sauour of Christ
em that are saued, and in them that perish.
To the one wee are the sauour of death vnto death,
to the other the sauour of life vnto life: and who
sufficient for these things?

17 For wee are not as manie which corrupt the
word of God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God, in
the sight of God speake wee in Christ.

## CHAP. III.

1. The commendation of Pauls ministerie. 6. A comparison betweene the ministers of the Law and of Gospel.

DOe wee begin againe to commend our selues? or
need wee as some others, Epistles of commendation
to you, or letters of commendation from you?
2 Yee are our Epistle, written in our hearts, known
and reade of all men.
3 Forasmuch as yee are manifestlie declared to be
the Epistle of Christ, ministred by vs, written not
with inke, but with the Spirit of the liuing God, not
in tables of stone but in the fleshlie tables of the heart.
4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God-ward:
5 Not that wee are sufficient of our selues to think
any thing as of our selues: but our sufficiency is of God:
6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the new
Testament, not of the letter but of the Spirit: for the
letter killeth, but the Spirit giueth life.
7 But if the ministration of death written, & engraue
uen in stones was glorious, so that the children of Is-
rael could not stedfastlie behold the face of Moses, for
the glorie of his countenance, which glorie was to be
done away.
8 How shall not the ministration of the Spirit, be
rather glorious?
9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glo-
rie, much more doeth the ministration of righteousnes
excede in glorie.

10 For

o For euen that which was made glorious, had no
e, in this respect, by reason of the glory ỹ excelleth.
1 For if that which was done away, was glorious,
h more that which remaineth is glorious.
2 Seeing then that wee haue such hope, wee vse
t plainnesse of speach.
3 And not as Moses, which put a vaile ouer his
, that the children of Israel could not stedfastlie
to the end of that which is abolished.
4 But their mindes were blinded: for vntill this
remaineth the same vaile vntaken away, in the
ing of the Olde Testament, which vaile is done
y in Christ.
5 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is reade,
aile is vpon their heart.
6 Neuertheless, when it shall turne to the Lord,
aile shall bee taken away.
7 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the
it of the Lord is, there is libertie.
8 But wee all with open face beholding as in a
e the glorie of the Lord, are changed into the same
e from glorie to glorie, euen as by the Spirite of
Lord.

## CHAP. IIII.

ls sinceritie and diligence in preaching, 7. and
his troubles for the same.

1 Therefore seeing wee haue this Ministerie, as wee
ue receiued mercie, wee faint not.
2 But haue renounced the hidden things of dishone-
ot walking in craftinesse, nor handling the word
d deceitfully, but by manifestation of the trueth,
mending our selues to euerie mans conscience in
ght of God.

3 But

3 But if our Gospel be hid, it is to them that ar
4 In whome the god of this worlde hath blinde
mindes of them which beleeue not, lest the light
glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of
should shine vnto them.

5 For wee preach not our selues, but Christ
the Lord, and our selues seruants for Jesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine
of darkenesse, hath shined in our heartes, to giu
light of the knowledge of the glorie of God, in th
of Jesus Christ.

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels,
the excellency of ỹ power may bee of God, & not o

8 Wee are troubled on euerie side, yet not dis
sed: wee are perplexed, but not in dispaire:

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken: cast downe,
not destroyed.

10 Alwayes bearing about in the bodie, the
of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus migh
made manifest in our bodie.

11 For wee which liue, are alway deliuered
death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus m
bee made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then, death worketh in vs, but life in y

13 We hauing the same spirit of faith, acco
as it is written, I beleeued, and therefore haue I
ken: wee also beleeue, and therefore speake.

14 Knowing that hee which raised vp the Lor
sus, shall raise vp vs also by Jesus, and shall pr
vs with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the ab
dant grace, might through the thanksgiuing of m
redound to the glorie of God.

16 For which cause wee faint not, but though our
outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed
day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a mo-
ment, worketh for vs a farre more exceeding and eter-
nall weight of glorie.

18 While wee looke not at things which are seene,
but at the things which are not seene: for the things
which are seene are temporall, but the things which
are not seene, are eternall.

## CHAP. V.

That in hope of immortall glorie, 9. and expectance
of it, and the generall judgement, hee laboureth to
keepe a good conscience.

1 For we know, that if our earthly house of this taber-
nacle were dissolued, wee haue a building of God,
an house not made with hands eternall in the heauens.

2 For in this wee groane earnestlie, desiring to bee
clothed vpon with our house, which is from heauen.

3 If so bee, that being cloathed, wee shall not bee
found naked.

4 For wee that are in this Tabernacle, doe groane,
being burdened, not for that we would be vncloathed,
but cloathed vpon, that mortalitie might bee swallo-
wed vp of life.

5 Now, hee that hath wrought vs for the selfe-same
thing, is God, who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest
of the Spirit.

6 Therefore wee are alwayes confident, knowing
that whilest wee are at home in the bodie, wee are ab-
sent from the Lord.

7 (For wee walke by Faith, not by sight.)

8 Wee

8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather
absent from the bodie, and to be present with the

9 Wherefore wee labour, that whether pre
absent, wee may bee accepted of him.

10 For wee must all appeare before the judg
seate of Christ that euery one may receiue the th
done in his bodie according to that hee hath done
ther it bee good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord
perswade men: but wee are made manifest vnto
& I trust also are made manifest in your consci

12 For wee commend not our selues again
you, but giue you occasion to glorie on our be
that you may haue some-what to answere them,
glorie in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For whether wee bee besides our selues,
God; or whether wee bee sober, it is for your ca

14 For the loue of Christ constraineth vs, b
we thus judge: that if one died for all, thē were all

15 And that hee died for all, that they whi
should not henceforth liue vnto themselues, but
him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherefore henceforth know wee no man
the flesh: yea, though wee haue knowne Chri
the flesh, yet now henceforth know wee him no m

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a
creature: old things are past away, behold, all th
are become new.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reco
vs vnto himselfe by Iesus Christ, and hath gi
vs the ministerie of reconciliation.

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconcili
world vnto himselfe, not imputing their tres

them, and hath committed vnto vs the word of
nciliation.
Now then wee are embassadours for Christ, as
gh God did beseech you by vs: wee pray you in
stes stead, that ye bee reconciled to God.
For hee hath made him to bee sinne for vs, who
e no sinne, that wee might bee made the righte-
esse of God in him.

## CHAP. VI.

Pauls faithfulnesse in his ministerie. 14. Ex-
ortations to auoide idolaters.

WE then, as workers together with him, be-
seech you also, that ye receiue not the grace of
in vaine.
(For hee saith, I haue heard thee in a time accep-
and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee:
ld, now is the accepted time: beholde, now is the
of Saluation.)
Giuing none offence in any thing, that the Mi-
ie bee not blamed:
But in all thinges approuing our selues, as the
sters of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in
lities, in distresses.
In stripes, in imprisomentes, in tumults, in la-
s, in watchings, in fastings,
By pureneſſe, by knowledge, by long suffering,
indnesse, by the holie Ghost, by loue vnfained.
By the word of trueth by the power of God by the
ur of righteousnes, on the right hand, & on the left.
By honour and dishonour, by euill report and
report, as deceiuers, and yet true.
As vnknowne, and yet well knowne: as dying,

and

and behold wæ liue: as chastened and not killed:

10 As sorrowfull, yet alwayes reioycing: as p
yet making many rich: as hauing nothing, an
possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open vnt
our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitened in vs: but yee are str
ned in your owne bowels.

13 Now for a recompense in the same, (I sp
as vnto my children) bee ye also enlarged.

14 Bee ye not vnequallie yoked together with
belæuers: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse
vnrighteousnesse? and what communion hath l
with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial
What part hath hee that beleeueth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of
with idoles? for yee are the Temple of the liuing
as God hath said, I will dwell in them, & walk in th
and I will be their God, and they shall bee my pe

17 Wherefore, come out from among them an
ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the vnc
thing, and I will receiue you.

18 And I will bee a Father vnto you, and ye sh
my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almigh

## CHAP. VII.

1. Hee exhorteth to puritie, 2. and declareth w
comfort hee tooke in his afflictions.

HAuing therefore these promises, (dearly bel
let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse
flesh and spirit, perfecting holines in the feare of

2 Receiue vs, we haue wronged no man, wæ h
corru

upted no man, wee haue defrauded no man.
I speake not this to condemne you: for I haue said
re, that you are in our harts, to die & liue with you.
Great is my boldnesse of speech toward you, great
y glorying of you, I am filled with comfort, I am
ding ioyfull in all our tribulation.
For when wee were come into Macedonia, our
had no rest, but wee were troubled on euerie side,
out were fightings, within were feares.
Neuertheless, God that comforteth them that are
downe, comforted vs by the comming of Titus.
And not by his comming onely, but by the consola-
wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told
our earnest desire, your mourning, your feruent
de toward mee, so that I reioyced the more.
For though I made you sorrie with a letter, I doe
repent, though I did repent: For I perceiue that
same Epistle hath made you sorrie, though it were
for a season.
Now I reioyce, not that yee were made sorrie,
that yee sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made
e after a godly manner, that yee might receiue
mage by vs in nothing.
For godlie sorrow worketh repentance to Sal-
on, not to bee repented of, but the sorrow of the
ld worketh death.
For behold, the selfe-same thing that yee sorro-
after a godlie sort, what carefulnesse it wrought
you: yea, what clearing of your selues: yea, what in-
ation: yea, what feare: yea, what vehement de-
yea, what zeale: yea, what reuenge: In all
es yee haue approued your selues to bee cleare in
matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote vnto you, I did not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for cause that suffered the wrong, but that our care you in the sight of God, might appeare vnto you.

13 Therfore we were cõforted in your comfort: and exceedingly the more ioyed we for the ioye of tus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I haue boasted anie thing to him of I am not ashamed, but as wee spake all things t in trueth, euen so our boasting which I made t Titus, is found a trueth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundan ward you, whilst hee remembreth the obedience of how with feare and trembling you receiued him.

16 I rejoyced therefore, that I haue confiden you in all things.

## CHAP. VIII.

1. Hee stirreth them vp to contribute to the Sain
16. and commendeth Titus and some other were come to them purposelie for this busines

MOreouer, brethren, we doe you to wit, of t of God bestowed on the Churches of Mace

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the a dance of their ioy, and their deepe pouertie abou vnto the riches of their liberalitie.

3 For to their power (I beare record) yea, an yond their power they were willing of themselue

4 Praying vs with much intreatie, that wee r receiue the gift, and take vpon vs the fellowsh the ministring to the Saincts.

5 And this they did, not as wee hoped, but gaue their owne selues to the Lord, and vnto t the will of God.

Insomuch ỹ we desired Titus, that as hee had be-
, so hæ would also finish in you the same grace also.
Therfore (as ye abound in euery thing, in faith, &
rance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in
loue to vs) see ỹ yæ abound in this grace also.
I speake not by commandement but by occasion
e forwardnesse of others, and to proue the sincerи-
f your loue.
For yæ know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ,
though he was rich, yet for your sakes hee became
, that yæ through his pouertie might bæ rich.
And hærein I giue mine aduice, for this is ex-
nt for you, who hath begun before, not onelie to
ut also to bee forward a yeere agoe.
Now therefore performe the doing of it, that as
was a readinesse to will, so there may bee a per-
ance also out of that which you haue.
For if there bee first a willing minde, it is
ted according to that a man hath, and not accor-
to that hee hath not.
For I meane not that other men bee eased, and
urthened.
But by an equalitie: that now at this time your
dance may bee a supplie for their want, that
aboundance also may be a supplie for your want,
here may bee equalitie,
As it is writtē, He ỹ had gathered much, had no-
oner, & hee that had gathered little, had not lack.
But thankes bee to God, which put the same
e care into the heart of Titus for you.
For indeed he accepted the exhortation but being
forward, of his owne accord hee went vnto you.
And wee haue sent with him, the brother whose

praise is in the Gospel, throughout all the Chur

19 And not that onelie, but who was also of the Churches, to trauaile with vs with this which is administred by vs to the glorie of the Lord, and declaration of your readie minde.

20 Auoiding this, that no man should blam in this abundance which is administred by vs.

21 Prouiding for honest thinges, not onely sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And wee haue sent with them our brother, wee haue oftentimes proued diligent in many th but now much more diligent, vpon the great dence which I haue in you.

23 Whether anie doe inquire of Titus, he partner and fellow-helper concerning you: or our then bee inquired of, they are the Messengers the Churches, and the glorie of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and befo Churches, the proofe of your loue, and of our bo on your behalfe.

## CHAP. IX.

1. Hee sheweth why hee sent Titus: 6. And st them vp to a bountifull almes, 10. Whic yeelde them a great increase.

FOr, as touching the Ministring to the Saint is supperfluous for mee to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your mind which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, th chaia was readie a yeare a goe, and your zeal prouocked verie many.

3 Yet haue I sent the brethren, lest our boas you should bee in vaine in this behalfe, that as I ye may bee readie.

4 Lest haplie if they of Macedonia come with mée: finde you vnprepared, wee (that wée say not, you) should bée ashamed in this same confidence boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessarie to exhort the brethren, that they would goe before vnto you, and make vp before hand your bountie, whereof yée had warning before that the same might bée readie as a matter of bountie, not of couetousnesse.

6 But this I say, Hée which soweth sparingly, shall reape sparinglie: and hée which soweth bountifullie, shall reape bountifullie.

7 Euerie man according as hée purposeth in his heart, so let him giue: not grudginglie, or of necessitie: for God loueth a chearefull giuer.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that yée alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all things, may abound to euerie good worke.

9 (As it is written, Hée hath dispersed abroad: hée hath giuen to the poore: His righteousnesse remaineth for euer.

10 Now he that ministreth séede to the sower, both ministre bread for your foode, and multiplie your séede sowne, and increase the fruits of your righteousnesse)

11 Being inriched in euerie thing to all bountifulnesse, which causeth through vs thanksgiuing vnto God.

12 For the administration of this seruice, not onelie supplieth the want of the Saintes, but is aboundant by manie thankesgiuings vnto God.

13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they glorifie God for your professed subjection vnto the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution vnto them, and vnto all men.

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after

you, for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thankes be vnto God for his vnspeakable

## CHAP. X.

1. Pauls spirituall might and authoritie against all uersaries, 7. aswell when hee is present as abs not to teach beyond our compasse.

NOw I Paul my selfe beseech you, by the meek & gentlenesse of Christ, who in presence am among you, but beeing absent, am bold toward y

2 But I beseech you, that I may not bee bold w I am present with that confidence wherewith I th to bee bold against some, which thinke of vs as if walked according to the flesh.

3 For though wee walke in the flesh, wee doe warre after the flesh.

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not car but mightie through GOD, to the pulling down strong holds)

5 Casting downe imaginations, and euerie thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledg God, and bringeth into captivitie euerie though the obedience of Christ.

6 And hauing in a readinesse to reuenge all dis dience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Doe yee looke on thinges after the outward pearance? if anie man trust to himselfe, that he Christes, let him of himselfe thinke this againe, t as hee is Christs, euen so are wee Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edifica on, & not for your destruction) I should not be asham

9 That I may not seeme as if I would terrifie by letters.

10

## CHAP. XI.

o For his letters (say they) aer weightie and
erfull, but his bodilie presence is weake, and his
ch contemptible.
1 Let such a one thinke this, that such as wée are
ord by letters when wée are absent, such will wee
also indéede, when wée are present.
: For we dare not make our selues of the number,
mpare our selues with some that commend them-
s: but they measuring themselues by them-
s, and comparing theuselues among themselues,
not wise.
; But wée will not boast of thinges without our
sure, but according to the measure of the rule,
ch God hath distributed to vs, a measure to reach
a vnto you.
4 For wee stretch not our selues beyond our mea-
, as though wee reached not vnto you, for wee are
e as farre as to you also, in preaching the Gospel
hrist.
5 Not boasting of things without our measure,
is, of other mens labours, but hauing hope, when
faith is increased, that wee shall bee enlarged by
, according to our rule aboundantlie.
6 To preach the Gospel in the regions beyond you,
not to boast in another mans line of things made
ie to your hand.
7 But hee ỹ glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.
8 For, not hee that commendeth himselfe is ap-
ued, but whom the Lord commendeth.

## CHAP. XI.

Paul being inforced, entreth into a commendation
of himselfe. 7. and a comparison with the other
Apostles.

WOuld to God yée could beare with mee a
in my follie, and indeede beare with mee.
2 For I am jealous ouer you with godlie zeal
for I haue espoused you to one husband, that I
present you as a chaste virgine to Christ.
3 But I feare lest by anie meanes, as the serpe
guiled Eue through his subtiltie, so your minds sh
bee corrupted, from the simplicitie that is in Chri
4 For if hee that commeth, preacheth another J
whom wee haue not preached, or if yee receiue
ther spirit, which yee haue not receiued, or ano
Gospel which yee haue not accepted, yee might
beare with him.
5 For I suppose I was not a whit behind the
chiefest Apostles.
6 But though I bee rude in speach, yet not in kn
ledge: but wee haue beene throughlie made man
among you in all things.
7 Haue I commited an offence in abasing my
that you might bee exalted, because I haue preach
you the Gospel of God freelie.
8 I robbed other Churches, taking wages of t
to doe you seruice.
9 And when I was present with you, and want
was chargeable to no man: For that which was
king to mee, the brethren which came from Ma
nia suppplied, and in all thinges I haue kept my
from beeing burthensome to you, and so will I ke
my selfe.
10 As the trueth of Christ is in mée, no man
stope mee of this boasting in the Regions of Acha
11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? G
knoweth.

But what I doe, that will I doe, that I may cut
casion from them which desire occasion, that
ein they glorie, they may bee found euen as wee.
For such as are false Apostles, deceitfull workers,
forming themselues into the Apostles of Christ.
And no marualle, for Sathan himselfe is trans-
ed into an Angel of light.
Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers
bee transformed, as the ministers of righteous-
, whose end shall bee according to their workes.
I say againe, Let no man thinke mee a foole, if
wise, yet as a foole receiue mee that I may boast
selfe a little.
That which I speak, I speak it not after the Lord,
as it were foolishlie in this confidence of boasting.
Seeing that manie glorie after the flesh, I will
ie also.
For yee suffer fooles gladlie, seeing yee your sel-
are wise.
For yee suffer if a man bring you into bondage,
man deuoure you, if a man take of you, if a man
himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.
I speake as concerning reproach, as though wee
beene weake: howbeit wherein seeuer anie is bold,
speake foolishlie I am bold also.
Are they Hebrewes? so am I: are they Israe-
s? so am I: are they the seede of Abraham? so am I.
Are they ministers of Christ? I speak as a foole,
m more: in labours more aboundant: in stripes
ue measure: in prisons more frequent: in deaths oft.
Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I fourtie
pes saue one.
Thrice was I beaten with rodes, once was I

stoned; thrice I suffered shipwracke: a night a
day I haue beene in the deepe.

26 In iourneying often, in perils of waters
perils of Robbers, in perils by mine owne coun
men, in perils by the Heathen, in perils in the cit
perils in the wildernesse, in perils in the Sea, in p
among false brethren.

27 In wearinesse and painefulnesse, in watch
often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in c
and nakednesse.

28 Besids those things ỹ are without, ỹ which c
meth vpon mee daylie, the care of all the Churches

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? w
offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needes glorie, I will glorie of
things which concerne mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Iesus Ch
which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie n

32 In Damascus the Gouernour vnder Ar
the king, kept the citie with a garison desirous to
prehend mee.

33 And through a window in a basket was I
downe by the wall, and escaped his hands.

## CHAP. XII.

1. Hee commendeth his Apostleship not by his re
lations. 9. But by his infirmities. 11. Blam
them for forcing this boasting.

IT is not expedient for mee, doubtlesse, to glor
I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lo

2 I knew a man in Christ aboue fourteens yee
agoe, whether in the bodie, I cannot tell, or whet
out of the bodie, I cannot tell, God knoweth: such
one caught vp, to the third heauen.

And I knew such a man, (whether in the bodie,
t of the bodie, I cannot tell, God knoweth)
How that hee was caught vp into Paradise, and
o vnspeakable wordes, which is not lawful for a
to vtter.
Of such a one will I glorie, yet of my selfe I will
glorie, but in mine infirmities.
For though I would desire to glorie, I shall not
foole: for I will say the trueth. But now I for-
e, lest any man should thinke of mee aboue that
ch hee seeth mee to bee, or that hee heareth of mee.
And lest I should be exalted aboue measure through
aboundance of the reuelations, there was giuen to
a thorne in the flesh, the messenger of Sathan to
et mee, lest I should bee exalted aboue measure.
For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it
ht depart from mee.
And hee said vnto mee, My grace is sufficient for
: for my strength is made perfect in weakenesse.
gladlie therefore will I rather glorie in mine in-
mities, that the power of Christ may rest vpon mee.
Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in re-
aches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses
Christes sake: for when I am weake, then am
trong.
I am become a foole in glorying, yee haue com-
ed mee. For I ought to haue beene commended of
, for in nothing am I behind the verie chiefest A-
les, though I bee nothing.
Truelie the signes of an Apostle were wrought
ong you in all patience, in signes and wonders, and
ghtie deedes.
For what is it wherein yee were inferiour to

other

other Churches, except it bee that I my selfe was burthensome to you? forgiue mee this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am readie to come to you, and I will not bee burthensome to you, for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will verie gladlie spend and bee spent for you, though the more abundantlie I loue you, the lesse I bee loued.

16 But bee it so: I did not burthen you: neuertheless beeing craftie, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gaine of you by any of them whom I sent vnto you?

18 I Desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gaine of you? Walked wee not in the same spirit? Walked wee not in the same steps?

19 Againe, thinke you that wee excuse our selues vnto you? wee speake before God in Christ: but we doe all things, deerelie beloued, for your edifying.

20 For I feare lest when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would, and that I shall bee found vnto you such as yee would not, lest there bee debates, enuying, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults.

21 And lest when I come againe, my God humble mee among you, and that I shall bewaile many which haue sinned alreadie, and haue not repented of the vncleannesse, and fornication, and lasciuiousnesse which they haue committed.

## CHAP. XIII.

1. Hee threatneth obstinate sinners. 5. Hee aduiseth them to a triall of their Faith, 7. and to a reformation of their sinnes.

is is the third time I am comming to you: in the
outh of two or three witnesses shall euery word
tablished.

I told you before, and foretell you as if I were
nt the second time, and being absent, nowe I
e to them which heretofore haue sinned, and to all
, that if I come againe, I will not spare.

Since yee seeke a proofe of Christe, speaking in
, which to you-ward is not weake, but is mighty
u.

For though hee was crucified through weaknes,
ee liueth by the power of God: for wee also are
kein him, but wee shall liue with him by the po-
of God toward you.

Examine your selues whether yee bee in the faith:
ue your owne selues. Know yee not your owne
es, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except yee bee
ebates?

But I trust that yee shall know that wee are not
obates.

Now I pray to God, that yee doe none euill, not
wee should appeare approued, but that yee should
that which is honest, though wee bee as reprobates.

For wee can doe nothing against the trueth, but
the trueth.

For wee are glad when we are weake, and ye are
ng: and this also wee wish, euen your perfection.

Therefore I write these thinges beeing absent,
beeing present, I should vse sharpenesse, according
the power which the Lord hath giuen mee to edifica-
n, and not to destruction.

Finallie, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of good
mfort, bee of one minde, liue in peace, and the God
of loue

of loue and peace shall bee with you.

12 Greete one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the Saintes salute you.

14 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and loue of God, and the communion of the holie Ghost with you all. Amen.

The second Epistle to the Corinthians, was written from Philippus a citie of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE To the Galatians.

## CHAP. I.

9. Hee wondereth that they haue so soone left the and the Gospel, which hee learned not of men, but of God:

PAul an Apostle, not of men, neither by men, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with mee, vnto the Churches of Galatia.

3 Grace bee to you and peace from God the Father and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

4 Who gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that hee might deliuer vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God, and our Father,

5 To whom bee glorie for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marueile, that you are so soone remoued from him, that called you into the grace of Christ, vnto another Gospel:

7 Which

which is not another, but there bée some that
le you, and would peruert the Gospel of Christ.
But though wée, or an Angel from heauen, preach
cher Gospel vnto you, than that which wée haue
hed vnto you, let him bee accursed.
As wée said before, so say I now againe, if anie
preach any other Gospel vnto you, than that yée
receiued, let him bée accursed.
For doe I now perswade men, or God? or doe I
to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should
e the seruant of Christ.
But I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel
h was preached of mée, is not after man.
For I neither receiued it of man, neither was I
ht it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.
For yée haue heard of my conuersation in time
in the Iewes religion, how that beyond measure
secuted the Church of God, and wasted it:
And profited in the Iewes religion, aboue ma-
nine equales in mine owne Nation, bëing more
dinglie zealous, of the traditions of my fathers.
But when it pleased God, who separated mée
my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace,
To reueale his Sonne in mée, that I might
h him among the Heathen, immediatelie I con-
d not with flesh and blood.
Neither went I vp to Hierusalem, to them which
Apostles before mée, but I went into Arabia, and
rned againe vnto Damascus.
Then after three yéeres, I went vp to Hieruса-
to see Peter, and abode with him fiftéene dayes.
But other of the Apostles saw I none, saue Iames
Lords brother.

20 Now

20 Nowe the thinges which I write vnto yo
hold, before God I lie not.

21 Afterwardes I came into the Regions of
and Cilicia.

22 And was vnknowne by face vnto the Chu
of Iudea, which were in Christ.

23 But they heard onelie, that hee which per
ted vs in times past, now preacheth the Faith
once hee destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in mee.

## CHAP. II.

1. He sheweth when hee went againe to Ierusalem
why. 14. Of justification by Faith & not by wo
20. They that are so justified, liue not in sinne.

THen fourteene yeeres after, I went vp again
Ierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke Titus
mee also.

2 And I went vp by reuelation, & communicated
to them ỳ Gospel, which I preach amõg the Gent
but priuatelie to them which were of reputation,
by any meanes, I should runne, or had runne in va

3 But neither Titus, who was with mee, bei
Greeke, was compelled to bee circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren, vnaw
brought in, who came in priuilie to spie out our li
tie, which wee haue in Christ Iesus, that they m
bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom wee gaue place by subjection, no
for an houre, that the trueth of the Gospel might c
tinue with you.

6 But of those, who seemed to bee somewhat, (w
soeuer they, were it maketh nomatter to mee, G
accep

eth no mans person,) for they who seeme to bee
what, in conference added nothing to mee.
But contrariwise, when they sawe that the Go-
of the vncircumcision was committed vnto mee,
e Gospel of the circumcision was to Peter:
(For hee that wrought effectuallie into Peter to
postleshippe of the circumcision, the same was
tie in mee towards the Gentiles.)
And when James, Cephas and John, who seemed
pillars, perceiued the grace that was giuen vnto
they gaue to mee and Barnabas the right handes
lowship, that wee should goe vnto the Heathen,
hey vnto the circumcision.
Onelie they would that wee should remember
re, the same which I also was forward to doe.
But when Peter was come to Antioch, I with-
him to the face, because hee was to bee blamed.
For before that certaine came from James, hee
ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come,
withdrew and separated himselfe, fearing them
h were of the circumcision.
And the other Iewes dissembled likewise with
insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away
their dissimulation.
But when I saw that they walked not vprightly
ding to the trueth of the Gospel, I said vnto Pe-
efore them all, If thou, being a Iew, liuest after
maner of Gentiles, and not as doe the Iewes, why
pellest thou the Gentiles to liue as doe the Iewes?
Wee who are Iewes by nature, and not sinners
e Gentiles,
Knowing y a man is not iustified by the works
Law, but by the Faith of Iesus Christ, euen wee

haue

haue beléeued in Iesus Christ, ẏ hee might bee iu
by the Faith of Christ, & not by the works of the
for by the workes of the Law shall no flesh bee iust

17 But if while wee seeke to bee iustified by C
wee our selues also are found sinners, is therfore C
the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build againe the things which I de
yed, I make my selfe a transgressour.

19 For I through the Lawe, am dead to the L
that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Neuerthele
liue, yet not I but Christ liueth in mee, and th
which I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith
Son of God, who loued mee, and gaue himselfe fo

21 I doe not frustrate the grace of God: for if ri
ousnesse come by the Law, thẽ Christ is dead in v

## CHAP. III.

1. Hee asked them what moued them to leaue faith, and hang vpon the Law. 6. They that leeue are iustified. 9. and blessed with Abraha

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you you should not obey the trueth, before whose Iesus Christ hath bẽne euidentlie set forth, cruc among you?

2 This only would I learne of you, receiued y spirit by the works of ẏ Law or by ẏ hearing of fa

3 Are yee so foolish: hauing begun in the Spirit yee now made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue yee suffered so many thinges in vaine, bee yet in vaine.

5 Hee therefore that ministreth to you the Spi and worketh miracles among you, doth hee it by wor

ts of the Law, or by the hearing of Faith?
Euen as Abraham beleeued God, and it was ac-
ted to him for righteousnesse.
Know yee therefore, that they which are of Faith,
me are the Children of Abraham.
And the Scripture foreseeing that God would ju-
the Heathen through Faith, preached before the
el vnto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all Na-
bee blessed.
So then they which bee of Faith, are blessed with
full Abraham,
For as manie as are of the workes of the Law,
nder the curse: for it is written, Cursed is euerie
hat continueth not in all things, which are writ-
n the Booke of the Law to doe them,
But that no man is justified by the Law, in the
of God, it is euident, for, The just shall liue by
h.
And the Law is not of Faith: but the man that
them, shall liue in them.
Christ hath redæmed vs from the curse of the
, beeing made a curse, for vs: for it is written,
ed is euerie one that hangeth on a tree:
That the blessing of Abraham might come on
entiles, through Iesus Christ, that wee might
e the promise of the Spirit through Faith.
Brethren, I speake after the manner of men:
hit bee but a mans couenant, yet if it bee confir-
no man disanulleth or addeth thereto.
Now to Abraham and his seede were the promi-
ses. Hee saith not, And to his seedes, as of manie,
sofone. And to thy seede, which is Christ.
And this I say, that the Couenant that was

confirmed before of God in Christ, the Lawe
was foure hundreth & thirtie yeares after, cannot
null, that it should make the promises of none eff
18 For if the inheritance be of the Law, it is no
of promise: but God gaue it to Abraham by promi
19 Wherefore then serueth the Lawe? it wa
ded because of transgressions, till the seed should
to whom the promise was made, and it was ord
by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.
20 Now a Mediatour is not a Mediatour o
but God is one.
21 Is the Lawe then against the promises of
God forbid: for if there had bene a Law giuen,
could haue giuen life, verilie righteousnesse
haue bene by the Law,
22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnd
that the promise by Faith in Iesus Christ mig
giuen to them that beleeue.
23 But before Faith came, we were kept
the Law, shut vp vnto Faith, which should after
bee reuealed.
24 Wherefore the Law was our Schoolema
bring vs vnto Christ, ỳ we might bee iustified by
25 But after that Faith is come, we are no
vnder a Schoolemaster.
26 For ye are all the children of God, by F
Christ Iesus.
27 For as many of you as haue bene baptized
Christ, haue put on Christ.
28 There is neither Iew nor Greeke, there i
ther bond nor free, there is neither male nor fe
for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.
29 And if yee bee Christs, then are ye Abra
seede, and heires according to the promise.

## CHAP. IIII.

We were vnder the Law till Christ came, 5. but Christ freed vs. 22. We are the sonnes of Abraham & the freewoman.

NOw I say, that the heire, as long as hee is a child, differeth nothing from a seruant, though hee bee Lord of all.

But is vnder Tutors and Gouernours, vnto the time appointed of the Father,

Euen so wee, when wee were children, were in bondage, vnder the Elements of the world:

But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, made vnder the Law.

To redeeme them that were vnder the Law, that we might receiue the adoption of sonnes.

And because yee are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a son: and if a sonne, then an heire of God through Christ.

Howbeit, then when yee knew not God, yee did seruice vnto them which by nature are not gods.

But now after that yee haue knowne God, or rather are knowne of God, how turne yee againe to the weake and beggerlie elements, whereunto yee desire againe to be in bondage?

Yee obserue dayes and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

I am afraid of you, lest I haue bestowed vpon you labour in vaine.

Brethren, I beseech you, bee as I am; for I am as yee are, yee haue not enjured mee at all.

Yee know how through infirmitie of the flesh,

I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh, ye despised not, nor rejected, but receiued mee as an Angel of God, euen as Christ Iesus.

15 Where is then the blessednesse you spake of? I beare you record, that if it had beene possible, ye would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them to mee.

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell your the trueth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well, yea they would exclude, that you might affect them.

18 But it is good to bee zealously affected alwayes in a good thing, & not onely when I am present with you.

19 My little children whom I trauaile in birth againe, vntill Christ bee formed in you.

20 I desired to bee present with you nowe, and change my voyce, for I stand in doubt of you.

21 Tell mee, yee that desired to bee vnder the Law, doe yee not heare the Law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, the one by a bond maid, the other by a free woman.

23 But hee who was of the bond woman, was borne after the flesh: but he of the free woman was by promise.

24 Which things are an allegorie: for these are the two Couenants, the one from the Mount Sinai, which gendreth to bondage, which is Agar.

25 For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Hierusalem, which nowe is, and is in bondage with her children.

26 But Hierusalem which is aboue, is free, which is the mother of vs all.

27 For it is written, Reioyce thou barren that

rest not, breake forth and cry thou that trauailest
; the desolate hath manie moe children than shee
hath an husband.
28 Now wee, Brethren, as Isaac was, are the
dren of promise.
29 But as then, hee that was borne after the flesh,
secuted him that was borne after the Spirite, euen
is now.
30 Neuertheless, what saith the Scripture? Cast
the bondwoman, and her sonne: for the sonne of
bondwoman shall not bee heire with the sonne of
freewoman.
31 So then, Brethren, wee are not children of the
bondwoman, but of the free.

## CHAP. V.

He moueth them to stand in their libertie, and not
to obserue Circumcision: 13. but rather loue. 19.
The works of the flesh. 22. The fruits of the Spirit.

1 Stand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith
Christ hath made vs free, and bee not entangled a-
gaine with the yoke of bondage.
2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if yee bee cir-
cised, Christ shall profite you nothing.
3 I testifie againe to euerie man that is circumci-
sed, that hee is a debter to doe the whole Law.
4 Christ is become of no effect vnto you, whosoeuer of
you are iustified by the Law: ye are fallen from grace.
5 For wee through the Spirit waite for the hope of
righteousnesse by Faith.
6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision auai-
leth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but Faith which
worketh by loue.

7 Yee did runne well; who did hinder you, that
should not obey the trueth?

8 This perswasion commeth not of him that c
leth you.

9 A little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe.

10 I haue confidence in you through the Lord, t
you will bee none otherwise minded: but hee that t
bleth you shall beare his iudgement whosoeuer he

11 And I, Brethren, if I yet preach circumci
why doe I yet suffer persecution? then is the offe
of the crosse ceased.

12 I would they were euen cut off which trouble

13 For Brethren, yee haue beene called vnto t
bertie, onelie vse not libertie for an occasion to
flesh, but by loue serue one another.

14 For all the Lawe is fulfilled in one word, e
in this; Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy self

15 But if yee bite and deuoure one another, t
hæde yee bee not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walke in the Spirit, and
shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh:

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and
Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrarie
one to the other: so that yee cannot doe the things
yee would.

18 But if yee bee led of the Spirit, yee are not
der the Law.

19 Now the workes of the flesh are manife
which are these, adulterie, fornication, vncleanne
lasciuiousnesse.

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, variance, e
lations, wrath, strife, seditious, heresies,

21 Enuyings, murthers, drunkennes, reuilin

such like: of the which I tell you before, as I haue
tolde you in time past, that they which doe such
ges, shall not inherite the Kingdome of God.
; But the fruite of the Spirit is loue, ioye, peace,
suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith.
; Meeknesse, temperance, against such there is
law.
4 And they that are Christes, haue crucified the
with the affections and lusts.
5 If wee liue in the Spirite, let vs also walke in
Spirit.
6 Let vs not bee desirous of vaine-glorie, prouo-
gone another, enuying one another.

## CHAP. VI.

Hee moueth them to deale mildelie with a bro-
her that slippeth. 6. To bee liberall to their Tea-
hers, and not wearie of well doing.

Brethren, if a man be ouertaken in a fault: ye which
are spiritual, restore such a one in the spirt of meek-
e, considering thy selfe lest thou also bee tempted.
2 Beare yee one anothers burthen, and so fulfill the
w of Christ.
3 For if a man thinke him selfe to bee something;
en hee is nothing, hee deceiueth himselfe.
4 But let euerie man proue his owne worke, and
n shall he haue rejoycing in himselfe alone, and not
another.
5 For euerie man shall beare his owne burthen.
6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate
to him that teacheth, in all good things.
7 Bee not deceiued, God is not mocked: for what-
uer a man soweth, that shall hee also reape.

8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but hee that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reape life euerlasting.

9 And let vs not bee wearie in well doing: for in due season wee shall reape, if wee faint not.

10 As wee haue therefore opportunitie, let vs do good vnto all men, especiallie vnto them who are of the house-hold of Faith.

11 Yee see howe large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As manie as desire to make a faire shewe in the flesh, they constraine you to bee circumcised, only lest they should suffer persecution for the Crosse of Christ.

13 For neither they themselues who are circumcised, keepe the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they may glorie in your flesh.

14 But God forbid, that I should glorie, saue in the Crosse of our Lorde, Iesus Christe, by whome the world is crucified vnto mee, and I vnto the world.

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcisiō, but a new creature.

16 And as manie as walke according to this rule, peace bee on them, and mercie, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble mee, for I beare in my bodie the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with your Spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

# EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE, To the Ephesians.

## CHAP. I.

our election, 6. and adoption, 11. Which is e fountaine of our Saluation.

Aul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of GOD, and to the Saintes which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus.

2 Grace bee to you, and peace from GOD ather, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

Blessed bee the God and Father of our Lord Iehrist, who hath blessed vs with all spirituall bles- in heauenlie places in Christ:

According as hee hath chosen vs in him, before the ation of the world, that wee should bee holie, and ut blame before him in loue.

Hauing predestinated vs vnto the adoption of en, by Iesus Christ to himselfe, according to the leasure of his will:

To the praise of the glorie of his grace, wherein th made vs accepted in the beloued:

In whome wee haue redemption through his , the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to the s of his grace.

Wherein hee hath abounded toward vs in all wise- and prudence:

Hauing made knowne vnto vs the mysterie of ill, according to his good pleasure, which hee had sed in himselfe.

That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, ght gather together in one, all things in Christ,

both

both which are in heauen, and which are on earth,
in him:

11 In whom also we haue obtained an inherit
beeing predestinated according to the purpose
who worketh all things after the counsell of his
will.

12 That wee should bee to the praise of his g
who first trusted in Christ.

13 In whom yee also trusted, after that yee
the word of trueth, the Gospel of your Saluatio
whom also after that yee beleeued, yee were sealed
that holie Spirit of promise.

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, t
the Redemption of the purchased possession, u
praise of his glorie.

15 Wherefore I also after I heard of your Fa
the Lord Iesus, and loue vnto all the Saintes.

16 Cease not to giue thankes for you, making
tion of you in my prayers.

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ, th
ther of glorie, may giue vnto you the Spirit of
dome and reuelation in the knowledge of him:

18 The eyes of our vnderstanding beeing in
tened that yee may knowe what is the hope of his
ling, and what the riches of the glorie of his in
tance in the Saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of hi
wer to vs-ward who beleeue, according to the wo
of his mightie power:

20 Which hee wrought in Christ when he r
him from the dead, and set him at his owne right
in the heauenly places.

21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power,

, & dominion, & euerie name that is named, not
in this world, but also in that which is to come:
And hath put all things vnder his feete and gaue
him to be the head ouer all things to the Church,
Which is his bodie, the fulnesse of him that fil-
leth all in all.

## CHAP. II.

That wee were 3. by nature, & what wee are 5. by
grace. 10. Wee are created into good workes.

And you hath quickened, who were deade in tres-
passes and sinnes.
Wherein in time paste yee walked according to
course of this world, according to the prince of the
er of the aire, the spirit that nowe worketh in the
ren of disobedience.
Among whom also wee all had our conuersation
mes past, in the lustes of our flesh, fulfilling the
es of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by na-
the children of wrath, euen as others:
But God who is rich in mercie, for his great
wherewith hee loued vs.
Euen when wee were dead in sinnes, hath quic-
vs together with Christ (by grace ye are saued)
And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit
ther in heauenlie places in Christ Iesus.
That in the ages to come, hee might shew the ex-
ing riches of his grace, in his kindnesse towardes
through Christ Iesus.
For by grace are yee saued, through Faith, and
not of your selues: it is the gift of God:
Not of workes, lest any man should boast.
For wee are his workmanship created in Christ

Iesus

Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath ordained that wee should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember that yee beeing in time passed, Gentiles in the flesh, who are called vncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands,

12 That at that time yée were without Christ, beeing alienes from the common-wealth of Israel, and strangers from the couenants of promise, hauing no hope, and without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, yée who sometime were farre off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For hée is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken downe the middle wall of partition betweene vs.

15 Hauing abolished in his flesh the enmitie, euen the Law of Commandements contained in Ordinances, for to make himselfe, of twaine, one new man, so making peace.

16 And y hée might reconcile both vnto God, in one bodie by the crosse, hauing slaine the enmity thereby.

17 And came, and preached peace to you which were afarre off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him wee both haue an accesse by one Spirit vnto the Father.

19 Now therefore, yée are no more strangers and forreiners, but fellow citizens with the Saintes, and of the houshold of God.

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe beeing the chiefe corner stone.

21 In whom all the building fitlie framed together groweth vnto an holie Temple in the Lord:

In whom you also are builded together for an
ation of God through the Spirit.

## CHAP. III.

e hidden mysterie, 6. that the *Gentiles* should
saued. 8. This was *Paul* to preach.

this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ
you Gentiles.

If yee haue heard of the dispensation of the grace
, which is giuen mee to youward.

How that by reuelation hee made knowne vnto
mysterie, (as I wrote afore in few words,

whereby when yee reade, yee may vnderstand
owledge in the mysterie of Christ)

which in other ages was not made knowne vn-
sonnes of men, as it is nowe reuealed vnto his
Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit,

That the Gentiles should bee fellowheires, and
same bodie, and partakers of his promise in
by the Gospel.

Whereof I was made a Minister, according to
t of the grace of God giuen vnto mee, by the ef-
l working of his power,

nto me, who am lesse than the least of all Saints,
grace giuen, that I should preach among the
les the vnsearchable riches of Christ.

nd to make all men see, what is the fellowship
mystery, which from the beginning of the world,
ene hid in God, who created all things by Jesus
.

To the intent that now vnto the principalities
wers in heauenlie places, might bee knowne by
urch, the manifold wisedome of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose which he
posed in Christ Iesus our Lord.

12 In whom wee haue boldnesse and accesse,
confidence by the Faith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that yee faint not at m
bulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the
ther of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Of whom the whole familie in heauen and
is named.

16 That hee would grant you according to the
of his glorie, to bee strengthened with might, b
Spirit in the inner man.

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by f
that yee beeing rooted and grounded in loue.

18 May bee able to comprehend with all Sain
what is the bredth, and length, and depth, and he

19 And to knowe the loue of Christ which pa
knowledge, that yee might bee filled with all the
nesse of God.

20 Now vnto him that is able to doe exceedi
boundantlie aboue all that wee aske or thinke, a
ding to the power that worketh in vs,

21 Vnto him bee glorie in the Church by Chri
sus throughout all ages, world without end. A

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Hee exhorteth to vnitie. 24. to put on the n
man. 25. to cast off lying, 29. and corrupt com
nication.

I Therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech
that yee walke worthie of the vocation wherewi
are called.

2 B

With all lowlineſſe and mækenes, with long ſuf-
g, forbearing one another in loue.
Endeuouring to kæpe the vnitie of the Spirit in
nd of peace.
There is one Body, and one Spirit, euen as yée
alled in one hope of your calling.
One Lord, one Father, one Baptiſme,
One God and Father of all, who is aboue all, and
gh all, and in you all.
But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, accor-
to the meaſure of the gift of Chriſt.
Wherefore hæ ſaith, When hee aſcended vp on
he led captiuitie captiue, & gaue gifts vnto men.
(Now that hæ aſcended, what is it but that hæ
deſcended firſt into the lower partes of the earth?
Hæ that deſcended, is the ſame alſo that aſcended
arre aboue all heauens, ỳ hæ might fill al things.)
And hæ gaue ſome Apoſtles, & ſome Prophets,
ome Euangeliſts: and ſome Paſtors, & Teachers.
For the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of
iniſterie, for the edifying of the Bodie of Chriſt:
Till we all come in the vnitie of the faith, & of the
wledge of the Son of God, vnto a perfect man, vn-
e meaſure of the ſtature of the fulneſſe of Chriſt.
That wæ henceforth bée no more children toſ-
and fro, and caried about with euery winde of
ine, by the ſleight of men, and cunning craftines,
eby they lye in wait to deceiue.
But ſpeaking the trueth in loue, may grow vp
him in all things which is the head, euen Chriſt:
From whom the whole bodie fitlie ioyned to-
er, and compacted by that which euerie ioynt ſup-
h, according to the effectuall working in the mea-

ſure

sure of euerie part, maketh increase of the bodie, t
edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore, and testifie in the L
that yee henceforth walke not as other Gentiles
in the vanitie of their minde.

18 Hauing the vnderstanding darkened, bein
lienated from the life of God, through the ignor
that is in them, because of the blindnesse of their he

19 Who beeing past feeling, haue giuen them
ues ouer vnto lasciuiousnesse, to worke all vncle
nesse with greedinesse.

20 But yee haue not so learned Christ:

21 If so bee that yee haue heard him, and haue b
taught by him, as the trueth is in Iesus.

22 That yee put off concerning the former con
sation, the olde man, which is corrupt according to
deceitfull lusts:

23 And bee renewed in the spirit of your minde

24 And that yee put on that new Man, which a
God is created in righteousnesse and true holinesse.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speake ev
man trueth with his neighbour: for wee are mem
one of another.

26 Bee yee angrie and sinne not, let not the Su
goe downe vpon your wrath:

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but rather
him labour, working with his handes the thing w
is good, that hee may haue to giue to him that need

29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out
your mouth, but that which is good, to the vse of edi
ing, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, wher

re sealed vnto the day of Redemption.

1 Let all bitternesse, and wrath, and anger, and
our, and euill speaking, bee put away from you,
all malice.

2 And bee yee kinde one to another, tender hear-
forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christes
hath forgiuen you.

---

## CHAP. V.

e exhorteth to loue. 3. To flee fornication, 4.
d vncleannesse. 15. To walke vvarilie. 22. The
tie of wiues. 25. and of husbands.

e yee therefore followers of God, as deare childrē.

2 And walke in loue, as Christ also hath loued
nd hath giuen himselfe for vs, an offering and a
fice to God for a sweete smelling sauour.

But Fornication and all vncleannesse, or coue-
sse, let it bee not once named amongst you, as
meth Saincts.

Neither filthines, nor foolish talking, nor iesting
are not conuenient: but rather giuing of thanks.

For this yee know, that no whoremonger, nor
ane person, nor couetous man who is an idola-
th any inheritance in the Kingdome of Christ,
God.

Let no man deceiue you with vaine wordes: for
e of these things commeth the wrath of God vp-
children of disobedience.

Bee not yee therefore partakers with them.

For yee were sometimes darknesse, but now are
ght in the Lord: walke as children of light.

For the fruite of the Spirit is in all goodnesse,
hteousnesse, and trueth.

10 Proouing what is acceptable vnto the Lo
11 And haue no fellowshippe with the vnfr
workes of darknesse, but rather reproue them.
12 For it is a shame euen to speake of those
which are done of them in secrete.
13 But all things that are reproued, are ma
nifest by the light: for whatsoeuer doeth make
fest, is light.
14 Wherefore hee saith, Awake thou that sl
and arise from the dead, & Christ shall giue th
15 See then that yee walke circumspectlie,
fooles, but as wise.
16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes ar
17 Wherefore bee yee not vnwise, but vnde
ding, what the will of the Lord is.
18 And bee not dronke with wine, wherei
cesse: but bee filled with the Spirit.
19 Speaking to your selues in Psalmes, & Hy
and spirituall songs, singing, and making mel
your heart to the Lord.
20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things
God, and the Father, in the Name of our Lor
Christ.
21 Submitting your selues one to another
feare of God.
22 Wiues submit your selues vnto your ow
bands, as vnto the Lord.
23 For the husband is the head of the wife, e
Christ is the head of the Church: and hee is the
our of the body.
24 Therfore as the Church is subiect vnto Ch
let the wiues be to their own husbands, in euery
25 Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Chr

CHAP. VI.

ed the Church, and gaue himselfe for it:
That hee might sanctifie and cleanse it with the
ing of water, by the word.
That hee might present to himselfe a glorious
ch; not hauing spotte or wrinckle, or any such
but that it should bee holy and without blemish.
So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne
s: hee that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe,
For no mã euer yet hated his own flesh, but nou-
th and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord the Church.
For wee are members of his bodie, of his flesh,
his bones.
For this cause shall a man leaue Father and
er, and shall bee joyned vnto his wife, and they
all bee one flesh.
This is a great misterie: but I speake concer-
Christ and the Church.
Neuertheless, let euery one of you in particular
his wife euen as himselfe, and the wife see that
euerence her husband.

---

CHAP. VI.

e dueties of children. 5. Of seruants. 10. Our life
warfare. 13. The Christians armour.

Vildren, obey your Parents in the Lord: for this
right.
Honour thy father and mother, (which is the
mmandement with promise.)
That it may bee well with thee, and thou mayest
ng on the earth.
And yee fathers prouoke not your children to
but bring them vp in the nourture and admo-
of the Lord.

5 Seruantes, bee obedient to them that are y
Maſters, according to the fleſh, with feare and tr
bling, in ſingleneſſe of your heart, as vnto Chriſt.
6 Not with eye-ſeruice as men pleaſers, but as
ſeruants of Chriſt, doing the will of God frō the he
7 With good will doing ſeruice, as to the Lord,
not to men.
8 Knowing that whatſoeuer good thing any
doeth, the ſame ſhall hee receiue of the Lord whe
hee bee bond or free.
9 And yee Maſters doe the ſame things vnto th
forbearing threatning: knowing that your Ma
alſo is in heauen, neither is there reſpect of per
with him.
10 Finallie, my Brethren, bee ſtrong in the Lo
and in the power of his might.
11 Put on the whole armour of God, that yee
bee able to ſtand againſt the wiles of the deuill.
12 For wee wreſtle not againſt fleſh and blood,
againſt principalities, againſt powers, againſt
rulers of the darkneſſe of this world, againſt ſpiritu
wickedneſſe in high places.
13 Wherefore take vnto you the whole armour
God, that yee may bee able to with-ſtand in the e
day, and hauing done all, to ſtand.
14 Stād therfore, hauing your loynes girt about
trueth and hauing on the breaſt plate of righteouſn
15 And your feete ſhod with the preparation of
Goſpel of peace.
16 And aboue all taking the ſhield of faith, wher
ye ſhalbe able to quēch al the fiery darts of the wick
17 And take the helmet of Saluation, and the ſw
of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

8 Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplica-
ion in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all
steuerance, and supplication for all Saints.
19 And for mee that vtterance may bee giuen vn-
ee, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make
wne the mysterie of the Gospel.
20 For which I am an Ambassadour in bondes, that
ein I may speake boldly, as I ought to speake.
21 But that yee also may knowe mine affaires,
how I doe, Tychicus a beloued brother and faith-
minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all
ges.
22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same pur-
, that yee might know our affaires, and that hee
ght comfort your hearts.
23 Peace bee to the Brethren, and loue, with faith
m God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.
24 Grace bee with all them that loue our Lord Ie-
Christ in sinceritie.

Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE, To the Philippians.

### CHAP. I.

Pauls thankfulnesse to God for them, 9. and his
prayers for them. 12. The fruite of Pauls troubles.
27. His readinesse to suffer.

1 PAul & Timotheus the seruants of Iesus Christ,
to all the Saintes in Christ Iesus, which art at
Phillippi, with the Bishops and Deacons.

2 Grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our
ther, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thank my God vpon euery remembrance of

4 Alwayes in euery prayer of mine for you all
king request, with ioye.

5 For your fellowship in the Gospel from the
day vntill now.

6 Beeing confident of this verie thing, that
which hath begun a good worke in you, will perf
it vntil the day of Iesus Christ:

7 Euen as it is meet for me to thinke this of yo
because I haue you in mine heart, in as much as
in my bondes and in the defence and confirmati
the Gospel, yee all are partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatlie I long
you all, in the bowels of Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray that your loue may abound
more and more in knowledge, and in all iudgeme

10 That yee may approue thinges that are
lent, that yee may be sincere, and without offen
the day of Christ.

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousnes,
are by Iesus Christ vnto the glory and praise of

12 But I would yee should vnderstand, bret
that the things which happened vnto mee, haue
out rather vnto the furtherance of the Gospel.

13 So that my bondes in Christ are manifest
the palace, and in all other places.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, w
confident by my bondes, are much more bolde to
the word without feare.

15 Some indeede preach Christ euen of enuy,
strife, and some also of good will.

16

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bondes.
17 But the other of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.
18 What then? Notwithstanding euery way, whether in pretence, or in trueth; Christ is preached, and therein doe reioyce, yea, will reioyce.
19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and the supplie of the Spirit of Iesus Christ.
20 According to mine earnest expectation, and mine hope, that in nothing I shall bee ashamed: but that with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my bodie, whether it bee by life or by death.
21 For, to me to liue, is Christ, and to die is gaine.
22 But if I liue, in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose, I wot not.
23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, hauing a desire to depart, and to bee with Christ, which is farre better.
24 Neuertheless, to abide in the flesh, is more needful for you.
25 And hauing this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and ioye of Faith.
26 That your reioycing may bee more abundant in Iesus Christ for mee, by my comming to you againe.
27 Onelie let your conuersation bee as it becometh the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else bee absent, I may heare of your affaires that ye stand fast in one Spirit, with one minde, striuing together for the Faith of the Gospel.
28 And in nothing terrified by your aduersaries,

which is to them an euident token of perdition: but to you of Saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen in the behalfe of Christ, not onelie to beleeue on him, but also to suffer for his sake.

30 Hauing the same conflict which yee saw in me, and now heare to bee in mee.

## CHAP. II.

2. Hee exhorteth to vnitie and humilitie: 12. and to a carefull proceeding in the way of saluation.

IF there bee therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowshippe of the Spirit, if bowels, and mercies:

2 Fulfill yee my ioye, that yee bee like minded, hauing the same loue, beeing of one accord, of one mind.

3 Let nothing bee done through strife, or vaine glorie, but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteeme other better than themselues.

4 Looke not euerie man on his owne thinges, but euery man also on the thinges of other.

5 Let this minde bee in you, which was also in Christ Iesus:

6 Who beeing in the forme of God, thought it no robberie to bee equall with God:

7 But made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke vpon him the forme of a seruant, and was made in the likenesse of men.

8 And beeing found in fashion as a man hee humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto death, euen the death of the Crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highlie exalted him, and giuen him a Name which is aboue euery Name.

10 That

hat at the Name of Iesus euery knée should bow,
ings in heauen, and things in earth, and thinges
the earth:
And that euery tongue should confesse that Ie-
hrist is Lord, to the glorie of God the Father.
Wherefore, my beloued, as yée haue alwayes
ed, not as in my presence onely, but now much
in mine absence, worke out your owne Salua-
with feare and trembling.
For it is God which worketh in you, both to
and to doe, of his good pleasure.
Doe all thinges without murmurings, and dis-
gs.
That yee may bee blamelesse and harmlesse, the
s of God without rebuke, in the mids of a crow-
nd a peruerse Nation, among whome ye shine as
s in the world:
Holding forth the word of life, that I may re-
in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in
, neither laboured in vaine.
Yea, and if I bee offered vpon the sacrifice and
e of your Faith, I ioy, and reioyce with you all.
For the same cause also doe ye ioye, and reioyce
mee.
But I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send Timo-
shortlie vnto you, that I also may bee of good
rt, when I know your estate.
For I haue no man like minded, who will na-
lie care for your estate.
For all seeke their owne, not the thinges which
Iesus Christs.
But ye know the proofe of him, That as a sonne
the father, hée hath serued with me in the Gospel.
Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soone

as I shall see how it shall goe with mee.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my
shall come shortlie.

25 Yet I supposed it necessarie to send to yo
paphroditus my brother and companion in labour,
fellow-souldiour, but your messenger, and he tha
nistred to my wants.

26 For hee longed after you all, & was full of h
nesse, because that ye had heard that he had bene
27 For indeede hee was sicke nigh vnto death,
God had mercie on him: and not on him onelie, b
mee also, lest I should haue sorrow vpon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefullie,
when yee see him againe yee may rejoyce, and t
may bee the lesse sorrowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all
nesse, and hold such in reputation.

30 Because for the worke of Christ hee was
vnto death, not regarding his life, to supplie your
of seruice toward mee.

## CHAP. III.

1. Hee warneth them of false teachers. 15. Hee
horteth them 17. to imitate him. 18. And to
cline the wayes of carnall Christians.

FInallie, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To
the same thinges to you, to mee indeed is not
uous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogges, beware of euill workes:
ware of the concision.

3 For wee are the circumcision, which worsh
God in the Spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus,
haue no confidence in the flesh.

4 Th

Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh:
ny other man thinketh that hee hath whereof hee
ght trust in the flesh, I am more.
Circumcised the eight day, of the stocke of Israel,
e tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrewes,
uching the Law, a Pharisee.
Concerning zeale persecuting the Church: touching
ghteousnesse which is in the Law, blameless.
But what thinges were gaine to mee: those I
ted losse for Christ,
Yea, doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for
ercellencie of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my
: for whom I haue suffered the losse of all thinges,
e count them but dongue, that I may win Christ.
And bee found in him, not hauing mine owne
teousnesse which is of the Law, but that which is
ugh the Faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which
God by Faith.
That I may know him, and the power of his re-
rrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being
e conformable vnto his death,
If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the re-
ction of the dead.
Not as though I had alreadie attained, either
e alreadie perfect: but I follow after, if that I may
ehend that, for which also I am apprehended of
ist Jesus.
Brethren, I count not my selfe to haue appre-
ded: but this one thing I doe, forgetting those
gs which are behinde, and reaching forth vnto
e thinges which are before.
I presse towarde the marke, for the price of the
calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let

15 Let vs therefore, as many as bee perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing yee bee otherwise minded, God shall reueale euen this vnto you.

16 Neuertheless, whereto wee haue already attained, let vs walke by the same rule, let vs mind the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of mee, and marke them which walke so, as yee haue vs for an ensample.

18 (For many walke, of whom I haue told you often, and now tell you euen weeping, that they are the enemies of the Crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, and whose glorie is in their shame, who mind earthly things)

20 For our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also wee looke for the Sauiour, the Lord Iesus Christ:

21 Who shall change our vile bodie, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby hee is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

## CHAP. IIII.

4. Generall exhortations. 10. His ioye for their liberalitie toward him, and Gods grace in them.

THerefore, my Brethren, dearelie beloued and longed for, my ioye and crowne, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearely beloued.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they bee of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with mee in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the booke of life:

Reioyce in the Lord alway: and againe, I say,
yce.
Let your moderation bee knowne vnto all men:
Lord is at hand:
Bee carefull for nothing: but in euery thing by
er and supplication with thankesgiuing, let your
ell bee made knowne vnto God.
And the peace of God which passeth all vnder-
ing, shall keepe your heartes and mindes throw
st Iesus.
Finallie, Brethren, whatsoeuer things are true,
soeuer things are honest, whatsoeuer things are
whatsoeuer things are pure, whatsoeuer things
uelie, whatsoeuer thinges are of good report: if
e bee any vertue, and if there bee any praise, think
ese things.
Those thinges which yee haue both learned and
ued, and heard, and seene in mee, doe: and the God
ace shall bee with you.
But I reioyced in the Lord greatlie, that now at
ast your care of mee hath flourished againe, wher-
e were also carefull, but yee lacked opportunitie.
Not that I speake in respect of want: for I haue
ned in whatsoeuer estate I am, therewith to be
ent.
I know both how to bee abased, and I know how
ound euery where, and in all thinges I am in-
ted, both to bee full, and to bee hungrie, both to
nd, and to suffer need.
I can doe all things through Christ, which streng-
eth mee.
Notwithstanding, yee haue well done, that yee
communicate with mine affliction.

15 Now

15 Now yee Philippians, know also, that in the ginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with mee, as concerning giuing and receiuing, but yee onelie.

16 For euen in Thessalonica, yee sent once, and gaine vnto my necessitie.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But I haue all and abound: I am full, having receiued of Epaphroditus, the thinges which were sent from you, an odour of a swete smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supplie all your neede, according to his riches in glorie, by Christ Jesus.

20 Now vnto God and our Father, bee glorie euer and euer, Amen.

21 Salute euery Saint in Christ Jesus: the brethren which are with mee, greete you.

22 All the Saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome by Epaphroditus.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE To the Colossians.

## CHAP. I.

3. Hee thanketh God for their Faith, 9. prayeth for their increase in grace. 14. and describeth the glorie of Christ vnto them.

PAul an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

## CHAP. I.

To the Saincts and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

We giue thankes to God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, praying alwayes for you,

Since wee heard of your Faith in Christ Iesus, and of the loue which yee haue to all the Saincts.

For the hope which is laide vp for you in heauen, whereof yee heard before in the worde of the trueth of the Gospel.

Which is come vnto you as it is in all the world, & bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in trueth,

As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare fellowseruant, who is for you a faithfull Minister of Christ:

Who also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.

For this cause, wee also since the day wee heard it, do not cease to pray for you, & to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisedome and spirituall vnderstanding.

That yee might walke worthie of the Lord, vnto all pleasing, being fruitfull in euery good worke, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, vnto all patience, and long suffering, with joyfulnesse.

Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to bee partakers of the inheritance of the Saincts in light.

Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of his deare Sonne,

In whome wee haue redemption through his

blood, euen the forgiuenesse of sinnes.

15 Who is the Image of the inuisible God, the
borne of euery creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are
heauen, & that are in earth, visible and invisible, w
ther they bee thrones, or dominions, or principalit
or powers: all things were created by him, & for hi

17 And hee is before all thinges, and by him
things consist.

18 And hee is the head of the body, the Church:
is the beginning, the first borne from the dead, t
in all things hee might haue the preheminence:

19 For it pleased the Father, that in him sho
all fulnesse dwell.

20 And (hauing made peace through the blood
his Crosse) by him to reconcile all thinges vnto hi
selfe, by him, I say, whether they bee thinges in ear
or things in heauen.

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and e
mies in your mindes by wicked workes, yet now h

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to prese
holy and vnblameable, and vnreproueable in his sig

23 If yee continue in the Faith, grounded & setl
and bee not moued away from the hope of the Gos
which yee haue heard, and which was preached to e
rie creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Pa
am made a Minister.

24 Who now reioyce in my sufferings for you, a
fill vp that which is behind of the afflictions of Ch
in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church

25 Whereof I am made a Minister, according to t
dispensation of God, which is giuen to me for you,
fulfill the word of God.

26 Eu

## CHAP. II.

26 Euen the mysterie which hath beene hid from
, and from generations, but now is made mani-
to his Saints.
27 To whom God would make knowne what is
riches of the glorie of this mysterie among the
tiles which is Christ in you, the hope of glorie:
28 Whom wee preach, warning euerie man, and
ching euery man in all wisedome, that wee may
ent euery man perfect in Christ Iesus.
29 Whereunto I also labour, striuing according to
working, which worketh in mee mightily.

## CHAP. II.

Hee exhorteth them to bee constant in Christ. 8. to
eware of Philosophie & vaine tradition, 18. wor-
pping of Angels. 20. and legall ceremonies.
1 For I would that yee knew what great conflict I
aue for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as
y as haue not seene my face in the flesh:
2 That their hearts might bee comforted, being
together in loue, & vnto all riches of the full assu-
e of vnderstanding, to the acknowledgment of the
erie of God, and of the Father, and of Christ.
3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome,
nowledge.
4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you
entysing words.
5 For though I bee absent in the flesh, yet am I
you in the spirit, ioying and beholding your or-
and the stedfastnesse of your Faith in Christ.
6 As yee haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the
so walke yee in him.
7 Rooted and built vp in him, and stablished in the

faith, as yée haue béene taught, abounding therin w
thankesgiuing.

8 Beware lest any man spoile you through Philo
phie and vaine deceit, after the tradition of men, a
the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the G
head bodilie.

10 And yee are complet in him, which is the h
of all principalitie and power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circ
cision made without handes, in putting off the bod
the sinnes of the flesh, by the Circumcision of Chri

12 Buried with him in Baptisme, wherein
you are risen with him, through the Faith of the o
ration of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you béeing dead in your sinnes, and
uncircumcision of your flesh, hath hée quickened to
ther with him, hauing forgiuen you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinan
that was against vs, which was contrarie to vs,
toke it out of the way, nailing it to his Crosse.

15 And hauing spoiled principalities and powers
made a shew of thē openly, triumphing ouer them

16 Let no man therefore iudge you in meate, o
drinke, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new m
or of the Sabbath dayes.

17 Which are a shadow of thinges to come, but
bodie is of Christ.

18 Let no man beguile you of your reward, in s
luntarie humilitie and worshippin g of Angels, in
ding into those things which hée hath not séene, va
lie puft vp by his fleshlie minde:

19 And not holding the head, from which all the b

ioynts and hands, hauing nourishment ministred, knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if yee bee dead with Christ from the ments of the world: why, as though liuing in the ld, are ye subiect to ordinances?

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not.

22 Which all are to perish with the vsing) after commandements and doctrines of men:

23 Which things haue indeed a shew of wisedome ill-worship and humilitie, & neglecting of the bo- not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

## CHAP. III.

Hee sheweth where wee should seeke Christ. 5. Hee horteth to mortification, 10. to put off the olde an, and put on Christ, 12. and to sindrie other eries.

1 If yee then bee risen with Christ, seeke those things ich are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right of God.

2 Set your affection on things aboue, not on things earth.

3 For yee are dead, and your life is hid with Christ od.

4 When Christ, who is our life, shall appeare, then yee also appeare with him in glorie.

5 Mortifie therefore your members, which are vpon arth: fornication, vncleannes, inordinate affection oncupiscence, and couetousnes, which is idolatrie:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God com- on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which yee also walked sometime, when ye in them.

8 But now you also put off all these anger, wrath malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that yee haue put the olde man with his deedes.

10 And haue put on the new man which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him

11 Where there is neither Greeke, Iew, circumcision, nor vncircumcision nor Barbarian, Scythian bond nor free, but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holie and beloued) bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse of minde, meekenesse, long suffering.

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man haue a quarrell against any: euen as Christ forgaue you, so also doe yee.

14 And aboue all these thinges put on Charitie which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to which also yee are called in one body: & bee ye thankfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisedome, teaching and admonishing one another in Psalmes, Hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoeuer yee doe in word or deede, doe all in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giuing thanks to God and the Father, by him.

18 Wiues submit your selues vnto your owne husbandes, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, loue your Wiues, and bee not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your Parents in all thinges, for this is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fa-

21 Fathers prouoke not your children to anger, lest they bee discouraged.
22 Seruants, obey in all things your Masters according to the flesh: not with eye-seruice, as menpleasers, but in singlenesse of heart fearing God.
23 And whatsoeuer yee doe, doe it heartilie, as to the Lord, and not vnto men.
24 Knowing that of the Lord yee shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for yee serue the Lord Christ.
25 But hee that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong which hee hath done, and there is no respect of persons.

## CHAP. IIII.

He exhorteth to feruencie in prayer. 5. And to walke wiselie toward them that doe not yet know Christ.

1 Masters, giue vnto your Seruants that which is iust and equall, knowing that yee also haue a Master in heauen.
2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thankesgiuing.
3 Withall, praying also for vs, that God would open vnto vs a doore of vtterance, to speake the mistery of Christ, for which I am also in bondes:
4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speake.
5 Walke in wisedome toward them that are without, redeeming the time.
6 Let your speech bee alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know howe yee ought to answere euerie man.
7 All mine estate shall Tychicus declare vnto

you, who is a beloued brother, and a faithfull Min-
ister, and fellow-seruant in the Lord:

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you, for the same purpose
y he might know your estat, and comfort your harts

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloued brother
who is one of you. They shall make knowne vnto y
all things which are done heere.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you
and Marcus sisters sonne to Barnabas, (touchi
whom yee receiued commandements, if hee come
to you, receiue him:

11 And Iesus, which is called Iustus, who are
the circumcision. These onelie are my fellow-wo
kers vnto the kingdome of God, which haue beene
comfort vnto mee.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a seruant of Chri
saluteth you, alwayes labouring feruentlie for you
prayers, that yee may stand perfect, and complete in
the will of God.

13 For I beare him record, that hee hath a gre
zeale for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and th
in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloued Physician & Demas greete y

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, a
Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read amongst you, ca
that it bee reade also in the Church of the Laodecian
and that yee likewise read the Epistle from Laodeci

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the minis
which thou hast receiued of the Lord, y thou fulfil

18 The salutation by the hand of mee Paul.
member my bondes, Grace bee with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome, to the Colossians
Tychicus and Onesimus.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE, To the Thessalonians.

## CHAP. I.

He sheweth his mindfulnesse of them in thankesgiuing and prayer. 5. And his perswasion of their sincere faith and conuersion.

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father and in the Lord Iesus Christ: Grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 Wee giue thankes to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers.

3 Remember without ceasing your worke of Faith, and labour of loue, and patience of hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren, beloued, your election of God.

5 For our Gospel came not vnto you in word only: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as yee know what manner of men wee were among you for your sake.

6 And yee became followers of vs and of the Lord having receiued the word in much affliction, with ioye of the holie Ghost:

7 So that yee were ensamples to all that belieue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the worde of the Lord, not onlie in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in euery place, your Faith to God ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speake any thing.

9 For they themselues shewe of vs, what manner

of entring in wee had vnto you, and how yee turned
God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God:
10 And to waite for his Sonne from heauen, whom
hee raised from the dead, euen Iesus, which deliuered
vs from the wrath to come.

## CHAP. II.

1. 2. 3. 4. &c. How the Gospel was preached vnto
them, and how they receiued it. 18. Why he was
so long absent, and why hee desired to see them.

FOr your selues, Brethren, know our entrance
vnto you, that it was not in vaine.
2 But euen after that wee had suffered before, and
were shamefully entreated, as yee know, at Philippi,
wee were bold in our God, to speake vnto you the Gos-
spel of God with much contention.
3 For our exhortation was not of deceite, nor of
cleannesse, nor in guile:
4 But as wee were allowed of God to bee put in trust
with the Gospel, euen so wee speake, not as pleasing
men, but God, which tryeth our hearts.
5 For neither at any time vsed wee flattering
wordes, as yee know, nor a cloake of couetousnesse,
God is witnesse.
6 Nor of men sought wee glory, neither of you, nor
yet of others, when we might haue beene burdensome
as the Apostles of Christ.
7 But wee were gentle among you, euen as a nurse
cherisheth her children:
8 So beeing affectionately desirous of you, wee were
willing to haue imparted vnto you not the Gospel of
God onely, but also our owne soules, because yee were
deare vnto vs.

## CHAP. II.

For yee remember, brethren our labour, and tra-
: for labouring night and day, because we would
chargeable vnto any of you, wee preached vnto
the Gospel of God.
o ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and
lie, and vnblameable wee behaued our selues, a-
ng you that beleeue.
As you know how wee exhorted and comforted,
charged euerie one of you, ( as a father doeth his
ren )
That wee would walke worthie of God, who
called you vnto his kingdome and glorie.
For this cause also thanke wee God, without
ng, because when yee receiued the word of God,
h ye heard of vs, yee receiued it not as the word
en, but (as it is in trueth) the word of God, which
nallie worketh also in you that beleeue.
For ye brethren, became followers of the Chur-
of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus: for
also haue suffered like things of your owne coun-
men euen as they haue of the Iewes:
Who both killed the Lord Iesus, and their owne
phets, and haue persecuted vs: and they pleased
God, and are contrarie to all men:
Forbidding vs to speake to the Gentiles, that
might bee saued, to fill vp their sinnes alwayes:
the wrath is come vpon them to the vttermost.
But we, Brethren, being taking from you for a
time, in presence not in heart, endeuoured the
abundantly to see your face with great desire.
Wherefore wee would haue come vnto you
en I Paul) once againe: but Sathan hindered vs.
For what is our hope, or ioye, or crowne of re-

joycing?

ioycing? Are not euen yee in the presence of our
Iesus Christ at his comming?
20 For yee are our glorie and ioy.

## CHAP. III.

1. Of Pauls sending of Timothie vnto them. 7. ioye for them. 10. His desire to see them.

WHerefore, when wee could no longer forbe
we thought it good to bee left at Athens al
2 And sent Timotheus our brother and Minis
God, & our fellow-labourer in the Gospel of Christ
establish you, & to comfort you concerning your fa
3 That no man should bee moued by these afflicti
for your selues know that we are appointed there
4 For verilie when wee were with you, wee t
you before that wee should suffer tribulation, eue
it came to passe, and yee know
5 For this cause when I could no longer forbea
sent to know your Faith, lest by some meanes
Tempter haue tempted you, & our labour be in va
6 But now when Timotheus came from you t
vs, and brought vs good tidings of your Faith & ch
tie, & that yee haue good remembrance of vs alway
desiring greatlie to see vs, as wee also to see you:
7 Therefore, brethren, wee were comforted ouer
in all our affliction and distresse by your Faith.
8 For now wee liue, if yee stand fast in the Lor
9 For what thankes can wee render to God ag
for you, for all the ioye wherewith wee ioye for y
sakes before our God,
10 Night and day praying exceedinglie, that
might see your face, and might perfect that whic
lacking in your Faith?

## CHAP. IIII.

Nowe God himselfe, and our Father, and our
Jesus Christ, direct our way vnto you.
And the Lord make you to encrease, and abound
one towardes another, and towardes all men,
as wee doe towards you:
To the ende hee may stablish your heartes vn-
eable in holinesse before God, euen our Father, at
comming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his
nts.

## CHAP. IIII.

ee, exhorteth them to goe on in godlinesse: 6. to
olinesse, 9. to loue, 11. to quietnesse, 13. to mo-
rate sorrow for the dead. 17. Of the resurrection
d last judgemeut.

rthermore then, wee beseech you brethren, and ex-
t you, by the Lord Jesus, that as yee haue recei-
of vs, how yee ought to walke, and to please God,
e would abound more and more.
For yee know what commandementes wee gaue
by the Lord Jesus.
For this is the will of God, euen our sanctificati-
hat yee should abstaine from fornication:
That euery one of you should know how to possesse
ssell in sanctification and honour.
Not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gen-
which know not God.
That no man goe beyond and defraud his brother
y matter, because that the Lord is the auenger of
uch, as we also haue forewarned you, and testified:
For God hath not called vs vnto vncleannes, but
holinesse.
Hee therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man,

but

but God who hath giuen vnto vs his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherlie loue, yée nee
that I write vnto you: for yée your selues are tau
God to loue one another,

10 And indéede yee doe it towards all the bret
which are in all Macedonia: but wee beséech yo
thren, that yée increase more and more:

11 And that yée studie to bée quiet, and to do
owne businesse, and to worke with your owne h
(as wée commanded you:)

12 That yée may walke honestlie toward the
are without, and that yée may haue lacke of noth

13 But I would not haue you to bee ignorant
thren, concerning them which are asléepe, that ye
row not, euen as others which haue none hope.

14 For if wee belieue that Iesus dyed, and r
gaine, euen so them also which slæpe in Iesus,
God bring with him.

15 For this we say vnto you by the word of the
That wée which are aliue, & remaine vnto the co
of the Lord, shall not preuent them which are asl

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from h
with a shout, with the voyce of the Archangel, &
the troumpe of God, & the dead in Christ shall rise

17 Then wee which are aliue, and remaine, sh
caught vp together with them in the cloudes, to
the Lord in ỹ aire: & so shall we euer be with the

18 Wherfore comfort one another with these w

## CHAP. V.

1. Hee sheweth of Christs second comming to ju
ment, 16. and giueth diuerse precepts, 25.
so concludeth.

t of the times and the seasons, brethren, yée haue
nède that I write vnto you.
For your selues know perfectly, that the day of
rd so commeth as a thiefe in the night.
For when they shall say, Peace and safetie, then
n destruction commeth vpon them, as trauaile
a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.
But yée brethren, are not in darknesse, that that
ould ouertake you as a thiefe.
yée are all the children of light, and the children
day, wée are not of the night, nor of darknesse.
Therefore, let vs not sleepe as doe others: but
watch and bee sober.
For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they
e drunken, are drunken in the night.
But let vs who are of the day, bée sober, putting
breast-plate of Faith and loue, and for an helmet,
pe of Saluation.
For God hath not appointed vs to wrath: but to
ne Saluation by our Lord Iesus Christ,
Who died for vs, that whether wée wake or
wée should liue together with him.
Wherefore, comfort your selues together, and
one another, euen as yée also doe.
And wée beseech you, brethren, to knowe them
labour among you, and are ouer you in the
and admonish you:
And to esteeme them very highly in loue for their
s sake, and bee at peace among your selues.
Now wée exhort you, Brethren, warne them that
rulie, comfort the feeble minded, support the
e, bee patient toward all men.
See that none render euill for euill vnto anie
man:

man but euer follow that which is good, both amo
your selues, and to all men.

16 Reioyce euermore:

17 Pray without ceasing.

18 In euerie thing giue thankes: for this is
will of God in Christ Iesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophecyings:

21 Proue all thinges, hold fast that which is g

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 And the verie God of peace sanctifie you w
lie: and I pray God your whole spirit, and soule,
body bee preserued blameless vnto the comming
our Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Faithfull is he ý calleth you, who also will d

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I charge you by the Lord, that this Epistle
read vnto all the holy brethren.

28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee
you. Amen.

¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians,
written from Athens.

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PA
the Apostle, To the Thessalonians.

## CHAP. I.

1, Hee sheweth his good opinion of their faith,
and patience, 6, And comforteth them ag
persecution.

PAul and Siluanus and Timotheus, vnto the C
of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and
Lord Iesus Christ.

2 Gr

Grace vnto you, and peace from God our Fa-
, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
Wee are bound to thanke God alwayes for you
ren, as it is meete, because that your Faith gro-
erœdingly, and the Charitie of euerie one of you
wards each other aboundeth:
So that wee our selues glorie in you in the Chur-
of God, for your patience and Faith in all your
cutions and tribulations that yee endure.
Which is a manifest token of the righteous judge-
of God, that yee may bee counted worthie of the
dome of God, for which yee also suffer.
Seeing it is a righteous thing with God, to re-
pence tribulation to them that trouble you.
And to you who are troubled, rest with vs, when
Lord Jesus shall bee reuealed from heauen, with his
ty Angels.
In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that
e not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our
Jesus Christ.
Who shall bee punished with euerlasting destru-
from the presence of the Lord, and from the glorie
s power:
When he shall come to be glorified in his Saints,
d bee admired in all them that beleeue (because
testimonie among you was beleeued) in that day.
Wherefore also wee pray alwayes for you, that
God would count you worthie of this calling and
all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the
e of Faith and power:
That the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ may
rified in you, and yee in him, according to the
of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAP.

## CHAP. II.

1. Hee exhorteth them to continue ſteadfaſt, 3. ſheweth that there ſhall bee a departure from the b[elief] 9. and a diſcouerie of Antichriſt before the day of the Lord.

NOw wee beſeech you, brethren, by the comm[ing] of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and by our gather[ing] together vnto him.

2 That yee bee not ſoone ſhaken in minde, or troubled, neither by ſpirit, nor by word, nor by let[ter] as from vs, as that the day of Chriſt is at hand;

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes, for [that] day ſhall not come, except there come a falling a[way] firſt, & that man of ſin be reuealed, the ſon of perdit[ion]

4 Who oppoſeth & exalteth himſelfe aboue al y is led God, or that is worſhipped: ſo y hee as God, ſit[teth] in the Temple of God, ſhewing himſelfe y he is G[od]

5 Remember yee not, that when I was yet [with] you, I told you theſe things.

6 And now yee know what with-holdeth, that [he] might bee reuealed in his time.

7 For the miſtery of iniquitie doth already wo[rke] only he who now letteth, vvill let, vntill hee be t[aken] out of the way.

8 And then ſhall the wicked man be reuealed, w[hom] the Lord ſhall conſume with the Spirit of his mou[th] ſhall deſtroy with the brightneſſe of his comming.

9 Euen him whoſe comming is after the wor[king] of Satan, with all power, & ſignes, and lying wond[ers]

10 And with all deceiueablenes of vnrighteou[s] in them that periſh: becauſe they receiued not the l[ove] of the trueth, that they might bee ſaued.

11 And for this cauſe God ſhall ſend them ſtr[ong] deluſion, that they ſhould beleeue a lye.

12 T[hat]

12 That they all might bee damned who beleeued
the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnesse.
13 But wee are bound to giue thanks alway to God
you, brethren, beloued of the Lord, because God hath
the beginning chosen you to Saluation, through
nification of the Spirit, and beliefe of the trueth.
14 Whereunto hee called you by our Gospel, to the
ining of the glorie of the Lord Iesus Christ.
15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and holde the
itions which yee haue beene taught, whether by
, or our Epistle.
16 Now our Lord Iesus Christ himselfe, & God euen
father, which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs
lasting consolation, and good hope through grace,
17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery
word and worke.

## CHAP. III.

Hee craueth their prayers. 3. testifieth his confi-
ence of them. 5. prayeth for them. 6. and giueth
hem diuerse precepts.

Finally, my brethren, pray for vs, that the word of
the Lord may haue free course, and bee glorified,
as it is for you:
2 And that yee may be deliuered from vnreasonable
wicked men: for all men haue not Faith,
3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall establish you,
keepe you from euill.
4 And wee haue confidence in the Lord, touching
you, that yee both doe, and will doe, the thinges which
I command you.
5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the loue of
God, and into the patient waiting for Christ.

6 Now wee command you, brethren, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that yee withdraw your selues from euery brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which hee receiued of vs.

7 For your selues know how yee ought to follow vs: for wee behaued not our selues disorderlie among you,

8 Neither did wee eate any mans bread for nought, but wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, that wee might not bee chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because wee haue not power, but to make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when wee were with you, this we commanded you, That if any would not worke, neither should hee eate.

11 For wee heare that there are some which walke among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busie bodies.

12 Now them that are such, wee command, and exhort you, by our Lord Iesus Christ, that with quietnesse they worke, and eate their owne bread.

13 But yee brethren bee not wearie in well doing.

14 And if any obey not our word, by this Epistle note that man, and haue no companie with him, that hee may bee ashamed,

15 Yet count him not an enemie, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himselfe, giue you peace alwayes, by all meanes. The Lord bee with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine owne hand, which is the token in euerie Epistle, so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE, To Timothie.

## CHAP. I.

Pauls charge to Timothie. 5. The end of the Law. 12. Of Pauls calling. 20. Of Hymeneus & Alexander.

1 Paul an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandement of God our Saniour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope:

2 Unto Timothie mine owne sonne in the faith: Grace, mercie, and peace, from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach none other doctrine,

4 Neither giue heede to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather than edifying, which is in Faith: so doe.

5 Now the end of the commandement is Charitie, out of a pure heart, and of a good Conscience, and of faith vnfained.

6 From which some hauing swerued, haue turned aside vnto vaine jangling.

7 Desiring to bee teachers of the Law, vnderstanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirme.

8 But wee know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawles, & disobedient, for the vngodly, and for sinners, for vnholy and prophane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers.

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselues with mankinde, for men-stealers, for lyers, for perjured persons, and if there bee any other thing that is contrarie to sound doctrine.

11 According to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thanke Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled mee: for that hee counted mee faithfull, putting mee into the Ministerie.

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and injurious. But I obtained mercie, because I did it ignorantlie, in vnbeliefe.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith and loue which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthie of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to saue sinners of whom I am chiefe.

16 Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercie, that in mee first Jesus Christ might shew forth a long suffering, for a paterne to them which should hereafter beleiue on him to life euerlasting.

17 Now vnto the King eternall, immortall, invisible, the onelie wise God, bee honour and glorie for euer and euer. Amen.

18 This charge I committed vnto thee, son Timothie, according to the prophesies which went before of thee, that thou by them mightest warre a good warfare

19 Holding Faith and a good conscience, which some hauing put away, concerning Faith haue made shipwracke.

20 Of whom Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they may learne not to blaspheme.

CHAP

## CHAP. II.

1 It is meete to pray and giue thankes for all men. 9. Womans attrire. 12. They are not permitted to teach.

1 Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giuing of thankes bee made for all men.

2 For Kings, and for all that are in authoritie, that wee may leade a quiet and peaceable life, in all godlinesse and honestie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour.

4 Who will haue all men to bee saued, and to come vnto the knowledge of the trueth.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and men, the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all, to bee testified, in due time.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a Preacher, and an Apostle, (I speake the trueth in Christ, I lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in Faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that men pray euery where, lifting vp holie hands without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorne themselues in modest apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobrietie, not with broided haire, or gold, or pearles, or rich araye.

10 But (which becommeth women professing godlinesse) with good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection.

12 But I suffer not a woman, to teach, nor to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to bee in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eue:

14 And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman
bæing deceiued, was in the transgression:
15 Notwithstanding shæ shall bæ saued in child
bearing, if they continue in Faith and Charitie, and
holinesse with sobrietie.

## CHAP. III.

1. Of Bishops and Deacons, and their wiues. 15. Of
the Church, and the trueth therein taught and
professed.

THis is a true saying: If a man desire the office of a
Bishop, hæ desireth a good worke.
2 A Bishop then must bæ blamelesse, the husband
of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behauiour, giuen
to hospitalitie, apt to teach;
3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not grædie of filthie
lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not couetous.
4 One that ruleth well his owne house, hauing his
children in subiection with all grauitie,
5 (For if a man knowe not howe to rule his owne
house, how shall hee take care of the Church of God?)
6 Not a nouice, lest beeing lifted vp with pride, he
fall into the condemnation of the deuill.
7 Moreouer hæ must haue a good report of them
which are without, lest hæ fall into reproach, and the
snare of the deuill.
8 Likewise must the Deacons bæ graue, not dou-
ble tongued, not giuen to much wine, not grædie of
filthie lucre,
9 Holding the mysterie of the Faith in a pure Con-
science.
10 And let these also first bee proued; then let them
vse the office of a Deacon, bæing found blamelesse.

11 Euen

11 Euen so must their wiues bee graue, not slan-
ers, sober, faithfull in all things.
12 Let the Deacons bee the husbandes of one wife,
ing their children, and their owne houses well.
13 For they that haue vsed the office of a Deacon
ll, purchase to themselues a good decree, and great
oldnesse in the Faith, which is in Christ Iesus.
14 These things write I vnto thee, hoping to come
to thee shortlie.
15 But if I tarrie long, that thou mayst know how
u oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God,
ich is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and
und of the trueth.
16 And without contrauersie, great is the mysterie
godlinesse, God was manifest in the flesh, iustified
the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gen-
es, beleued on in the world, receiued vp into glorie.

## CHAP. IIII.

That in the lotter times there shall bee a departure from the faith. 6. Paul giueth diuerse preceptes to Timothie.

NOw the Spirit speaketh expressie, that in the lat-
ter times some shall depart from the Faith, gi-
ng heede to seducing spirits and doctrines of deuils.
2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, hauing their con-
ence seared with an hote yron.
3 Forbidding to marrie, and commanding to ab-
ine from meates, which God hath created to bee re-
ued with thankesgiuing of them which beleue, and
ow the trueth.
4 For euerie creature of God is good, and nothing

to bee refused, if it bee receiued with thankesgiuing.
5 For it is sanctified by the word of God and pray
6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of th
things, thou shalt bee a good Minister of Iesus Chr
nourished vp in the words of Faith, and good doctr
whereunto thou hast attained.
7 But refuse prophane and olde wiues fables, and
ercise thy selfe rather vnto godlinesse.
8 For bodilie exercise profiteth little, but godli
is profitable vnto all thinges, hauing promise of
life that now is, and of that which is to come.
9 This is a faithfull saying, and worthie of all
ceptation:
10 For therefore wee both labour and suffer r
proach, because wee trust in the liuing God, who
the Sauiour of all men, specially of those that belie
11 These things command and teach.
12 Let no man despise thy youth, but bee thou
example of the belieuers, in word, in conuersation,
Charitie, in Spirit, in Faith, in puritie.
13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to e
hortation, to doctrine.
14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which w
giuen to thee by prophesie, with the laying on of
hands of the presbyterie.
15 Meditate vpon these things, giue thy selfe wh
lie to them, that thy profiting may appeare to all.
16 Take heed vnto thy selfe, and vnto the doctrin
continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both sa
thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

## CHAP. V.

1. Rules to be obserued in reproouing. 3. Of widowes
17. Of Elders.

Rebuke not an Elder, but intreat him, as a Father, and the younger men as brethren.

The elder women, as mothers, the younger as sisters with all puritie.

Honour widowes that are widowes indeede.

But if any widowes haue children or Nephews let them learne first to shew pietie at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good & acceptable before God.

Now shee that is a widow indeede, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

But shee that liueth in pleasure, is dead while she liueth.

And these things giue in charge, that they may be blameleſſe.

But if any prouide not for his owne, and specially for those of his owne house, hee hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidell.

Let not a widow bee taken in the number vnder threescore yeares old, hauing been the wife of one man.

Well reported of for good workes, if shee haue brought vp children, if shee haue lodged strangers, if she haue washed the Saintes feete, if shee haue relieued the afflicted, if shee haue diligently followed euery good worke.

But the younger widowes refuse for when they haue begun to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marie.

Hauing damnation, because they haue cast off their first Faith.

And withall they learned to bee idle, wandring about from house to house: and not onelie idle, but tattlers also, and busie bodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women ma
beare children, guide the house, giue none occasi
the aduersarie to speake reproachfully.

15 For some are already turned aside after Sa

16 If any man or womã ẏ believeth, haue wido
let them relieue them, & let not the Church be char
that it may relieue them that are widowes indeed.

17 Let the Elders that rule well, bee counted w
thie of double honour, especiallie they who labour in
word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muz
the ore that treadeth out the corne: and, The labou
is worthie of his reward.

19 Against an Elder receiue not an accusation,
before two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne, rebuke before all, that oth
also may feare.

21 I charge thée before God, and the Lord Je
Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue th
thinges without preferring one before another, do
nothing by partialitie.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither bee p
taker of other mens sinnes. Kéepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little w
for thy stomackes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open beforehand, go
before to judgement: and some men they follow afte

25 Likewise also the good works of some are ma
fest beforehand, & they ẏ are otherwise, cannot be hid

## CHAP. VI.

1. Seruants duetie. 3. Auoide new-fangled teache
6. The gaine of godlinesse, and euill of couetousne

et as many ſeruants as are vnder the yoke, count
heir owne Maſters worthie of all honour, that the
ne of God, and his doctrine bee not blaſphemed.
2 And they that haue believing Maſters, let them
eſpiſe them, becauſe they are brethren: but rather
them ſeruice, becauſe they are faithfull and be-
d partakers of the benefite: Theſe things teach
erhort.
3 If any man teach otherwiſe, & conſent not to whole-
e words, euen the words of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt,
to the doctrine which is according to godlineſſe.
4 Hee is proud, knowing nothing but doting about
ſtions, and ſtrifes of words, whereof commeth en-
, ſtrife, railings, euill ſurmiſings.
5 Peruerſe diſputinges of men of corrupt mindes,
deſtitute of the trueth, ſuppoſing that gaine is
dlineſſe: From ſuch with-draw thy ſelfe.
6 But godlineſſe with contentment is great gaine.
7 For wee brought nothing into this worlde, and it
ertaine, wee can carrie nothing out.
8 And hauing foode and rayment, let vs bee there-
h content.
9 But they that will bee rich, fall into temptation
a ſnare, and into many fooliſh and hurtfull luſtes,
ich drowne men in deſtruction and perdition.
10 For the loue of money is the roote of all euill,
ich while ſome coueted after, they haue erred from
faith, & pierced them thorow with many ſorrowes.
11 But thou, O man of God, flee theſe things, and
ow after righteouſneſſe, godlineſſe, faith, loue, pa-
ce, meekneſſe.
12 Fight the good fight of Faith: lay hold on eter-
l life, whereunto thou art called, and haſt pro-

feſſed

fessed a good profession before manie witnesses.

13 I giue thée charge in the sight of God, who
keneth all thinges: and before Christ Iesus, wh
fore Pontious Pilate witnessed a good confession,

14 That thou kéepe this commandement wi
spot, vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our
Iesus Christ,

15 Which in his time hée shall shew, who i
blessed and onelie Potentate, the King of kinges,
Lord of lords:

16 Who onelie hath immortalitie, dwelling i
light, which no man can approach vnto, whom no
hath séene, nor can sée: to whom bee honour and p
euerlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world,
they bée not high minded, nor trust in vncert
riches, but in the liuing God, who giueth vs richl
things to enioy,

18 That they doe good, that they bee rich in
works, readie to distribute, willing to communi

19 Laying vp in store for themselues a good fo
dation against the time to come, that they may lay
on eternall life.

20 O Timothie, kéepe that which is committe
thy trust, auoiding prophane and vaine bablinges,
oppositions of science, falsely so called.

21 Which some professing, haue erred concern
the Faith. Grace bee with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from La
cea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia P
ciana.

# E SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL THE Apoſtle, To Timothie.

## CHAP. I.

uls loue to Timothie, and Timothies faith. 6. ul giueth him diuerſe exhortations. 15. Of Phy- llus and Hermogenes. 16. Of Oneſiphorus.

Aul an Apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, by the will of God, according to the promiſe of life, which is in Chriſt Jeſus:

2 To Timothie my dearelie beloued Sonne: Grace, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and Chriſt Jeſus

ord.

I thanke God, whom I ſerue from my fore-fa- with pure conſcience, that without ceaſing I haue mbrance of thee in my prayers, night and day.

Greatlie deſiring to ſee thee, being mindfull of eares, that I may bee filled with joy.

When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith is in thee, which dwelt firſt in thy grandmother and thy mother Eunice: and I am perſwaded in thee alſo.

Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou p by the gift of God which is in thee, by the put- on of mine hands:

for God hath not giuen vs the Spirit of feare, power, of loue, and of a ſound minde.

Bee not thou therefore aſhamed of the teſtimonie Lord, nor of mee his priſoner: but bee thou par- of the afflictions of the Goſpel, according to the r of God.

Who hath ſaued vs, and called vs with an holie calling,

calling, not according to our workes, but according
his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen
Christ Iesus, before the world began,

10 But now is made manifest by the appearing
our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished de
and hath brought life and immortalitie to light th
the Gospel.

11 Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher, and
Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these thing
neuertheless, I am not ashamed: for I know wh
I haue believed, and I am perswaded that hee is
to keepe that which I haue committed: vnto hi
gainst that day.

13 Hold fast the forme of sound wordes, which
hast heard of me, in Faith and loue, which is in C
Iesus.

14 That good thing which was committed
thee, keepe, by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are
Asia bee turned away from mee, of whom are Phy
lus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercie vnto the house of On
phorus: for hee oft refreshed mee, and was not asha
of my chaine.

17 But when hee was in Rome, hee sought me
verie diligentlie, and found mee.

18 The Lord graunt vnto him, that hee may fi
mercie of the Lorde in that day: And in howe m
things hee ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou kno
verie well.

CHA

## CHAP. II.

Timothie is exhorted to constancie and perseuerance, and to shew himselfe approued. 17. Of Hymenæus and Philetus. 24. How the Lords seruant ought to behaue himselfe.

1 Thou therefore my sonne, bee strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of mee among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall bee able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse, as a good souldiour of Iesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth, intangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life, that hee may please him who hath chosen him to bee a souldiour.

5 And if a man also striue for masteries, yet is hee not crowned except hee striue lawfullie.

6 The husbandman that laboureth, must bee first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ of the seede of Dauid is raised from the dead, according to my Gospel.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an euill doer, euen vnto bondes: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all thinges for the Electes sakes, that they may also obtaine the saluation which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glorie.

11 It is a faithfull saying: for if wee bee dead with him, wee shall also liue with him.

12 If wee suffer, wee shall also reigne with him: if we denie him, hee will also denie vs.

13 If wee beliene not, yet hee abideth faithfull, hee cannot denie himselfe.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, ging them before the Lord, that they striue not words to no profite, but to the subuerting of the rers.

15 Study to shew thy selfe approued vnto God worke-man that needeth not to bee ashamed, rig diuiding the word of trueth.

16 But shunne prophane and vaine bablinges, they will increase vnto more vngodlinesse.

17 And their words will eate as doeth a canker whom is Hymeneus and Philetus.

18 Who concerning the trueth, haue erred, say that the resurrection is past already; and ouerth the Faith of some.

19 Neuertheless the foundation of God stan sure, hauing the seale, the Lord knoweth them are his. And let euerie one that nameth the Nam Christ, depart from iniquitie.

20 But in a great house there are not onely ve of gold, and of siluer, but also of wood, and of earth some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himselfe from these, shall bee a vessell vnto honour, sanctified and met the Masters vse, and prepared vnto euery good wo

22 Flee also youthfull lustes: but follow righte nesse, Faith, and Charitie, peace with them that on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and vnlearned questions, auoid, wing that they doeth gender strifes.

24 And the seruant of the Lord, must not striue bee gentle vnto all men, apt to teach, patient:

25 In meeknesse instructing those that oppose th selues, if God peraduenture will giue them re tance to the acknowledging of the trueth.

26 And that they may recouer themselues out of
snare of the deuill, who are taken captiue by him
his will.

## CHAP. III.

Of the last dayes, 6. The enemies of the trueth are
described. 10. Pauls example propounded. 16. The
Scriptures commended.

1 This know also, that in the last dayes perilous
times shall come.

2 For men shall bee louers of their owne selues, co-
uous boasters, proude blasphemers, disobedient to
rents, vnthankefull, vngodlie.

3 Without naturall affection, truce breakers, false
clers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that
good.

4 Traitors, headie, high minded, louers of plea-
more than louers of God.

5 Hauing a forme of godlinesse, but denying the
er thereof: from such turns away.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses:
lead captiue sillie women laden with sinnes, led
y with diuerse lusts.

7 Euer learning, and neuer able to come to the
ledge of the trueth.

8 Now as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses,
e these also resist the trueth: men of corrupt minds,
bate concerning the Faith.

9 But they shall proceede no further: for their follie
be manifest vnto all men, as theirs also was.

10 But thou hast fullie knowne my doctrine, man-
life, purpose, Faith, long suffering, Charitie,
ence.

11 Persecutions afflictions, which came vn
at Antioch, at Iconium, at Listra, which perse
I indured: but out of them all the Lord deliuere
12 Yea and all that will liue godly in Chri
sus, shall suffer persecution.
13 But euill men and seducers shall wax
and worse, deceiuing and being deceiued.
14 But continue thou in the things which th
learned and hast beene assured of, knowing of w
thou hast learned them.
15 And that from a child thou hast knowne th
Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise vn
uation, through Faith which is in Christ Iesus.
16 All Scripture is giuen by inspiration of
and is profitable for doctrine, for reproofe, for co
on, for instruction, in righteousnesse.
17 That the man of God may be perfect, th
lie furnished vnto all good workes.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Pauls exhortation to Timothie. 6. The neare
of Paules death. 9. Paul willeth him to
to him.

I Charge thee, therefore before God, and th
Iesus Christ, who shall iudge the quicke a
dead at his appearing, and in his kingdome,
2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out
son, reproue, rebuke, exhort with all long suf
and doctrine.
3 For the time will come, when they will not
sound doctrine, but after their owne lusts shall
heape to themselues teachers, hauing itching ea
4 And they shall turne away their eares fr
fr

, and shall bee turned vnto fables.
But watch thou in all things, indure afflictions;
e worke of an Euangelist, make full proofe of thy
erie.
For I am now readie to bee offered; and the time
departure is at hand.
I haue fought a good fight, I haue finished my
e; I haue kept the Faith.
Hencefoorth there is laide vp for mee a crowne of
ousnesse, which the Lord, the righteous Iudge,
giue mee at that day; and to mee not onelie, but
them also that loue his appearing.
Doe thy diligence to come shortly vnto mee.
For Demas hath forsaken mee, hauing loued this
t world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica: Cres
to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.
Only Luke is with me. Take Marke & bring him
thee: for hee is profitable to mee for the Ministery.
And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.
The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus,
thou commest, bring with thee, but especiallie
uchments.
Alexander the Copper-smith did mee much euil;
d reward him according to his workes.
Of whom bee thou ware also, for hee hath great
h-stood our words.
At my first answere no man stood with mee, but
forsooke mee: I pray God that it may not bee
their charge.
Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, & streng
mee: that by mee the preaching might bee ful-
lie, and that all the Gentiles might heare: and
deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer mee from euery
worke, and will preserue mee vnto his heauenlie k
dome, to whom bee glorie for euer and euer. Amen.
19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the housh
Onesiphorus.
20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus
I left at Miletum sicke.
21 Doe thy diligence to come before winter.
bulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and C
dia, and all the brethren.
22 The Lord Iesus Christ bee with thy Spi
Grace bee with you. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle vnto Timotheus, o
the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephes
was written from Rome, when Paul
brought before Nero the second time.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTL
## To Titus.

### CHAP. I.

1. Why Titus was left in Creete. 6. How Mini
should bee qualified. 11. Of euill Teachers.

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of I
Christ, according to the faith of Gods C
and the acknowledging of the trueth whi
after godlinesse.
2 In hope of eternall life which God that ca
lie, promised before the world began.
3 But hath in due times manifested his
through preaching, which is committed vnto me
cording to the commandement of God our Saviou
4 To Titus mine owne sonne after the com

th, Grace, mercie, and peace from God the Father,
the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour.
For this cause left I thee in Crete that thou shoul-
set in order the things that are wanting, and or-
ined Elders in euery citie, as I had appointed thee.
If any be blameles, the husband of one wife, hauing
thfull children, not accused of riote, or vnrulie.
For a Bishop must bee blameles, as the steward of
not selfe willed, not soone angrie, not giuen to
e, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre:
But a louer of hospitalitie, a louer of good men,
r, iust, holie, temperate.
Holding fast the faithfull word as hee hath bene
ght, that hee may bee able by sound doctrine, both to
t and to conuince the gaine-sayers,
For there are many vnruly, and vaine talkers,
deceiuers, they speciallie of the circumcision:
Whose mouthes must bee stopped, who subuert
lehouses, teaching things which they ought not,
filthie lucres sake
One of themselues, euen a Prophet of their own,
The Cretians alway are lyers, euill beastes,
bellies.
This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them
plie, that they may bee sound in the Faith.
Not giuing hæde to Iewish fables and com-
dements of men, that turne from the trueth:
Vnto the pure, all things are pure, but vnto
that are defiled, and vnbelieuing, is nothing
: but euen their minde, and conscience is defiled.
They professe that they know God; but in works
denie him, beeing abominable, and disobedient,
vnto euerie good worke reprobate.

## CHAP. II.

1. Paul directeth Titus both for his doctrine
life. 9. The duetie of seruants, and generall
all Christians.

BVt speake thou the thinges which become
doctrine:

2 That the aged men bee sober, graue, temper
sound in Faith, in Charitie, in patience.

3 The aged women likewise, that they bee in
hauiour as becommeth holinesse, not false accuser
giuen to much wine, teachers of good things.

4 That they may teach the young women to be
ber, to loue their husbands, to loue their children.

5 To bee discrete, chast, keepers at home,
obedient to their owne husbands, that the word of
bee not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to bee sober min

7 In all thinges shewing thy selfe a paterne of
workes: in doctrine shewing vncorruptnesse, gra
sinceritie.

8 Sound speach that cannot bee condemned
that is of the contrarie part, may bee ashamed, ha
none euill thing to say of you.

9 Exhort seruants to bee obedient vnto their
Masters, and to please them well in all thinges,
answering againe:

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good
that they may adorne the doctrine of God our
our in all things.

11 For the grace of God that bringeth Salva
hath appeared to all men.

12 Teaching vs, that denying vngodlines
worldly lusts, we should line soberlie, righteou
and godlie in this present world,

CHAP. III.

Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious
pearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus
rist.

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that hee might re-
me vs from all iniquitie, and purifie vnto himselfe
peculiar people zealous of good workes.

15 These thinges, speake and exhort, and rebuke
with all authoritie. Let no man despise thee.

---

CHAP. III.

Titus is further directed what to teach, 12. and
what not. 10. To reject obstinate heretickes. 12.
And appointed by Paul to come vnto him.

Put them in minde to bee subject to principalities
and powers, to obey Magistrates, to bee readie to
every good worke.

To speake euill of no man, to bee no brawlers,
but gentle, shewing all meeknesse vnto all men.

For wee our selues also were sometimes foolish,
disobedient, deceiued, seruing diuerse lustes, and plea-
sures, liuing in malice and enuie, hatefull and hating
one another.

But after that the kindnesse and loue of God our
Saviour toward man appeared.

Not by workes of righteousnesse which wee haue
done, but according to his mercie hee saued vs, by the
washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holie
Ghost.

Which hee shed on vs abundantlie, through Je-
sus Christ our Saviour.

That being justified by his grace, wee should bee
made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things, I
that thou affirme constantly ỳ these which haue
ued in God, might be carfull, to maintaine good wo
these things are good and profitable vnto men.

9 But auoide foolish questions and genealogies,
contentions, and strivings about the law, for they
vnprofitable and vaine.

10 A man that is an heriticke, after the firs
second admonition, reject:

11 Knowing that hee that is such, is subuerted
sinneth, beeing condemned of himselfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee or Ty
cus bee diligent to come vnto mee to Nicopolis:
haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zena the Lawyer, and Apollos on
journey diligently, ỳ nothing be wanting vnto th

14 And let ours also learne to maintaine good wo
for necessarie vses, that they bee not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with mee salute thee. Greete them
loue vs in the Faith. Grace bee with you all. Am

¶ It was written to Titus, ordained the
Bishop of the Church of the Cretians
Nicopolis of Macedonia.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL
## the Apostle, To Philemon.

4. Paules joye for Philemons Faith, and loue, 9. desireth him to forgiue Onesimus, and to re him againe.

PAul a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and Timothie brother, vnto Philemon our dearlie beloued, fellow-labourer.

And to our brother Apphia, and Archippus our fel-
soulviour, and to the Church in thine house.
3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father,
the Lord Jesus Christ,
4 I thanke my God, making mention of thee al-
yes in my prayers.
5 Hearing of thy loue and Faith, which thou hast
ard the Lord Jesus, and toward all Saints:
6 That the communication of thy Faith may be-
e effectuall by the acknowledging of euerie good
ng, which is in you in Christ Jesus.
7 For wee haue great joy and consolation in thy
, because the bowels of the Sainctes are refreshed
hee, brother.
8 Wherefore, though I might bee much bolde in
st to enjoyne thee that which is conuenient.
9 Yet for loues sake, I rather beseech thee, being
h a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner
Jesus Christ.
10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whom I
begotten in my bondes,
11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable,
now profitable to thee and to mee.
12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therefore re-
him, that is mine owne bowels.
13 Whom I would haue retained with mee, that in
stead hee might haue ministred vnto mee in the
nds of the Gospel.
14 But without thy minde would I doe nothing,
thy benefite should not be as it were of necessitie,
willingly.
15 For perhaps hee therefore departed for a season,
thou shouldest receiue him for euer:

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, a
brother beloued, speciallie to mée, but how much m
vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?
17 If thou count mee therefore a partner, rece
him as my selfe.
18 If hée hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ough
put that on mine account.
19 I Paul haue written it with mine owne ha
I will repay it: albeit I doe not say to thee how th
owest vnto mee, euen thine owne selfe besides.
20 Yea, brother, let mee haue joy of thee in the L
refresh my bowels in the Lord.
21 Hauing cõfidence in thine obedience, I wrote v
thee, knowing that thou wilt also doe more than I s
22 But withall, prepare me also a lodging: for I tr
that through your prayers I shall bee giuen vnto y
23 There salute thée Epaphras, my fellow-prison
in Christ Jesus:
24 Marchus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my f
low-labourers.
25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ bee wi
your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesim
a seruant.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE APOSTLE
## To the Hebrewes.

### CHAP. I.

1. Christ in the last times comming to vs from the Fa
ther. 4. is preferred aboue the Angels.

GOD, who at sundrie times, and in diuerse ma
ners, spake in time past vnto the Fathers, by th
Prophets.

hath in these last dayes spoken vnto vs by his
ne, whom hée hath appointed Heire of all thinges,
hom also hée made the world.

Who béeing the brightnesse of his glorie, and the
esse Image of his person, and vpholding all things
e word of his power, when hée had by himselfe
ged our sinnes, sate downe on the right hand of the
estie one high,

Beeing made so much better than the Angels, as
hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent
me than they.

For, vnto which of the Angels saide hee at any
, Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten
? And againe, I will bée to him a Father, and hée
bée to mée a Sonne.

And againe, when hée bringeth in the first begot-
into the world, hée saith, And let all the Angels of
worship him.

And of the Angels hée saith, Who maketh his An-
Spirites, and his Ministers a flame of fire.

But vnto the Sonne hee saith, Thy Throne, O
, is for euer and euer, a Scepter of righteousnesse
Scepter of thy Kingdome.

Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniqui-
therefore God euen thy God hath anionted thee
the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

And, Thou Lord, in the beginning hast laide
foundation of the earth: and the heauens are the
kes of thine hands.

They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they
shall waxe olde as doth a garment,

And as a vesture shalt thou folde them vp, and
shall bee changed, but thou art the same, and thy
es shall not faile.

13 But to which of the Angels said hee at any t
Sit on my right hand, vntill I make thine ene
thy foote-stoole.

14 Are they not all ministring spirites, sent f
to minister for them who shall be heires of saluatio

## CHAP. II.

1. We must be obedient to Christ, 5. because he t
our nature, 14. as it was necessarie hee should,

THerefore wee ought to giue the more earnest h
to the thinges which wee haue heard, lest at
time wee should let them slip.

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was ste
and euery transgression and disobedience receiue
just recompense of reward:

3 How shall wee escape, if wee neglect so great s
natiõ, which at the first began to be spokẽ by the L
and was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard hi

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with sig
and wonders, and with diuerse miracles, and gift
the holie Ghost, according to his owne will?

5 For vnto the Angels hath hee not put in subje
on the world to come whereof wee speake.

6 But one in a certaine place testified, saying, Wh
is man, that thou art mindfull of him: or the Son
of man, that thou visitest him?

7 Thou madest him a little lower than the Ange
thou crownest him with glorie and honour, and di
set him ouer the workes of thine hands.

8 Thou hast put allthinges in subjection vnder h
feete. For in that hee put all thinges in subjection v
der him, hee left nothing that is not put vnder him.
But now wee see not yet all things put vnder him.

But wee ſee Jeſus, who was made a little lower
the Angels, for the ſuffering of death, crowned
glorie and honour, that hee by the grace of God
ld taſte death for euery man.
o For it became him, for whom are all thinges,
by whom are all things, in bringing many ſonnes
glorie, to make the Captaine of their Saluation
ect through ſufferings.
1 For both hee that ſanctifieth, and they who are
ctified, are all of one: for which cauſe hee is not a-
med to call them brethren.
2 Saying I wil declare thy Name vnto my breth: ē,
the midſt of the Church will I ſing praiſe vnto thee.
3 And againe, I will put truſt in him: and againe,
old, I, and the children which God hath giuen me.
4 Forasmuch then, as the children are partakers
eſh and blood, hee alſo himſelfe likewiſe, tooke part
e ſame, that through death hee might deſtroy him
had the power of death. that is, the deuill.
5 And deliuer them, who through feare of death,
e all their life time ſubject to bondage.
6 For verilie, hee tooke not on him the nature of
gels: but hee tooke on him the ſeede of Abraham.
7 Wherefore in all thinges it behoued him to bee
e like vnto his brethren, that hee might bee a mer-
ll and faithfull high Prieſt, in things pertaining to
, to make reconciliation for the ſins of the people.
8 For in that hee himſelfe hath ſuffered, being
pted, hee is able to ſuccour them that are tempted.



Chriſt is more worthie than Moſes. 7. Therefore
we are the more bound to beleeue in him.

Wherefore

WHereforе holy brethren, partakers of the
uenly calling, consider the Apostle and
Priest of our profession, Christ Iesus.

2 Who was faithfull to him that appointed him,
also Moses was faithfull in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthie of more gl
than Moses, in as much as hee who hath builded
house, hath more honour than the house.

4 For euery house is builded by some man, but
that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verilie was faithfull in all his ho
as a seruant, for a testimonie of those thinges wh
were to bee spoken after.

6 But Christ as a Sonne ouer his owne house, wh
house are wee, if wee hold fast the confidence, and
reioycing of the hope firme vnto the end.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, To day if
will heare his voyce.

8 Harden not your hearts as in the prouocation,
the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 When your Fathers tempted mee, proued m
and saw my workes fourtie yeeres.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with that gener
on, and said, They doe alway erre in their hearts, a
they haue not knowne my wayes.

11 So I sware in my wrath, They shall not ent
into my rest.

12 Take heede, brethren, lest there bee in any
you an euill heart of vnbeliefe, in departing from
liuing God.

13 But exhort one another daylie, while it is c
led, To day, lest any of you bee hardened through
deceitfulnesse of sinne.

For wee are made partakers of Christ, if wee
the beginning of our confidence steadfast vnto the

Whilest it is said, To day if yee will heare his
re, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.
For some when they had heard, did prouoke
eit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.
But with whom was hee grieued fourty yeeres?
e not with them that had sinned, whose carcases
n the wildernesse?
And to whom sware hee that they should not en-
to his rest, but to them that beleeued not?
So wee see that they could not enter in, because
beliefe.

## CHAP. IIII.

e Christians rest is attained by Faith. 12. The
wer of Gods word. 14. By our high Priest Iesus,
. Wee may goe boldly to the throne of grace.

t vs therefore feare lest a promise being left vs,
entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to
short of it.
For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as well as
them: but the word preached did not profite them,
ing mixed with Faith in them that heard it.
For wee which haue beleeued doe enter into rest,
said, As I haue sworne in my wrath, if they shall
into my rest, although the workes were finished
the foundation of the world.
For hee spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day
s wise, And God did rest the seuenth day from
workes.
And in this place againe, If they shall enter into

6 Séing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entred not in because of vnbeliefe:

7 Againe, hée limiteth a certaine day, saying in Dauid, To day, after so long a time: as it is said, To day if yée will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts.

8 For if Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he not afterward haue spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

10 For hée that is entred into his rest, hée also hath ceased from his owne workes, as God did from his.

11 Let vs labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of vnbelief.

12 For the word of God is quicke and powerfull, and sharper than any two edged sword, piercing euen to the diuiding asunder of soule and spirite, and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked, and open vnto the eyes of him with whom wée haue to do.

14 Séing then that wée haue a great high Priest that is passed into the heauens, Iesus the Son of God, let vs hold fast our profession.

15 For wée haue not an high Priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as wee are, yet without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore come boldly vnto the throne of grace, that wee may obtaine mercie, and finde grace to helpe in time of néede.

CHA

The authoritie and honour of Christs Priest-hood, 11. Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reprooued.

For euerie high Priest taken from among men, is ordained for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both giftes and sacrifices for sinnes:

Who can haue compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that hee himselfe also is compassed with infirmitie.

And by reason hereof hee ought as for the people, so for himselfe, to offer for sinnes.

And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but he that was called of God, as was Aaron.

So also, Christ glorified not himselfe, to be made an high Priest: but hee that saide vnto him, Thou art my Sonne, to day I haue begotten thee.

As hee saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

Who in the dayes of his flesh, when hee had offered vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares, vnto him that was able to saue him from death, and was heard, in that hee feared.

Though hee were a Sonne, yet learned hee obedience, by the things which hee suffered:

And being made perfect, hee became the author of eternall Saluation vnto all them, that obey him.

Called of God an high Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Of whom wee haue many things to say, and hard to be vttered, seeing yee are dull of hearing.

For when for the time yee ought to bee teachers, yee haue need that one teach you againe which bee the first principles of the Oracles of God, and are become

such as haue neede of milke and not of strong meate.
13 For euerie one that vseth milke, is vnskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: for hee is a babe.
14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are of full age, euen those who by reason of vse haue their sences exercised to discerne both good and euill.

## CHAP. VI.

1. Hee exhorteth not to fall backe from the faith. But to bee steadfast: 12. To waite vpon God, who is sure of his promise.

THerefore, leauing the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let vs goe on vnto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of Faith towards God,
2 Of the doctrine of Baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of the resurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.
3 And this will wee doe, if God permit.
4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightned, and haue tasted of the heauenlie giftes, and were made partakers of the holie Ghost.
5 And haue tasted of the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come.
6 If they shall fall away, to renew them againe vnto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselues the Sonne of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.
7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine y^t cometh oft vpon it, & bringeth forth herbes meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiueth blessing from God.
8 But that which beareth thornes and briers, is reiected, and is nigh vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

But beloued, wee are perſwaded better thinges of
and things that accompanie ſaluation, though we
ſpeake.

For God is not vnrighteous, to forget your
kes and labour of loue, which yee haue ſhewed to-
ards his Name, in that yee haue miniſtred to the
ints, and doe miniſter.

And wee deſire that euery one of you doe ſhew the
ame diligence, to the full aſſurance of hope vnto the

That ye bee not ſloathfull, but followers of them,
hrough Faith and patience, inherit the promiſes

For when God made promiſe to Abraham, be-
ecause he could ſweare by no greater, hee ſweare by
himſelfe.

Saying, ſurelie, bleſſing I will bleſſe thee, and
multiplying I will multiplie thee.

And ſo after hee had patientlie indured, hee ob-
ained the promiſe.

For men verilie ſweare by the greater, and an
oth for confirmation, is to them an end of all ſtrife.

Wherein God willing more abundantlie to
ſhew vnto the heires of promiſe the immutabilitie of
his counſell, confirmed it by an oath:

That by two immutable thinges, in which it
was impoſſible for God to lye, wee might haue a ſtrong
conſolation, who haue fled for refuge to lay hold vpon
the hope ſet before vs.

Which hope wee haue as an anker of the ſoule,
both ſure and ſtedfaſt, and which entreth into that
within the vaile.

Whither the fore-runner is for vs entered, euen
Iesus made an high Prieſt for euer after the order of
Melchiſedec.

## CHAP. VII.

1. Christ is a Priest after the order of Melchisedec, farre aboue the *Priests* of Aarons order.

FOr this Melchisedec king of Salem, Priest of most high God, who met Abraham returning fr the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him.

2 To whom also Abraham gaue a tenth part of first, beeing by interpretation king of righteousne after that also king of Salem, which is, king of pe

3 Without Father, without mother, without cent, hauing neither beginning of dayes, nor end life: but made like vnto the Sonne of God, abide Priest continuallie.

4 Now consider howe great this man was, t whom euen the Patriarch Abraham gaue the tent the spoiles.

5 And verilie they that are of the sonnes of L who receiued the office of the Priest-hood, haue a c maundement to take tithes of the people according the Law that is of their brethren, though they c out of the loynes of Abraham.

6 But hee whose discent is not counted from th receiued tithes from Abraham, and blessed him had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is bl of the better.

8 And heere men ẏ die receiue tithes: but there receiueth them, of whom it is witnessed, ẏ hee liue

9 And as I may so say, Leui also who receiu tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For hee was yet in the loynes of his Father, Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leuit Priesthood, (for vnder it the people receiued the L what further neede was there, that another P

uld rise, after the order of Melchisedec, and not bee
ed after the order of Aaron.
12 For the Priest-hoode beeing changed, there is
de of necessitie a change also of the Law.
13 For hee of whom these things are spoken, pertai-
h to another Tribe, of which no man gaue atten-
ce at the Altar.
14 For it is euident that our Lord sprang out of Iu-
of which Tribe Moses spake nothing concerning
est-hood.
15 And it is yet far more euident: for y after the si-
itude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest.
16 Who is made not after the Law of carnall a com-
dement, but after the power of an endlesse life.
17 For hee testifieth, thou art a Priest for euer, after
rder of Melchisedec.
18 For there is verilie a disanulling of the comman-
ent going before, for the weakenesse and vnprofi-
enesse thereof.
19 For the Lord made nothing perfect, but the brin-
g in of a better hope did; by the which wee draw
h vnto God.
20 And in as much as not without an oath hee was
e Priest.
21 (For these Priests were made without an oath:
this with an oath, by him that said vnto him, The
sware, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest
uer after the order of Melchisedec:
22 By so much was Iesus made suretie of a better
tament.
23 And they truelie were many Priestes, because
were not suffered to continue, by reason of death.
24 But this man, because hee continueth euer, hath
nchangeable Priest-hood.

25 Wherefore hee is able also to saue them to the vttermost, that come vnto God by him, seeing hee euer liueth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high Priest became vs, who is holie, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heauens.

27 Who needeth not daylie as those high Priests to offer vp sacrifice first for his owne sinnes, and then for the people: for this hee did once, when hee offered vp himselfe.

28 For the law maketh men hie Priests, which haue infirmity, but the word of the oath which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrate for euermore.

## CHAP. VIII.

1. By Christes eternall Priest-hoode, the Leuitical Priest-hood is abolished. 7. And the temporall Couenant by the eternall Couenant.

NOw of the things which we haue spokē, this is the sum: we haue such an high Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in the heauens,

2 A Minister of the Sanctuarie, and of the true Tabernacle, which the Lord pitched and not man.

3 For euery high Priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessitie that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

4 For if hee were on earth, hee should not be a Priest, seeing that there are Priestes that offer gifts according to the Law:

5 Who serue vnto the example and shaddow of heauenlie things, as Moses was admonished of God, when hee was about to made the Tabernacle. For see (saith hee) that thou make all things according to the patterne

wed to thee in the Mount.

But now hath hee obtained a more excellent mi-
erie, by how much also hee is the Mediatour of a
ter Couenant, which was established vpon better
mises.

For if that first Couenant had beene faultlesse,
should no place haue beene sought for the second.

For finding fault with them, hee saith, Behold, the
es come (saith the Lord) whē I will make a new co-
ant with the house of Israel, & the house of Iudah:

Not according to the Couenant that I made with
r Fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the
d to lead them out of the Land of Egypt, because
y continued not in my Couenant and I regar-
them not, saith the Lord:

For this is the Couenant that I will make with
house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord, I
l put my Lawes into their minde, and write them
heir hearts: and I will bee to them a God, and they
l bee to mee a people.

And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour,
euerie man his brother, saying, Know the Lord:
all shall know mee, from the least to the greatest.

For I will bee mercifull to their vnrighteous-
e, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I re-
mber no more.

In that hee saith, A newe Couenant, hee hath
e the first olde. Nowe that which decayeth and
eth old, is readie to vanish away.

## CHAP. IX.

The rites and bloodie sacrifices of the Law. 11. far inferiour to the blood and sacrifice of Christ.

THen verily the first Couenant had also ordinan
of diuine Seruice, and a worldlie Sanctuarie.

2 For there was a Tabernacle made, the first whe
in was the Candlestick, and the Table, and the Shew
bread, which is called the Sanctuarie.

3 And after the second vaile, the Tabernacle, whi
is called the Holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden Censer, and the Arke of t
Couenant ouerlaide round about with golde, where
was the golden Pot that had Manna, and Aarons r
that budded, and the Tables of the Couenant.

5 And ouer it the Cherubins of glorie shadowing t
Mercie-seate: of which wee cannot now speake par
cularlie.

6 Now when these thinges were thus ordained, t
Priestes went alwayes into the first Tabernacle, a
complishing the seruice of God.

7 But into the second went the high Priest alo
nce euerie yeere, not without blood, which hee offer
for himselfe, and for the errours of the people.

8 The holie Ghost thus signifying, that the w
into the Holiest of all was not yet made manife
while as the first Tabernacle was yet standing.

9 Which was a figure for the time then present,
which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that co
not make him that did the seruice perfect, as perta
ning to the conscience.

10 Which stood onelie in meates and drinkes, a
diuerse washings and carnall ordinances imposed
them vntill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ beeing come an high Priest of go
things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tab
nacle not made with hands, that is to say, not of th
building.

12 N

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by
owne blood hæ entred in once into the holie place
ing obtained eternall redemption for vs.
13 For if the blood of Buls and of Goates, and the
es of an Heifer sprinkling the vncleane, sanctifieth
he purifying of the flesh.
14 How much more shall the Blood of Christ, who
ough the eternall Spirit, offered himselfe without
t to God, purge your conscience from dead workes,
erue the liuing God.
15 And for this cause he is the Mediatour of the New
stament, that by meanes of death, for the redempti-
of the transgressions that were vnder the first Testa
nt, they which are called, might receiue the pro-
se of eternall inheritance.
16 For where a Testament is, there must also of
cessitie bee the death of the Testatour.
17 For a Testament is of force after men are dead:
rwise it is of no strength at all whilest the Testa-
liueth.
18 Whereupon, neither the first Testament was de-
ted without blood.
19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to all
people according to the Lawe, hee toke the blode
lues and of goates, with water & scarlet wool, and
pe, and sprinkled both the booke and all the people,
20 Saying, this is the blood of the Testament which
hath enjoyned vnto you.
21 Moreouer, hæ sprinkled with blood both the Ta-
nacle and all the vessels of the Ministerie.
22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with
d: and without shedding of blood is no remission.
23 It was therefore necessarie that the patternes of

things

things in the heauens should bee purified with thes
but the heauenly things themselues with better sacr
fices than these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the Holie plac
made with hands, which are the figures of the tru
but into heauen it selfe, now to appeare in the prese
of God for vs.

25 Nor yet that hee should offer himselfe often,
the high Priest entreth into the Holie place euery ye
with blood of others:

26 For then must hee often haue suffered since t
foundation of the world: but now once in the end of t
world hath hee appeared to put away sinne, by the
crifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men once to die, b
after this the Iudgement:

28 So Christ was once offered to beare the sin
of many, and vnto them that looke for him, shall hee
peare in the second time without sin, vnto saluatio

## CHAP. X.

1. The weakneſſe of the ſacrifice of the Law, 10. t
power of Chriſts ſacrifice. 19. An exhortation
faith and patience.

FOr the Lawe hauing a shadowe of good thinges
come, & not the verie Image of the thinges can
uer with those sacrifices which they offered yeere
yeere continually, make the commers thereunto per

2 For then would they not haue ceased to bee o
red, because that the worshippers once purged, sho
haue had no more conscience of sinnes.

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance
gaine made of sinnes euerie yeere.

4 F

4 For it is not possible that the blood of Bulles and Goates, should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when hee commeth into the world, hee ith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a die hast thou prepared:

6 In burnt offerings, and sacrifices for sinne thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then said I, Loe, I come, (In the volume of the ke, it is written of mee) to doe thy will, O GOD.

8 Above whē he said, Sacrifice & offering and burnt erings, & offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither dst pleasure therein, which are offered by the Law:

9 Then said hee, Loe, I come to doe thy will. (O od.) Hee taketh away the first, that hee may esta- sh the second.

10 By the which will wee are sanctified, through offering of the bodie of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And euerie Priest standeth daylie ministring offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can ver take away sinnes.

12 But this Man, after hee had offered on sacrifice sins for ever, sat downe on the right hand of God.

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies bee de his foote-stole.

14 For by one offering hee hath perfected for ever m that are sanctified.

15 Whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witnesse to for after that hee had said before.

16 This is the Couenant that I will make with m after those dayes, saith the Lord, I will put my wes into their hearts, and in their mindes will I te them:

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remem- no more.

18 Now

18 Now, where remission of these is, there is
more offering for sinne.

19 Hauing therefore, brethren, boldnesse to ent
into the Holiest, by the blood of Iesus,

20 By a new & liuing way which hee hath consec
ted for vs, through the vaile, that is to say, His flesh:

21 And hauing an high Priest ouer the house of G

22 Let vs draw neare with a true heart in full as
rance of Faith, hauing our hearts sprinkled from an
uill conscience, & our bodies washed with pure wate

23 Let vs hold fast the profession of our Faith wit
out wauering, (for hee is faithfull that promised)

24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vn
loue, and to good workes:

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selues tog
ther, as the manner of some is: but exhorting one an
ther, & so much the more, as ye see the day approachin

26 For if wee sinne wilfullie after that wee haue r
ceiued the knowledge of the trueth, there remaine
no more sacrifice for sinnes,

27 But a certaine fearefull looking for of iudg
ment, and fierie indignation, which shall deuoure t
aduersaries.

28 Hee that despised Moses Law, died without me
cie, vnder two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye tha
hee bee thought worthie, who hath troden vnder fo
the Sonne of God, and hath counted the blood of the C
uenant wherewith hee was sanctified, an vnholie thi
and hath done despite vnto the Spirit of grace?

30 For wee know him that hath said, Vengeanc
belongeth vnto mee, I will recompense, saith the Lo
and againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.

31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the handes of
eliuing God.
32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in
hich after yee were illuminated, yee endured a great
ght of afflictions:
33 Partlie whilest yee were made a gazing stocke
h by reproaches and afflictions, and partlie whilest
e became companions of them that were so vsed.
34 For yee had compassion of mee in my bondes, and
ke joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in
ur selues that yee haue in heauen a better and an en-
ring substance.
35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which
th a great recompense of reward.
36 For yee haue neede of patience, that after ye haue
ne the will of God, yee might receiue the promise.
37 For yet a little while, and hee that shall come,
ll come, and will not tarrie.
38 Now the just shall liue by Faith: but if any man
w backe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him,
39 But we are not of them who draw back vnto per-
ion: but of them ỹ beleeue, to the sauing of the soule.

## CHAP. XI.

What Faith is. 6. Without it wee cannot pleas
God. 7. The fruites thereof is the fathers of olde.

NOw, Faith is the substance of thinges hoped for,
the euidence of things not seene.
2 For by it the Elders obtained a good report.
3 Through Faith we vnderstand ỹ the worlds was
med by the word of God, so that thinges which are
e, were not made of things which doe appeare.
4 By Faith Abel offered vnto God a more excel-

lent

lent sacrifice than Kain, by the which hæ obtained wit-
nesse that hæ was righteous, God testifying of his
giftes: and by it hæ beeing dead, yet speaketh.

5 By Faith Enoch was translated, that hee should
not see death, and was not found, because GOD had
translated him: for before his translation, hæ had this
testimonie that hæ pleased God.

6 But without Faith it is impossible to please him: for
he that commeth to God, must believe that hee is, and
that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

7 By Faith Noah being warned of God of things not
seene as yet, moued with feare, prepared an Arke to
the saving of his house, by the which hee condemned
the world, and became heire of the righteousnesse which
is by Faith.

8 By Faith Abraham, when hee was called to go
out into a place which hee should after receive for an
inheritance, obeyed, and hæ went out, not knowing
whither hæ went.

9 By Faith hee sojourned in the land of promise as
in a strange countrey, dwelling in tabernacles with
Isaac & Jacob, the heires with him of the same promise:

10 For hæ looked for a citie which hath foundations,
whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through Faith also Sara her selfe receiued
strength to conceive seede, and was deliuered of a
childe when shæ was past age, because shæ had judged
him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there euen of one, and him
as good as dead, so many as the starres of the skie in
multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore in-
numerable.

13 These all died in Faith, not having receiued the
pro-

miſes, but hauing ſæne them afarre off, ꝛ were per-
oed of them and imbzaced them, and confeſſed that
y were ſtrangers and pilgrimes on the earth.
14 Foz they that ſay ſuch things, declare plainlie
t they ſæke a countrey.
15 And truely if they had bæne mindfull of that
ntrie, from whence they came out, they might haue
oppoztunitie to haue returned:
16 But now they deſire a better countrey, that is,
heauenlie: wherefoze, God is not aſhamed to be cal-
their God: foz hæ hath pzepared foz them a citie.
17 By Faith Abzaham when hæ was tryed, offered
Iſaac, and hæ that had receiued the pzomiſes, offe-
vp his onelie begotten ſonne.
18 Of whom it was ſaid, That in Iſaac ſhall thy
ebæ called:
19 Accounting that God was able to raiſe him vp,
from the dead: from whence alſo hæ receiued him
figure.
20 By Faith Iſaac bleſſed Jacob and Eſau, con-
ing things to come.
21 By Faith Jacob when hæ was a dying, bleſſed
the ſonnes of Joſeph, and woꝛſhipped, leaning vp-
e top of his ſtaffe
22 By Faith Joſeph when hæ died, made mention
e departing of the childzen of Iſrael: and gaue
mandement concerning his bones.
23 By Faith Moſes when hæ was bozne, was hid
moneths of his parents, becauſe they ſaw he was
r childe, and they not afraid of the kings com-
dement.
24 By Faith Moſes when hæ was come to yæres,
ed to bæ called the ſonne of Pharaohs daughter;

25 Chuſing

25 Chosing rather to suffer affliction with the peop
of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season
26 Estæming the reproach of Christ great rich
than the treasures in Egypt: for hæ had respect vn
the recompense of the reward.
27 By Faith hæ forsoke Egypt, not fearing t
wrath of the King for hæ endured, as seing him w
is inuisible.
28 Through Faith, hæ kept the Passeouer, and t
sprinkling of blood, lest hæ that destroyed the first bo
should touch them.
29 By Faith they passed through the red Sea, as
drie land: which the Egyptians assaying to doe, we
drowned.
30 By Faith the walles of Iericho fell downe, a
ter they were compassed about seuen dayes.
31 By Faith the harlot Rahab perished not wi
them that belieued not, when shæ had receiued t
spies with peace.
32 And what shall I more say? for the time wold fa
mæ to tell of Gedion, & of Barak, & of Sampson, and
Ieptathah, of Dauid also & Samuel, & of the Prophet
33 Who through Faith subdued kingdomes, wrog
righteousnesse, obtained promises, stopped the moue
of Lyons.
34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge
the sword: out of weaknesse were made strong, war
valiãt in fight, turned to flight the armies of the alie
35 Women receiued their dead raised to life again
and others were tortured, not accepting deliuerance
that they might obtaine a better resurrection.
36 And others had tryall of cruell mockinges a
scourgings: yea, moreouer of bonds and imprisonme
37 Th

37 They were stoned, they were sowne asunder, were tempted, were slaine with the sword, they wandred about in sheepe skins, and goat skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthie: they wandred in Deserts, and in mountaines, and in Dens and caues of the Earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, receiued not the promise.

40 God hauing prouided some better thing for vs, that they without vs, should not bee made perfect.

## CHAP. XII.

1 An exhortation to faith, patience, and godlinesse. 2. A commendation of the New Testament aboue the old.

WHerefore, seeing wee also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let vs laye aside euery weight, and the sinne which doeth so easily beset vs, and let vs runne with patience vnto the race that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the Authour and finisher of our faith, who for the ioye that was set before him endured the Crosse, despising the shame, and is set downe at the right hand of the Throne of God.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himselfe, lest yee bee wearie and faint in your mindes.

4 Yee haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striuing against sinne.

5 And yee haue forgotten the exhortation which speaketh vnto you as vnto children, My sonne, despise not thou the chastning of the Lord, nor faint when thou

art rebuked of him.

6 For whome the Lorde loueth, hæ chastneth, a scourgeth euerie sonne whom hæ receiueth.

7 If ye indure chastning, God dealeth wō you as w sons: for what son is he whom the father chastneth n

8 But if yæ bée without chastisment, whereof are partakers, then are yæ bastards and not sonne

9 Furthermoze, wée haue had Fathers of our fle which corrected vs, and wæ gaue them reuerence: sh wæ not much rather bæ in subjection vnto the Fat of Spirits, and liue?

10 For they verilie for a fewe dayes chastned vs ter their owne pleasure, but hæ for our profite, that might bée partakers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present sæmeth t joyous, but grieuous: neuertheless, afterward it y deth peaceable fruite of righteousnes vnto them w are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift vp the hands which hang do and the fæble knæs.

13 And make straight pathes for your fæte, that which is lame bæ turned out of the way, but l rather bee healed.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holinesse, w out the which no man shall sæ the Lord.

15 Loking diligentlie, lest any man faile of grace of God, lest any roote of bitternesse spring vp, trouble you, and thereby many bæ defiled:

16 Lest there be any fornicator, or profane pers Esau, who for a morsell of meate sold his birth-ri

17 For yæ knowe howe that afterward when would haue inherited the blessing, hæ was reje for hæ found no place of repentance, though hæ s

arefullie with teares.

18 For yee are not come vnto the Mount that might
touched, and that burned with fire, nor vnto a black-
le, and darknesse, and tempest,

19 And the sound of Trumpet, and the voyce of
yos, which voyce they that heard, entreated that the
rd should not bee spoken to them any more.

20 For they could not endure that which was com-
nded: And if so much as a beast touch the Moun-
ne, it shall bee stoned, or thrust thorow with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said,
ceedinglie feare and quake.

22 But yee are come vnto Mount Sion, and vnto
itie of the liuing God, the heauenlie Hierusalem,
to an innumerable companie of Angels:

23 To the generall assemblie, and Church of the
borne which are written in heauen, and to God
Iudge of all, and to the Spirites of Iust men made
ect:

24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the newe Coue-
t, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh bet-
hings than that of Abel.

25 See that yee refuse not him that speaketh: for if
escaped not who refused him that spake on earth,
h more shall not wee escape if we turne away from
that speaketh from heauen.

26 Whose voyce then shooke the earth, but now hee
promised, saying, Yet once more, I shake not the
onelie, but also heauen.

27 And this word, yet once more, signifieth the re-
ing of those things that are shaken, as of thinges
are made, that those things which cannot bee sha-
may remaine.

28 Wherefore wæ receiue a kingdome which cãnot bee moued, let vs haue grace whereby wæ may serue God acceptablie with reuerence and godlie feare.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

## CHAP. XIII.

1. Diuerse admonitions to charitie, and other godly vertues. 10. The conclusion of the Epistle.

LEt brotherlie loue continue.

2 Bæ not forgetfull to entertaine strangers: for thereby some haue entertained Angels vnawares.

3 Remember them that are in bondes, as bound with them, and them which suffer aduersitie, as bæing your selues also in the bodie.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, & the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers, and adulterers, God will iudge.

5 Let your conuersation bæ without couetousnesse, and bæ content with such things as yæ haue. For he hath said, I will neuer leaue thæ, nor forsake thæ.

6 So that wæ may boldly say, The Lord is mine helper, & I will not feare what man shall doe vnto mæ.

7 Remember them which haue the rule ouer you, who haue spoken vnto you the worde of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conuersation,

8 Iesus Christ the same yesterday and to day, and for euer.

9 Bæ not carried about with diuerse and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue bæene occupyed therein.

10 Wæ haue an Altar, whereof they haue no right to eate, which serue the Tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beastes, whose blood is

ought into the Sanctuarie by the high Priest for
ne, are burnt without the Campe.
12 Wherefore Iesus also, that hee might sanctifie the
ople, with his own blood, suffered without the gate.
13 Let vs goe forth therefore vnto him without the
ampe, bearing his reproach.
14 For here haue wee no continuing citie, but wee
ke one to come.
15 By him therefore, let vs offer the sacrifice of
aise to God continuallie, that is, the fruite of our
pes, giuing thankes to his Name.
16 But to doe good, and to communicate forget not,
with such sacrifices God is well pleased.
17 Obey them that haue the rule ouer you, and sub-
t your selues; for they watch for your soules, as they
t must giue account, that they may doe it with joye,
not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.
18 Pray for vs: for we trust wee haue a good con-
nce in all things, willing to liue honestlie.
19 But I beseech you the rather to doe this, that I
y bee restored to you the sooner.
20 Now the God of peace, that brought againe from
dead our Lord Iesus Christ y great Shepherd of the
epe, through the blood of the euerlasting Couenant.
21 Make you perfect in euerie good worke, to doe
will, working in you that which is well pleasing
is sight, through Iesus Christ, to whom bee glorie
euer and euer, Amen.
22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of ex-
tation, for I haue written a letter vnto you in few
ds.
23 Knowe yee that our brother Timothie is set at
rtie, with whom, if he come shortlie, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue rule ouer you, and all the Saincts. They of Italie salute you.

25 Grace bee with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes from Italie, by Timothie.

¶ The generall Epistle of IAMES.

## CHAP I.

1. Wee must rejoyce vnder the Crosse. 5. aske patience of God, 19. heare the word, and doe thereafter. 27. What pure religion is.

IAmes a Seruant of God, and of our Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue Tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joye when yee fall into diuerse temptations.

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your Faith worketh patience,

4 But let patiance haue her perfect worke, that yee may bee perfect, and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him aske of God that giueth to all men liberallie, and vpbraideth not: And it shall bee giuen him.

6 But let him aske in Faith, nothing wauering: for hee that wauereth is like a waue of the sea, driuen with the wind, and tossed.

7 For let not that man thinke that he shall receiue anie thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his waies.

9 Let the brethren of low degree, rejoyce in that hee is exalted:

10 But the rich, in that hée is made low: because as
e flowre of the grasse hee shall passe away:
11 For the Sunne is no sooner risen with a burning
at, but it withereth the grasse, and the flowre there-
falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth:
also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes.
12 Blessed is the man that indureth temptation: for
hen hée is tryed, hée shall receiue the crowne of life,
hich the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.
13 Let no man say when hée is tempted, I am temp-
of God: for God cannot bee tempted with euill, nei-
r tempteth hée any man,
14 But euerie man is tempted, when hée is drawn
ay of his owne lust, and entised.
15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth
th sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bringeth
th death.
16 Doe not erre my beloued brethren.
17 Euery good gift, and euerie perfect gift, is
m aboue, and commeth downe from the Father
ights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither sha-
w of turning.
18 Of his owne will begot hée vs, with the word
Trueth, that wée should bee a kinde of first fruites
is creatures.
19 Wherefore my beloued brethren let euerie man
swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath.
20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righte-
nesse of God,
21 Wherfore lay apart all filthines, and superflui-
of naughtinesse, and receiue with meeknesse the in-
fed word, which is able to saue your soules.
22 But bée yee doers of the word, and not hearers

onelie deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any man bee a hearer of the word, and no a doer, hee is like vnto a man beholding his natural face in a glasse:

24 For hee beholdeth himselfe, & goeth his way, an straightway forgetteth what manner of man hee wa

25 But who so looketh into the perfect law of libe tie, and continueth therein, hee beeing not a forgetfu hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shall b blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seeme to bee religious and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiueth his own heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion & vndefiled before God & the Fathe is this, to visite the fatherles & widowes in their affli ction, and to keepe himselfe vnspotted from the world.

## CHAP. II.

1. Christians must not regard the rich, & despiseth poore 14. Faith without workes. 17. is a dead faith

My brethren, haue not the Faith of our Lord Iesu Christ, the Lord of glorie, with respect of perso

2 For if there come vnto your assemblie, a ma with a gold ring, in goodlie apparell; and there com in also a poore man, in vile rayment:

3 And yee haue respect to him that weareth the ga cloathing, and say vnto him, Sit thou heere in a go place: and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit heere vnder my foote-stole:

4 Are yee not then partiall in your selues, and a become iudges of euill thoughtes?

5 Hearken, my beloued brethren: Hath not G chosen the poore of this world, rich in Faith, and heir

the kingdome, which hée hath promised to them that
e him?
6 But yee haue despised the poore, Doe not rich
n oppresse you, and draw you before the judgement
tes?
7 Doe not they blaspheme that worthie Name, by
which yee are called?
8 If yée fulfill the royall Lawe, according to the
ripture, Thou shalt loue thy Neighbour as thy selfe,
doe well.
9 But if yée haue respect to persons, yee commit
ne, and are conuinced of the Law, as transgressours.
10 For whosoeuer shall kéepe the whole Law, and
offend in an point, hée is guiltie of all.
11 For hée that saide, Doe not commit adulterie,
also, Doe not kill. Now if thou commit none a-
terie, yet if thou kill, thou art become a trangres-
of the Law.
12 So speake yee, and so doe, as they that shall bée
ged by the law of libertie.
13 For hée shall haue judgement without mercie,
hath shewed no mercie, and mercie reioyceth a-
ast judgement.
14 What doeth it profite, my brethren, though a
n say hée hath Faith, and haue not workes? can
th saue him?
15 If a brother or sister bée naked, and destitute of
ie food,
16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace,
ou warmed and filled: notwithstanding yee giue
not those things which are needfull to the bodie:
t doeth it profite?
17 Euen so Faith, if it hath not workes, is dead,
ng alone.

18 Yea,

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast Faith, and I haue workes: shew mee thy Faith without thy workes, and I will shew thee my Faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleuest that ther is one God, thou doest well: the deuils also beleue and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vaine man, that Faith without workes is dead.

21 Was not Abraham our Father iustified by workes when hee had offered Isaac his sonne vpon the Altar?

22 Seest thou how Faith wrought with his workes, and by workes was Faith made perfect?

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham beleued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnesse: & he was called the friend of God.

24 Yee see then, how that by workes a man is iustified, and not by Faith onelie.

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot iustified by workes, when shee had receiued the Messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the bodie without the spirit is dead, so Faith without workes is dead also.

## CHAP. III.

5. The tongue must bee bridled. 13. They that are truelie wise, bee mylde, and peaceable without enuying or strife.

My brethren, bee not many Masters, knowing that wee shall receiue the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things wee offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man and able also to bridle the whole bodie.

3 Behold, we put bits into the horses mouthes, that they may obey vs, and wee turne about their whole bodie.

4 Beholde also the ships, which though they bee so
eat, and are driuen of fierce winds, yet are they tur-
d about with a verie small helme, whithersoeuer the
uernour listeth.
5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boa-
th great thinges: behold how great a matter a little
kindleth.
6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquitie: so
he tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the
ole bodie, and setteth on fire the course of Nature,
d it is set on fire of hell.
7 For euery kinde of beastes, and of birds, and of
pents, and thinges in the sea, is tamed, and hath
ne tamed of mankinde.
8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an vnru-
euill, full of deadlie poyson.
9 Therewith blesse wee God, euen the Father: and
rewith curse wee men, which are made after the
ilitude of God.
10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth, blessing and
sing: my brethren, these things ought not so to bee.
11 Doeth a Fountaine send forth at the same place
eete water and bitter?
12 Can the figge tree, my brethren, beare Oliue
ries? either a vine, figges? so can no Fountaine
h yeelde salt water and fresh.
13 Who is a wise man, and indued with knowe-
ge among you? let him shew out of a good conuersa-
his works with meeknesse of wisdome.
14 But if ye haue bitter enuying and strife in your
rtes, glorie not, and lie not against the trueth.
15 This wisedome descendeth not from aboue, but
arthlie, sensuall, deuilish.

16 For where enuying and strife is, there is confusion, and euery euill worke.

17 But the wisedome that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be entreated, full of mercie, and good fruites, without partialitie, and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruite of righteousnes is sowne in peace of them that make peace.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Against couetousnesse, 4. intemperance, 5. pride, 11. detraction, and rash censuring.

FRom whence come warres and fightings among you? come they not hence, euen of your lusts, that warre in your members?

2 Yee lust, and haue not: yee kill, and desire to haue, and cannot obtaine: yee fight and warre, yet yee haue not, because yee aske not.

3 Yee aske, and receiue not, because yee aske amisse, that yee may consume it vpon your lusts.

4 Yee adulterers, and adulteresses, knowe yee not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoeuer therefore will bee a friend of the worlde, is the enemie of God.

5 Doe yee thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The Spirit that dwelleth in vs lusteth to enuie?

6 But hee giueth more grace, wherefore hee saith, God resisteth the proude, but giueth grace vnto the humble.

7 Submit your selues therefore to God: resist the deuill, and hee will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and hee will draw nigh to you, cleanse your hands yee sinners, and purifie your hearts yee double minded.

Bee afflicted, & mourne, & weepe: let your laugh-
be turned to mourning, and your joy to heauinesse.
10 Humble your selues in the sight of the Lord, and
shall lift you vp.
11 Speake not euill one of another (brethren) hee
t speaketh euill of his brother, and iudgeth his bro-
r, speaketh euill of the Law, and iudgeth the Law:
t if thou iudge the Lawe, thou art not a doer of the
w, but a iudge.
12 There is one Law-giuer, who is able to saue, and
estroy, who art thou that iudgest another?
13 Goe to now yee that say, To day or to morrow loee
l goe into such a citie, and continue there a yeere,
buy, and sell, and get gaine:
14 Whereas yee knowe not what shall bee on the
row: for what is your life? It is euen a vapour y
eareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.
15 For that yee ought to say, If the Lord will, wee
ll liue, and doe this or that.
16 But now yee rejoyce in your boastings: all such
oycing is euill.
17 Therefore to him that knoweth to doe good, and
th it not, to him it is sinne.

## CHAP. V.

Of wicked rich men. 7. Of patience. 12. To for-
beare swearing. 13. To pray in aduersitie, and sing
in prosperitie.

1 Goe to now yee rich men, weepe and howle for
your miseries that shall come vpon you.
2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garmentes
th eaten.
3 Your gold and siluer is cankered, and the rust of
them

them shall bee a witnesse against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye haue heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers which haue reaped downe your fieldes, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth: and the eyes of them which haue reaped are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabbaoth.

5 Ye haue liueth in pleasure on the earth, and bee wanton: ye haue nourished your heartes as in a day of slaughter:

6 Ye haue condemned, and killed the iust, and he doeth not resist you.

7 Bee patient therefore, brethren, vnto the coming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill hee receiue the earlie and latter raine.

8 Bee ye also patient, stablish your hearts: for the comming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condēned: behold, the Iudge stādeth before the dore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets who haue spoken in the Name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, wee count them happie which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue seene the end of the Lord: That the Lord is verie pitifull and of tender mercie.

12 But aboue all things, my brethren, sweare not neither by heauen nor by earth, nor by any other oath: but let your yea, bee yea, and your nay, nay: lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merrie? let him sing Psalmes.

14 Is

14 Is any sicke among you? let him call for the
ders of the Church, and let them pray ouer him,
inting him with oyle in the Name of the Lord:
15 And the prayer of Faith shall saue the sicke, and
Lord shall raise him vp: and if hee haue committed
nes, they shall bee forgiuen him.
16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray
e for another, that yee may bee healed: the effectuall
uent prayer of righteous man auaileth much.
17 Elias was a man subiect to like passions as wee
e, and hee prayed earnestly that it might not raine:
d it rained not on the earth by the space of three yeers
d sixe moneths.
18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue
ne, and the earth brought forth her fruite.
19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre, from the trueth,
one conuert him.
20 Let him know, that hee which conuereth the
ner from the errour of his way, shall saue a soule
m death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

¶ The first Epistle generall of Peter.

## CHAP. I.

Hee blesseth God for his spirituall graces. 10. Sal-
ation in Christ propheſied of old. 13. An exhor-
ation to godlineſſe.

PEter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the stran-
gers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cap-
padocia, Asia, and Bithynia,
2 Elect according to the fore-knowledge of

God

God the Father, thorow sanctification of the Spirit vn
to obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Iesu
Christ: Grace vnto you, and peace bee multiplied.
3 Blessed bee the God and Father of our Lord Iesu
Christ, which according to his aboundant mercy, hat
begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope, by the resurre
ction of Iesus Christ from the dead,
4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and vndefiled
and that fadeth not away, reserued in heauen for you
5 Who are kept by the power of God through Faith
vnto saluation, ready to bee reuealed in the last time.
6 Wherein yee greatlie reioyce, though now for
season (if neede bee) yee are in heauinesse thorough ma
nifold temptations:
7 That the triall of your Faith beeing much mor
precious than of gold that perisheth though it bee trie
with fire, might bee found vnto praise, and honour, an
glorie, at the appearing of Iesus Christ:
8 Whome hauing not seene, yee loue, in whom
though now yee see him not yet beleeuing, yee reioyc
with ioye vnspeakable, and full of glorie,
9 Receiuing the end of your Faith, euen the salua
tion of your soules:
10 Of which saluation the Prophets haue inquired
and searched diligentlie, who prophesied of the grac
that should come vnto you,
11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spi
rite of Christ which was in them did signifie, when
testified before hand the sufferings of Christ, and th
glorie that should follow.
12 Vnto whome it was reuealed, that not vn
themselues, but vnto vs, they did minister the thing
which are now reported vnto you by them that hau
preache

ached the Gospel vnto you with the holie Ghost sent
one from heauen; which things the Angels desire to
ke into.
Wherfore gird vp the loynes of your minde, bee so-
, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to bee
ught vnto you at the reuelation of Iesus Christ:
14 As obedient children, not fashioning your sel-
, according to the former lustes, in your ignorance:
15 But as hee which hath called you is holie, so bee
holy in all manner of conuersation;
16 Because it is written, Bee ye holy, for I am holie.
17 And if yee call on the Father, who without respect
persons judgeth according to euerie mans worke,
e the time of your sojourning heere in feare:
18 For as much as yee know that yee were not re-
med with corruptible thinges, as siluer, and golde,
m your vaine conuersation receiued by tradition
m your Fathers.
19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a
mbe without blemish and without spot,
20 Who verily was foreordained before the foudatiõ
world, but was manifest in these last tims for you.
21 Who by him doe beleeue in God that raised him
from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your Faith
hope might bee in God.
22 Seeing yee haue purified your soules, in obeying
trueth through the Spirite, vnto vnfained loue of
brethren: see that yee loue one another with a pure
rt feruentlie,
23 Beeing borne againe, not of corruptible seede,
of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liueth
abideth for euer.
24 All flesh is as grasse, and all the glorie of man

as the flower of grasse: the grasse witheroth, and t
flowre thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: a
this is the word which by the Gospel is preached vn
you.

## CHAP. II.

1. Hee dehorteth them from breach of Charitie:
sheweth that Christ is the foundation. 13. Obe
ence to Magistrates. 18. Seruants duetie.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all gui
and hypocrysies, & enuies, & euill speaking

2 As new borne babes desire the sincere milke
the word, that yee may grow thereby.

3 If so bee yee haue tasted that the Lord is gracio

4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing Stone, dis
lowed indeede of men, but chosen of God, and precio

5 Yee also as liuelie stones, are built vp a spiritu
house, an holy Priest-hood to offer vp spirituall sac
fice, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the Scripture, Beho
I lay in Syon a chiefe corner Stone, elect, precio
and he that belieueth on him, shall not bee confound

7 Vnto you therfore which belieue he is precious; b
vnto thē which be disobediēt, ȳ stone which the build
disallowed the same is made the head of the corner.

8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rocke of offen
euen to them which stomble at the word, beeing di
bedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But yee are a chosen generation, a royall Pri
hood, an holy Nation, a peculiar people that yee sho
shew forth the praises of him, who hath called you
of darkenesse vnto his marueilous light:

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are
now the people of God: which had not obtained mercie,
but now haue obtained mercy.

11 Dearelie beloued, I beseech you as strangers and
pilgrimes, abstaine from fleshly lustes, which warre
against the soule.

12 Hauing your conuersation honest among the Gen-
tiles, that whereas they speake against you as euill
doers, they may by your good workes, which they shall
behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

13 Submit your selues to euery ordinance of man for
the Lords sake whether it be to the King as supreme.

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent
of him, for the punishment of euill doers, and for the
praise of them that doe well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing
ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolishmen.

16 As free, and not vsing your libertie for a cloake
of malicious nesse, but as the seruants of God.

17 Honour all men. Loue the brotherhood. Feare
God. Honour the King.

18 Seruãts, be subiect to your masters with all feare,
not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thanke worthie, if a man for conscince
toward God indure griefe, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glorie is it, when ye be buffetted for
your faults, ye shall take it patientlie? but if when ye
do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patientlie, this is
acceptable with God.

21 For euen hereunto are ye called: because Christ
also suffered for vs, leauing vs an example, that ye
should follow his steps.

22 Who did no sinne, neither was guile found in
his mouth.

23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not again: when hee suffered, hee threatned not, but committed himselfe to him that iudgeth righteously.

24 Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes, in his owne bodie on the tree, that we being dead to sins, should liue vnto righteousnesse, by whose stripes yee were healed.

25 For yee were as sheepe going astray, but are now returned vnto the Shepheard & Bishop of your soules.

## CHAP. III.

1. The dueties of wiues and husbands each to other. An exhortation to vnitie. 14. & to suffer persecution.

LIkewise, yee wiues, bee in subiection to your owne husbands, that if anie obey not the word, they also may without the word bee wonne by the conuersation of the wiues.

2 While they beholde your conuersation coupled with feare.

3 Whose adorning, let it not bee that outward adorning, of plaiting the haire, and of wearing of golde, or of putting on of apparell.

4 But let it bee the hiden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, euen the ornament of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the olde time, the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselues, being in subiection vnto their owne husbands:

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters yee are as long as yee doe well and are not afraid with any amazement.

7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giuing honour vnto the wife as vnto the weaker vessell, and as being heires together of the grace of life that your prayers bee not hindered.

Finally be ye al of one minde, hauing compassiõ one another, loue as brethren, be pitifull be courteous;
9 Not rendring euill for euill, or railing for railing, but contrariwise blessing, knowing that yee are thereto called, that yee should inherite a blessing.
10 For hee that will loue life, and see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his lippes that they speake no guile:
11 Let him eschew euill, and doe good: let him seeke peace, and ensue it.
12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous, and his eares are open vnto their prayers: but the face of the Lord, is against them that doe euill.
13 And who is hee that will harme you, if yee bee followers of that which is good?
14 But, and if yee suffer for righteousnesse sake, happie are yee, and bee not afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled:
15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and be readie alwayes to giue an answere to euerie man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and feare:
16 Hauing a good conscience, that whereas they speake euill of you, as of euill doers, they may bee ashamed that falsly accuse your good cõuersation in Christ.
17 For it is better, if the will of God bee so, that ye suffer for well doing, than for euill doing.
18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickned by the Spirit.
19 By which also hee went and preached vnto the spirits in prison,
20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once

the long suffering of God, waited in the dayes of Noah, while the Arke was a preparing: wherein few that is, eight soules were saued by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, euen Baptisme, doeth also now saue vs, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answere of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Iesus Christ.

22 Who is gone into heauen, and is on the right hand of God. Angels, and authorities, and powers being made subiect vnto him.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. Hee exhorteth them to cease from sinne: 12. and comforteth them against persecution.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same mind: for hee that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne.

2 That hee no longer should liue in the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice vs to haue wrought the will of the Gentiles, when wee walked in lasciuiousnesse, lustes, excesse of wine, reuellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein they think it strange, ỹ thou run not with them to the same excesse of ryot, speaking euill of you.

5 Who shall giue account to him that is readie to judge the quicke and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the Gospel preached also to thẽ that are dead, that they might bee iudged accordingly to mẽ in the flesh, but liue according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: bee yee therefore sober, and watch vnto prayer.

8 And

8 And aboue all thinges, haue feruent Charitie among your selues: for Charitie shall couer the multitude of sinnes.

9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gift, euen so minister the same one to another, as good stewardes of the manifolde grace of God.

11 If any man speake, let him speake as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him doe it as the ability which God giueth, that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom bee praise, and dominion, for euer and euer. Amen.

12 Beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery tryall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you.

13 But reioyce, in as much as yee are partakers of Christs sufferinges: that when his glorie shall bee reuealed, yee may bee glad also with exceeding ioye.

14 If yee bee reproached for the Name of Christ, happie are yee, for the Spirite of glorie, and of God, resteth vpon you: on their part hee is euill spoken of, but on your part hee is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a theefe, or as an euill doer, or as a busibodie in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalfe.

17 For the time is come, ỳ iudgement must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at vs, what shall the end bee of them that obey not the Gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarselie bee saued, where shall the vngodlie and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore, let them that suffer according to

the will of God, committe the kæping of their soules t
him in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.

## CHAP. V.

1. Hee exhorteth the Elders to feede their flocke,
the younger to obey. 8. and all to bee sober watch
full, and constant: 9. to resist the deuill.

THe Elders which are amõg you, I erhort who a
also a Elder, & a witnes of the sufferings of Chri
and also a partaker of the glorie that shall bæ reueale

2 Fæde the flocke of God which is among you, t
king the ouer-sight thereof, not by constraint, but wi
lingly: not for filthie lucre, but of a readie minde: bee

3 Neither as bæing lords ouer Gods heritage: bu
ing ensamples to the flocke.

4 And when the chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, y
shall receiue a crowne of glorie, that fadeth not away

5 Likewise yæ younger, submit your selues vnt
the Elder: yea, all of you bee subiect one to another, an
bæ clothed with humilitie, for God resistes the proud
and giues grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selues therefore vnder the migh
hand of God, that hæ may exalt you in due time,

7 Casting all your care vpon him, for hee careth f
you.

8 Bæ sober, bæ vigilant: because your aduersar
the deuill as a roaring lyon walketh about, seeking
whom hæ may deuour.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the Faith, knowing th
the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren
that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called vs in
to eternall glorie, by Christ Iesus, after that yæ hau
suffered

ffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen,
ttle you.
11 To him be glory & dominiõ for euer & euer. Amen.
12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you (as I
ppose) I haue written briefly, exhorting & testifying,
at this is the true grace of God wherein yee stand.
13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together
ith you, saluteth you, and so doeth Marcus my son.
14 Greete yee one another with a kisse of Charitie:
eace be with you all that are in Christ Iesus. Amen.

The second Epistle generall of Peter.

## CHAP. I.

He confirmeth them. 5. & exhorteth them to make their calling sure. 12. Hee speaketh of his owne death. 16. & warneth them to be constant in Faith.

SImon Peter, a Seruant and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to them that haue obtained like precious Faith with vs, through the righteousnesse of God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ.
2 Grace and peace bee multiplied vnto you, through knowledge of God, and of Iesus our Lord,
3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto all thinges that pertaine vnto life and godlinesse, ough the knowledge of him that hath called vs to orie and vertue.
4 Whereby are giuen vnto vs exceeding great and ecious promises, that by these you might bee partakers of the diuine Nature, hauing escaped the corrupti- that is in the world through lust.
5 And besides this giuing all diligence, adde to

your

your Faith, vertue, and to vertue. knowledge.

6 And to knowledge, temperance, and to temperance patience, and to patience godlinesse:

7 And to godlinesse, brotherlie kindnesse, and to brotherlie kindnesse charitie.

8 For if these things bee in you, and abound, they make you, that yee shall neither bee barren, nor vnfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 But hee that lacketh these thinges, is blinde, and cannot see farre off, and hath forgotten that hee was purged from his olde sinnes.

10 Wherefore, the rather, brethren, giue diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if you doe these things, yee shall neuer fall.

11 For so an entrance shall bee ministred vnto you aboundantlieinto, the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore, I will not bee negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these thinges, though ye know them, and bee stablished in the present trueth.

13 Yea, I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortlie I must put off this tabernacle, euen as our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed mee.

15 Moreouer I willendeauoure that you may bee able after my decease, to haue these things alwayes in remembrance.

16 For wee haue not followed cunningly deuised fables, when wee made knowne vnto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of his Maiestie.

17 For he receiued from God the Father, honour & glorie,

lorie, when there came a voyce to him from the excel-
nt glory, This is my beloued Sonne in whom I am
ell pleased.
18 And this voyce which came from heauen, wee
eard when wee were with him in the holie Mount.
19 Wee haue also a more sure worde of prophesie,
herevnto yee doe well that yee take heede: as vnto a
ght that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawn
d the day-starre arise in your hearts:
20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the
cripture is of any priuate interpretation:
21 For the prophesie came not in olde time by the
ill of man: but holy men of God spake as they were
moued by the Holie Ghost.

## CHAP. II.

1 Hee fore-telleth them of false Teachers, 10. and
fullie discribeth their manners.

BVt there were false Prophets also among the peo-
ple, euen as there shall bee false teachers among
ou, who priuilie shall bring in damnable heresies, e-
n denying the Lord that bought them, and bring vp-
themselues swift destruction.
2 And many shall follow their pernicious wayes by
ason of whom the way of truth shalbe euill spoken of.
3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained
ords make merchandize of you, whose judgement
w of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation
nbreth not.
4 For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but
t them down to hell, & deliuered them into chaines
darkenesse to bee reserued vnto judgement:
5 And spared not the olde World, but saued
Noah

Noah, the eight person, a preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood vpon the world of the vngodlie:

6 And turning the cities of Sodome & Gomorrha into ashes, condemned them with an ouerthrow, making them an example vnto those that after should liue vngodly:

7 And deliuered iust Lot, vexed with the filthie conuersation of the wicked.

8 (For that the righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day, and with their vnlawfull dædes.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliuer the godly out of temptations, and reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement to bee punished.

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise gouernment. Presumptuous are they; selfewilled: they are not afraide to speake euill of dignities:

11 Whereas Angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

12 But these as naturall bruite beastes, made to be taken and destroyed, speake euill of the thinges that they vnderstand not, and shall vtterlie perish in their owne corruption:

13 And shall receiue the reward of vnrighteousnes as they that count it pleasure to riote in the day time: Spots they are, and blamishes, sporting themselues with their owne deceiuings while they feast with you:

14 Hauing eyes full of adulterie, & that cannot cease from sin: beguiling vnstable soules: an heart they haue exercised with couetous practises: cursed children:

15 Which haue forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the sonne

of

of Bosor, who loued the wages of vnrighteousnesse,
16 But was rebuked for his iniquitie: the dumbe asse speaking with mans voyce, forbade the madnesse of the Prophet.
17 These are welles without water, cloudes that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserued for euer.
18 For when they speake great swelling wordes of vanitie, they allure, through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonnes, those that were cleane escaped from them who liue in errour.
19 While they promise them libertie, they themselues are the seruents of corruption: for of whom a man is ouercome, of the same is hee brought in bondage.
20 For if after they haue escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of the Lord & Sauiour Iesus Christ, they are again intãgled therin, & ouercome the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.
21 For it had been better for them not to haue known the way of righteousnes, thã after they haue known it, to turne frõ the holy cõmandement deliuered vnto thẽ.
22 But it is happned vnto thẽ according to the true prouerbe, The dog is turned to his owne vomit againe, & the sow y was washed, to her wallowing in the myre.

## CHAP. III.

3. The certaine tie of Christs comming to judgement.
10. The manner how the world shall bee destroyed.
11. An exhortation to holinesse.

THis second Epistle (beloued) I now write vnto you, in both which I stirre vp your pure mindes, by way of remembrance.
2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which we

spoken before by the holy Prophets, & of the commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour.

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes, scoffers, walking after their owne lustes.

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the Fathers fell asleepe, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heauens were of olde, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

6 Whereby the world that then was, beeing ouerflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heauens & the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserued vnto fire against the day of iudgement, and perdition of vngodly men.

8 But (beloued) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day.

9 The Lord is not slacke concerning his promise (as some men count slackenesse) but is long suffering to vsward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a theefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a great noyse, and the elementes shall melt with feruent heat, the earth also and the workes that are therein shall bee burnt vp.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall bee dissolued, what manner of persons ought wee to bee, in all holy conuersation and godlinesse?

12 Looking for, and hastning vnto the comming of the day of God, wherein the heauens beeing on fire, shall bee dissolued, and the elementes shall melt with feruent heat.

13 Nei-

13 Neuertheleſſe; wæ, according to his promiſe, oke for new heauens, and a new earth, wherein dwel- th righteouſneſſe.

14 Wherefore (beloued) ſæing that yæ looke for ch things, bæ diligent, that yæ may bæ found of him peace, without ſpot, and blameleſſe.

15 And account that the long ſuffering of the Lord Saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul alſo, cording to the wiſedome giuen vnto him hath writ- en vnto you.

16 As alſo in al his Epiſtles ſpeaking in them of theſe ings, in which are ſome things hard to be vnderſtood hich they that are vnlearned and vnſtable, wreſt, as ey doe alſo the other Scriptures, vnto their owne de- ruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued, ſæing ye know theſe things efore, beware leſt yæ alſo being led away with the er- our of the wicked, fall from your owne ſtedfaſtneſſe.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our ord and Sauiour Jeſus Chriſt: to him bæ glorie, oth now and euer. Amen.

## ¶ The firſt Epiſtle generall of Iohn.

### CHAP. I.

1. Hee deſcribeth the perſon of Chriſt. 2. in whome is eternall life, 3. by communion with God. 5. to whom wee muſt joyne godlineſſe of life.

THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard which we haue ſæne with our eyes, which wee haue loked vpon, and our handes haue handled of the word of life.

2 (For the life was manifeſted, and we haue ſene it, and

and beare witnes, & shew vnto you ỳ eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested vnto vs.)

3 That which wee haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that yee also may haue fellowship with vs, and truelie our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write wee vnto you, that your ioye may bee full.

5 This then is the message which wee haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, That God is light, and in him is no darknesse at all.

6 If wee say that wee haue fellowship with him, and walke in darknesse, wee lie, and doe not the trueth.

7 But if wee walke in the light, as hee is in the light, wee haue fellowship one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne, cleanseth vs from all sinne.

8 If wee say, that wee haue no sinne, wee deceiue our selues, and the trueth is not in vs.

9 If wee confesse our sinnes, hee is faithfull and iust to forgiue vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from all vnrighteousnesse.

10 If wee say that wee haue not sinned, wee make him a lyar, and his word is not in vs.

## CHAP. III.

1. Christ our Aduocate. 3. To know God, is to keepe his commandements, 9, to loue our brethren, 15 and not to loue the world.

My little children, these things write I vnto you, ỳ ye sin not. And if any man sin, wee haue an aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ the righteous.

2 And hee is the propitiation for our sinnes: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

3 And

3 And hereby wee doe knowe that wee know him, if wee keepe his commandements.

4 Hee that saith, I know him, & keepeth not his commandements, is a liar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But who so keepeth his word, in him verilie is the loue of God perfected: heereby knowe wee that wee are in him.

6 Hee that saith, hee abideth in him, ought himselfe so to walke, euen as hee walketh.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto you: but an olde commandement, which yee had from the beginning: the olde commaundement is the word which yee haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a newe commaundement I write vnto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the darkenesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith hee is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenesse, euen vntill now.

10 Hee that loueth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darknesse, and walketh in darknesse, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darknesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write vnto you little children, because your sinnes are forgiuen you, for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you, Fathers, because you haue knowne him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you young men, because you haue ouercome the wicked one. I write vnto you little children, because yee haue knowne the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, Fathers, because yee haue knowne him that is from the beginning, I haue written vnto you, young men, because yee are strong,

and the word of God abideth in you, and yée haue ouer-
come the wicked one.

15 Loue not the world, neither the things that ar
in the world. If any man loue the world, the loue of th
Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh
the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of th
Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust ther
of: but hée that doeth the will of God abideth for euer.

18 Little children it is the last time: and as y
haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen now a
there manie antichrists, whereby wée know that it
the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of v
for if they had béene of vs, they would, no doubt ha
continued with vs: but they went out that they mig
bée made manifest, that they were not all of vs.

20 But yée haue an vnction from the holy One, an
yée know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because yée kno
not the trueth: but because yée know it, and that no
is of the trueth.

22 Who is a liar, but hée that denieth that Jes
is the Christ? Hée is Antichrist, that denieth the F
ther, and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same ha
not the Father: but hee that acknowledgeth the So
hath the Father also.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which yee ha
heard from the beginning: if that which yée haue hea
from the beginning shall remaine in you, yée also sh
continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 A

25 And this is the promise that hæ hath promised vs,
even eternall life.
26 These things haue I written vnto you, concer-
ning them that seduce you.
27 But the anointing which yee haue receiued of
him, abideth in you: and yee nede not that any man
teach you: But as the same anointing teacheth you of
all things, and is trueth, and is no lie: and euen as it
hath taught you, yee shall abide in him.
28 And now little children, abide in him, that when
he shall appeare, wee may haue confidence, and not bee
ashamed before him at his comming.
29 If yee know that hæ is righteous, yee know that
euery one which doeth righteousnesse, is borne of him.

## CHAP. III.

God manifesteth his loue in making vs his sonnes
3. Who must bee pure as hee is pure.

1 Behold what manner of loue the Father hath bestow-
ed vpon vs, that wee should bee called the sonnes
of God: therefore the world knoweth vs not, because
it knew him not.
2 Beloued, now are wee the sonnes of God, & it doth
not yet appeare what wee shall bee: but wee know that
when hæ shall appeare, wee shall bee like him: for wee
shall see him as hæ is.
3 And euerie one that hath this hope in him, purifi-
eth himselfe, euen as hæ is pure.
4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also
the Law: for sinne is the transgression of the Law.
5 And yee knowe that hæ was manifested to take
away your sinnes, and in him is no sinne.
6 Whosoeuer abideth in him, sinneth not: whoso-

euer sinneth, hath not seene him, neither knowne him.

7 Little children, let no man deceiue you, he ỳ doth righteousnesse, is righteous, euen as hee is righteous.

8 Hee that committeth sinne, is of the deuill: for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Sonne of God was manifested, that hee might destroy the workes of the deuill.

9 Whosoeuer is borne of God, doeth not commit sinne: for his seede remaineth in him, and hee cannot sinne, because hee is borne of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the deuil: whosoeuer doeth not righteousnesse is not of God, neither hee that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the message that yee heard from the beginning, That wee should loue one another.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew he him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers righteous.

13 Maruaile not my brethren if the world hate you.

14 Wee know that wee haue passed from death vnto life, because wee loue the brethren: hee that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a murderer: and yee know that no murderer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceiue wee the loue of God, because hee laide downe his life for vs, and wee ought to lay downe our liue for the brethren.

17 But who so hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother hath neede, and shutteth vp his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My little children, let vs not loue in word, neither in tongue, but in deede, and in trueth.

19 And

19 And hereby wee know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our heartes before him.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our hearts condemne vs not, then haue wee confidence towards God.

22 And whatsoeuer wee aske, wee receiue of him, because wee keepe his commmandement, and doe those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is the commandement, That wee should beleiue on the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as he hath giuen vs commandement.

24 And he that keepeth his commandemẽts, dwelleth in him, & he in him: and hereby wee know that hee abideth in vs, by the Spirit which hee hath giuen vs.

## CHAP. IIII.

1. He warneth them not to beleiue all Teachers, but to trie them by the rules of the Catholike Faith.

BEloued, beleiue not euerie spirit, but trye the spirits, whither they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: euery spirit ỹ confesseth ỹ Christ Iesus is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery spirit that confesseth not ỹ Iesus Christ come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof you haue heard that it should come, and euen now alreadie is it in the world.

4 Yee are of God, little children and haue ouercome them: because greater is hee that is in you, than hee that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speake they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 Wee are of God: hee that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth not vs: hereby know wee the Spirit of trueth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another; for loue is of God, and euerie one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He y loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

9 In this was manifested the loue of God towards vs, because that God sent his onelie begotten Sonne into the world, that wee might liue through him.

10 Herein is loue, not that wee loue God, but that hee loued vs, and sent his Sonne to bee the propitiation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, wee ought also to loue one another.

12 No man hath seene God at anie time. If wee loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfected in vs.

13 Hereby know wee that wee dwell in him, and hee in vs, because hee hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And wee haue seene and doe testifie, that the Father sent the Sonne to bee the Sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer shall confesse that Iesus is the Sonne of God, God dwelleth in him, and hee in God.

16 And wee haue knowne and belieued the loue, that God hath to vs. God is loue: and hee that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is our loue made perfect, that wee may haue boldnesse in the day of Iudgement, because as he is, so are wee in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: because feare hath torment: hee that feareth is not made perfect in loue.

19 We

19 Wee loue him because hee first loued vs.
20 If a man say, I loue God, & hateth his brother, he is a lyar. For he y loueth not his brother whom hee hath seen, how can he loue God, whom he hath not seen?
21 And this commandement haue wee from him, That hee who loueth God, loue his brother also.

## CHAP. V.

1 Hee that loueth God, loueth his children, and keepeth his commandements: 3. which to the faithfull are not grieuous. 11. Iesus able to saue vs.

WHosoeuer believeth that Iesus is the Christ, is borne of God: and euery one that loueth him that begate, loueth him also that is begotten of him.
2 By this we know that we loue the children of God, when wee loue God, and keepe his commandements.
3 For this is the loue of God, That we kæp his commandemẽts, & his commandements are not grieuous.
4 For whatsoeuer is borne of God, ouercommeth the world, and this is the victorie that ouercommeth the world, euen our Faith.
5 Who is hee that ouercommeth the world, but hee that believeth that Iesus is the Sonne of God?
6 This is hæ that came by water and blood, euen Iesus Christ: not by water onelie, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnes, because the Spirit is Trueth.
7 For there are thræ y beare record in heauẽ, the Father, the Word, & the holy Ghost: & these thræ are one.
8 And there are three that beare witnesse in the earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the Blood: and these three agræ in one.
9 If wæ receiue the witnesse of men, the witnes of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he hath testifieth of his Sonne.

10 Hæ that believeth on the Sonne of God, hath the
witnesse in himselfe: hæ that believeth not God, hath
made him a liar, because hæ believeth not the record
that God gaue of his Sonne.

11 And this is the record, That God, hath giuen to
vs eternall life, and this life is in his Sonne.

12 Hæ that hath the Sonne, hath life: and hæ that
hath not the Sonne, hath not life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you, that be-
lieue on the Name of the Sonne of God, that yæ may
know that yæ haue eternall life: and that yee may be-
lieue on the Name of the Sonne of God.

14 And this is the confidence ý we haue in him, That
we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs.

15 And if wæ know that hee heare vs, whatsoeuer
wæ aske, wæ know that wee haue the petitions, that
wæ desire of him.

16 If any man sæ his brother sinne a sinne, which
is not vnto death, hæ shall aske, and hee shall giue him
life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne
vnto death: I doe not say that hee shall pray for it.

17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, and there is a sinne
not vnto death.

18 Wæ know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sin-
neth not: but hæ that is begotten of God, keepeth him-
selfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And wæ know that wee are of God, and the whole
world lyeth in wickednesse.

20 And wæ know that the Sonne of God is come, and
hath giuen vs an vnderstanding, ý wæ may know him
ý is true and wæ are in him ý is true, euen in his Sonne
Iesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.

21 Little children, kæp your selues from idols. Amen.

¶ The

Exhortations to perseuere in Christian loue and beliefe, 8. lest wee lose the reward of our profession 10. To auoide seducers. ¶

THe Elder vnto the elect Ladie, and her children, whom I loue in the truth: and not I onelie, but also all they that haue knowne the trueth:

2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall bee with vs for euer:

3 Grace bee with you, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ, his Sonne the Father in trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in trueth, as wee haue receiued a commandement from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee Ladie, not as though I wrote a new commandement vnto thee: but ye which we had from the beginning, That wee loue one another.

6 And this is loue, That we walk after his commandements: This is the commandement, That as yee haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Look to your selues ye we lose not those things which we haue wrought, but that wee receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, hee hath both the Father & the Sonne.

10 If there come any to you, and bring not this doctrine, receiue him not into your house, neither bid him, God spæde.

11 For hee that biddeth him, God spæd, is partaker of his euill dædes.

12 Ha-

12 Hauing many things to write vnto you, I would not write with paper and ink, but I trust to come vnto you, and speak face to face, that your ioy may bee full.
13 The children of thine elect sister greete thee. Amen.

## The third Epistle of Iohn.

1. Gaius commended for pietie, 5. and hospitalitie, 7. to true preachers, 9. Diotrephes dispraised for ambitiō. 12. The good report of Demetrius confirmed.

THe Elder vnto the well-beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the trueth:

2 Beloued, I wish aboue all things, that thou may prosper, and bee in health, euen as thy soule prospereth.

3 For I reioyced greatlie when the brethren came and testified of the trueth that is in thee, euen as thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioy, than to heare that my children walke in the trueth.

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfullie whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren and to strangers:

6 Which haue borne witnesse of thy charitie before the Church: whom if thou bring forward on their iourney after a godly sort, thou shalt doe well:

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 Wee therefore ought to receiue such, that we might bee fellow-helpers to the trueth.

9 I write vnto the Church, but Diotrephes, who loueth to haue the preheminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Therefore if I come, I will remember his deedes which

hich hée doeth, prating against vs with malicious
ordes: and not content therewith, neither doeth hée
mselfe receiue the brethren, and forbiddeth them that
ould, and casteth them out of the Church.
11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that
hich is good. Hée that doeth good, is of God: but hée
at doeth euill, hath not séene God.
12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of
e trueth it selfe: yea, and wée also beare record, and
ow that our record is true.
13 I had many things to write, but I will not with
ke and pen write vnto thee:
14 But I trust I shall shortelie see thee, and wée shall
eake face to face. Peace bée to thée. Our friends
lute thée. Greete the friends by name.

## ¶ The generall Epistle of Iude.

An exhortation to constancie in faith. 13. Horrible punishments prepared for false teachers. 20. The godlie by prayer in the holy Ghost, growe in grace.

IVde the seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of
James, to them that are sanctified by God the Fa-
ther, and preserued in Iesus Christ and called:
2 Mercy vnto you, and peace & loue be multiplied.
3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vn-
you of the common saluation, it was needefull for
e to write vnto you, and exhort you, that yée should
rnestlie contend for the Faith which was once deli-
red vnto the Saincts.
4 For there are certaine men crept in vnawares,
o were before of old ordained to this condemnation,

vngodly

vngodlie men, turning the grace of our God into la
ciuiousnes, and denying the onelie Lord God, and o
Lord Iesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, thou
yée once knew this, howe that the Lord hauing sa
the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward d
stroyed them that belieued not.

6 And the Angels which kept not their first estat
but left their owne habitation, hæ hath reserued in
uerlasting chaines vnder darkenesse, vnto the judg
ment of the great day.

7 Euen as Sodome and Gomorrha, and the citi
about them, in like manner giuing themselues ouer
Fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set for
for an example, suffering the vengeãce of eternall fir

8 Likewise also these filthie dreamers defile th
flesh, despise dominion, and speake euill of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when contendin
with the deuill, hæ disputed about the bodie of Mose
durst not bring against him a railing accusation, bu
said, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speake euill of those thinges, whic
they know not: but what they know naturallie, a
bruite beasts, in those things they corrupt themselue

11 Woe vnto them, for they haue gone in the wa
of Cain, and ran grædily after the errour of Balaa
for reward, and perished in the gaine-saying of Cor

12 These are spots in your feastes of charitie, whe
they feast with you, fæding themselues without fear
cloudes they are without water, caried about of wind
trees whose fruite withereth, without fruite, twi
dead, plucked vp by the roote.

13 Raging waues in the Sea, foaming out thei
own

one shame, wandring starres, to whome is reserued
e blacknesse of darkenesse for euer.
14 And Enoch also, the seuenth from Adam, prophe-
d of these, saying, Behold, the Lord commeth with
n thousands of his Saintes.
15 To execute judgement vpon all, & to conuence all
are vngodly among then of all their vngodly dœdes
hich they haue vngodly committed, & of all their hard
eaches, which vngodly sinners haue spoken against
m.
16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking
ter their owne lustes, and their mouthes speak great
elling words, hauing mens persons, ni admiration
cause of aduantage.
17 But beloued, remember ye the words, which were
oken before of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ.
18 How that they tolde you there should bee mock-
rs in the last time: who should walke after their
one vngodly lustes.
19 These bee they who separate themselues, sen-
all, hauing not the Spirit.
20 But, yee beloued, building vp your selues on
ur most holy Faith, praying in the holy Ghost.
21 Keepe your selues in the loue of God, loking for
e mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ vnto eternall life.
22 And of some haue cõpassiõ, making a difference:
23 And others saue with feare, pulling them out of
e fire: hating euen the garment spotted by the flesh.
24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you from fal-
ng, and to present you faultlesse before the presence
his glorie, with exceeding joy:
25 To the only wise God our Sauiour, be glorie and
ajestie, dominion and power, now and euer. Amen.

¶ The

# ¶ The Reuelation of Saint Iohn the Diuine.

## CHAP. I.

4. Hee writeth to the seuen Churches of Asia. 7. The comming of Christ: 14. His power and Majestie.

THe Reuelation of Jesus Christ, which God gaue vnto him, to shew vnto his seruantes thinges which must shortly come to passe: and hee sent and signified it by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn.

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimonie of Jesus Christ, and of all thinges that he saw.

3 Blessed are they that readeth, and they that heare the wordes of this prophesie, and keepe those thinges which are written, therein: for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches in Asia, Grace be vnto you, and peace from him which is, and which was, and which is to come: and from the seuen spirits which are before his Throne:

5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithfull witnesse, and the first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth: vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his owne blood,

6 And hath made vs Kings and Priests vnto God, and his Father: to him bee glorie and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

7 Behold hee commeth with cloudes, and euery eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall waile because of him: euen so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha, and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almightie.

9 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the Ile that is called Patmos, for the word of God, & for the testimonie of Jesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind mee a great voyce, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first & the last: and what thou seest write in a booke, & send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia: vnto Ephesus, & vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, & vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, & vnto Philadelphia, & vnto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voyce that spake with me, and being turned, I saw seuen golden Candlesticks.

13 And in the midst of the seuen Candlesticks one like vnto the Sonne of man, cloathed with a garment downe to the foote, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head and his haires were white, like wooll, as white as snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire,

15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voyce as the sound of manie waters.

16 And hee had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his countenance was as the Sun shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feete as dead: and hee laid his right hand vpon mee, saying vnto me, Feare not, I am the first and the last.

18 I am hee that liueth, and was dead: and behold I am aliue for euermore, Amen: and haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write

19 Write the things which thou hast seene, and the things which are, & the things which shall be hereafter.

20 The mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden Candlesticks. The seuen starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches, and the seuen Candlestickes which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

## CHAP. II.

What is to bee written to the Angels of the Churches of 1. Ephesus. 8 Smyrna. 12. Pergamus, 18. Thyatira.

VNto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus, write: These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seuen golden Candlesticks.

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare them which are euill, and thou hast tried them which say, they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them lyars.

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my Names sake hast laboured: and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheless, I haue somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first workes, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, and will remoue thy Candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deedes of the Nicolaitans, which thing I also hate.

7 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches: To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of Life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God.

8 And vnto the Angel of the Church of Smyrna, write, These things saith the first, and the last, which was dead, and is aliue:

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation, and pouertie: but thou art rich, and I know the blasphemie of them which say, they are Iewes and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the Deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that yee may bee tried, and yee shall haue tribulation ten dayes: bee thou faithfull vnto death, and I will giue thee a Crowne of life.

11 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirite saieth vnto the Churches: Hee that ouercommeth, shall not bee hurt of the second death.

12 And to the Angel of the Church in Pergamos, write, these thinges saith hee, which hath the sharpe sword with two edges.

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest, even where Satans seate is, and thou holdest fast my name, and hath not denied my Faith, euen in those dayes, wherein Antipas was my faithfull Martyr, who was slaine among you where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a fewe thinges against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, to eate things sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit Fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that holde the doctrine of the Nicolaitaines, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come vnto thee quicke, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the

Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouercom-
meth, will I giue to eate of the hidden Manna, and
will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new
name written, which no man knoweth, saiuing hee that
receiueth it.

18 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Thyatira
write: These thinges saith the Sonne of God, who hath
his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete are like
vnto fine brasse.

19 I know thy workes, and charitie, and seruice,
and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and the last
to bee more than the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against
thee, because thou sufferest that woman Iezebell which
calleth her selfe a Prophetesse, to teach and to seduce
my seruants to commit fornication, and to eate things
sacrificed vnto idoles.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornicat-
on, and shee repented not.

22 Beholde, I will cast her into a bedde, and them
that commit adulterie with her, into great tribulation,
except they repent of their deedes.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all
the Churches shall know that I am hee which searcheth
the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one
of you according to your workes.

24 But vnto you I say, and vnto the rest of Thya-
tira, as many as haue not this doctrine, and which
haue not knowne the depthes of Satan, as they speake,
I will put vpon you none other burden:

25 But that which ye haue already, hold fast till I come.

26 And hee that ouercommeth, and keepeth my workes
vnto the end, to him will I giue power ouer the Na-
tions.

27 (And

27 (And hæ shall rule them with a rodde yron: as the vessels of a potter shall they bee broken to shiuers:) euen as I receiued of my Father.

28 And I will giue him the morning Starre.

29 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit sayeth vnto the Churches.

## CHAP. III.

1. The Angel of the Church of Sardis reproued. 10. of Philadelphia approued. 15. of Laodicea rebuked.

AND vnto the Angel of the Church of Sardis, write; These thinges saith hæ that hath the seuen Spirits of God, and the seuen starres: I know thy workes, that thou hast a name, that thou liuest and art dead.

2 Bæ watchfull, and strengthen the things which remaine, that are readie to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast receiued and heard: and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not know what houre, I will come vpon thæ.

4 Thou hast a fewe names euen in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments, and they shall walke with mæ in white: for they are worthie.

5 Hæ that ouercommeth, the same shall bee cloathed in white rayment, and I will not blot his name out of the booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my father, and before his Angels.

6 Hæ that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

7 And to the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia write, These things saith Hæ that is holie, hæ that is

true, hee that hath the key of Dauid, hee that openeth, and no man shutteth: and shutteth, & no man openeth:

8 I know thy workes: behold: I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and not denied my Name.

9 Beholde, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but do lie: behold, I will make them to come, and worship before thy feete, and to know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keepe thee from the houre of temptation, which shall come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickely, holde that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy Crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and hee shall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is new Ierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen, from my God: And I will write vpon him my new Name.

13 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodicians write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and the true witnes, the beginning of the creation of God:

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither cold nor hote, I would thou wert cold or hote.

16 So then, because thou art luke warme, and neither cold nor hote, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou saiest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and haue need of nothing: and knowest

not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blind, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of mee gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest bee rich: and white rayment, that thou mayest bee cloathed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse doo not appeare: and anoint thine eyes with eyesalue, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten: bee zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore, and knocke: if any man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I will come to him, and will sup with him, and hee with mee.

21 To him that ouercommeth, will I grant to sit with mee in my Throne, euen as I also ouercame, and am set downe with my Father in his Throne.

22 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saieth vnto the Churches.

## CHAP. IIII.

John seeth the Throne of God 4. and the Elders sitting.

AFter this, I looked, and behold, a doore was opened in heauen: and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet, talking with mee, which said, Come vp hither, and I will shew thee the things which must bee hereafter.

2 And immediatelie I was in the Spirit, and behold, a Throne was set in heauen, & One sate on the Throne.

3 And hee that sate was to looke vpon like a Iasper, & a Sardine stone: and there was a raine-bow round about the Throne, in the sight like vnto an Emerald.

4 And round about the Throne were foure and twentie seates: and vpon the seates I saw foure and

twentie Elders sitting, cloathed in white rayment, and they had on their heads crownes of gold.

5 And out of the Throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces: and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the Throne, which are the seuen Spirits of God.

6 And before the Throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto Christall: and in the midst of the Throne and round about the Throne, were foure beastes full of eyes before and behind.

7 And the first beast was like a Lyon, and the second beast like a Calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Eagle.

8 And the foure beasts had each of them, sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they rest not day and night, saying, Holie, holie, holie, LORD GOD Almightie, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when these beastes gaue glorie, and honour and thankes to him that sate on the Throne, who liueth for euer and euer.

10 The foure and twentie Elders fell downe before him that sate on the Throne, and worshipped him that liueth for euer and euer, and cast their crownes before the Throne, saying,

11 Thou art worthie, O Lord, to receiue glorie and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are, and were created.

## CHAP. V.

1. The booke with seuen seales, 9. not to bee opened but by the Lambe slaine. 12. The Elders praise thee Lambe.

And

## CHAP. V.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sate on the Throne, a Booke written within, and on the backside sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I sawe a strong Angel proclaiming with a loude voyce, Who is worthie to open the Booke, and to loose the seales thereof.

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the Booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthie to open and to read the Booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders said vnto me, Weepe not: beholde, the Lyon of the Tribe of Iuda, the Roote of Dauid, hath preuailed to open the Booke, and to loose the seales thereof.

6 And I beheld, and loe in the midst of the Throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the midst of the Elders stood a Lambe as it had beene slaine, hauing seuen horns and seuen eyes, which are the seuen Spirites of God, sent forth into all the earth.

7 And hee came, and tooke the Booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the Throne.

8 And when hee had taken the Booke, the foure beasts, and foure and twentie Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euerie one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours which are the prayers of Saintes.

9 And they sung a newe Song, saying, Thou art worthie to take the Booke, and to open the Seales thereof: for thou wast slaine, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy Blood, out of euerie kindred, and tongue, and people, and Nation.

10 And hast made vs vnto our God Kinges and

Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and heard the voyce of many Angels, round about the Throne, and the beastes, and the Elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands.

12 Saying with a loude voyce, Worthie is the Lambe that was slaine, to receiue power, and riches, and wisedome, and strength, and honour, glorie, and blessing.

13 And euerie creature which is in heauen, & on the earth, and vnder the earth, & such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, honour, glorie, and power be vnto him that sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe for euer and euer.

14 And the foure Beastes said, Amen. And the foure and twentie Elders fell down and worshipped him, that liueth for euer and euer.

## CHAP. VI.

1. The opening of the seales in order and what followed therevpon, containing a prophesie to the worlds end.

AND I saw whē the Lambe opened one of the seales, and I heard as it were the noyse of thunder, one of the foure beastes, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he that sate on him, had a bowe, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and hee went forth conquering & to conquere.

3 And when hee had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse, that was red: and power was giuen to him that sate thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another:

another: and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when hee had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse, and hee that sate on him, had a paire of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the midst of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheat for a pennie, and three measure of barley for a pennie, and see thou hurt not the oyle and the wine.

7 And when hee had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I loked, and beholde, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and hell followed with him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth to kill with sword, & with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when hee had opened the fift seale, I saw vnder the Altar the soules of them that were slaine for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they held:

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true doest thou not judge and auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes was giuen vnto euery one of them, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, vntill their fellow seruantes also, and their brethren that should bee killed as they were, should bee fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when hee had opened the first seale, and loe there was a great earthquake, and the Sunne became blacke as sackcloath of haire, and the Moone became as blood.

13 And the starres of Heauen fell vnto the earth, euen as a fig tree casteth her vntimely figges, when shee is shaken of a mighty wind.

14 And

14 And the heauen departed as scroule when it is rolled together, and euery Mountaine and Iland were moued out of their places.

15 And the kinges of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines & the mighty men, and euerie bondman, & euery free man, hid themselues in the Dens & in the Rockes of the Mountaines.

16 And said to the Mountaines and Rockes, Fall on vs, and hide vs from the face of him that sitteth on the Throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall bee able to stand?

## CHAP. VII.

3. The seruants of God sealed. 4. The number of the tribes that were sealed.

AND after these thinges, I sawe foure Angels standing on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth: nor on the Sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I sawe another Angel ascending from the East, hauing the seale of the liuing God: and hee cryed with a loud voyce to the foure Angels to whom it was giuen to hurt the Earth, and the Sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the Earth, neither the Sea, nor the Trees, till wee haue sealed the seruants of our God in their fore-heads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundreth and fourtie and foure thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda, were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad, were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe Nephtali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses, were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon, were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui, were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar, were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon, were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ioseph, were sealed twelue thousād. Of the tribe of Benjamin, were sealed twelue thousād.

9 After this I beheld, and loe, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all Nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the Throne, and before the Lambe, cloathed with white robes, and palmes in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Saluation to our God, which sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the Throne; and about the Elders, and the foure beastes and fell before the Throne on their faces, and worshipped God.

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glorie, and wisedome, and thankesgiuing, and honour, and power, and might, bee vnto our God, for euer and euer. Amen.

13 And one of the Elders answered, saying, vnto mee, What are these which are arayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I saide vnto him, Sir, thou knowest. And hee said to mee, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they before the Throne of God and serue him day and night in his Temple: and hee that sitteth on the Throne shall dwell among them.

16 They

16 They shall hũger no more neither thirst any more, neither shall the Sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lambe which is in the midst of the throne, shall feede on them, and shall leade them vnto liuing Fountaines of waters: and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

## CHAP. VIII.

1. At the opening of the seuenth seale, 2. seuen trumpets are giuẽ to seuen Angels, 3. & to another much incense.

AND whẽ he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauẽ about the space of halfe an houre.

2 And I sawe the seuen Angels which stood before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another Angel came and stood at the Alter, hauing a golden Censer, and there was giuen vnto him much incense, that hee should offer it with prayers of all Saincts vpon the golden Altar which was before the Throne.

4 And the smoake of the incense which came with the prayers of the Saincts, ascended vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel took the Censer, & filled it with fire of the Altar, & cast it into the earth, & there were voyces, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seuen Angels, which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to sound.

7 And the first Angel sounded, and there followed haile, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast vpon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt vp, and all grœne grasse was burnt vp.

8 And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire, was cast into the

Sea,

Sea, and the third part of the Sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the Sea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third Angel sounded, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell vpon the third part of the Riuers, and vpon the Fountaines of waters:

11 And the name of the starre is called Wormewoode, and the third part of the waters became worme woode, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third part of the Sunne was smitten, and the third part of the Moone, and the third part of the starres, so as the third part of them was darkened: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an Angel flying through the midst of heauen, saying, with a loude voyce: Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voyces of the trumpet of the three Angels, which are yet to sound.

## CHAP. IX.

1. The fift Angel sounding, a starre falleth from heauē. to whom is giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

AND the fift Angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth: and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And hee opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose a smoake out of the pit, as the smoak of a great fornace, and the Sunne and the Aire were darkened, by reason of the smoake of the pit.

3 And

3 And there came out of the smoake locusts, vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth hath power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any græne thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their fore-heads.

5 And to them it was giuen that they should not kill them, but that they should bee tormented fiue monethes, and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when hee strikes a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seeke death, & shall not find it, & shall desire to die, & death shall flie from them.

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, & on their heads were as it were crowns lik gold, & their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lyons.

9 And they had brestplates, as it were brestplates of yron, and the sound of their winges was as the sound of chariots of manie horses runing to battell.

10 And they had tailes like vnto Scorpions, and there were stings in their tales: and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they had a king ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Græke tongue hath his name Apollyon.

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the first Angel sounded, & I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before God.

14 Saying to the first Angel which had the trum-

pet,

pet, Loose the foure Angels which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeere, for to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the armie of the horsemen were two hundreth thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sate on them, hauing breast plates of fire, and of Iacinct, and brimstone, and the heades of the horses were as the heads of Lyons, and out of their mouths issued fire, and smoake, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed by the fire, and by the smoake, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouthes, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads, and with them they doe hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the workes of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, and idoles of gold, and siluer, and brasse, and stone, and of woode, which neither can see, nor heare, nor walke:

21 Neither repēted they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their Fornication, nor of their thefts.

## CHAP. X.

An Angel appeareth with a booke open: 6. he sweareth that there shall bee no more time. 9. Iohn is commanded to eate the booke.

AND I saw another mightie Angel come downe from heauen, cloathed with a cloud, and a rainbow

was vpon his head, and his face was as it were the Sun, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And hee had in his hand a little booke open, & he set his right foot vpon the sea, & his left foot vpon the earth,

3 And hee cryed with a loude voyce, as when a Lyon roareth, and when hee had cryed, seuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: and I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto mee, Seale vp those thinges which the seuen thunders vttered, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I saw stand vpon the Sea, and vpon the Earth, lifted vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euer and euer, who created heauen, and the thinges that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein, are and the Sea, and the things which are therein, that there should bee time no longer.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seuenth Angel, when hee shall begin to sound, the mysterie of GOD should bee finished, as hee hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, spake vnto mee againe, and said, Goe, and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angel which standeth vpon the Sea, and vpon the Earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angel, and said vnto him, Giue mee the little booke. And hee said vnto mee, Take it, and eate it vp, and it shall make thy bellie bitter, but it shall bee in thy mouth sweete as honey.

10 And I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth sweete as hony: & assoone as I had eaten it, my bellie was bitter.

11 And

CHAP. XI.

11 And hée said vnto mée, Thou must prophesie againe before many peoples, & Nations, & tongues, and kings.

CHAP. XI.

2. Two witnesses prophesie. 6. They haue power to shut heauen that it raine not. 14. The second woe past.

AND there was giuen me a rœd like vnto a rod, & the Angel stood, saying, Rise and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the Court which is without the Temple leaue out, and measure it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holie Citie shall they tread vnder foote fourtie and two monethes.

3 And I will giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand, two hundreth, and three score dayes, cloathed in sackcloath.

4 These are the two Olive trées, and the two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, & deuoureth their enemies: & if any man will hurt them, hée must in this manner bee killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophesie: and haue power ouer waters, to turne them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall haue finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomles pitte shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the stréete of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues,

and Nations, shall see their dead bodies three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth shall reioyce ouer them, and make merrie, and shall send giftes one to another, because these two Prophetes tormented them that dwell on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an halfe the spirit of life from God entered into them: and they stood vpon their feete, and great feare fell vpon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voyce from heauen saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ascended vp to heauen in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same houre there was a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie fell, and in the earthquake were slaine of men seuen thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gaue glorie to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, and beholde, the third woe commeth quickelie.

15 And the seuenth Angel sounded, and there were great voyces in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are become the kingdomes of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reigne for euer and euer.

16 And the foure & twenty Elders which sate before God on their seats, fell vpon their faces, & worshipped God

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, O Lord, God, Almighty, which art, & wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the Nations were angrie, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be iudged, and that thou should giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and the Saincts, and them that feare thy Name, small and great, and should destroy them

them which destroy the earth.

19 And the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seen in his Temple the Arke of his Testament, and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great haile.

## CHAP. XII.

1. A woman cloathed with the Sunne, trauaileth. 4. before whom the Dragon standeth readie to deuoure her childe.

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen, a woman clothed with the Sun and the Mone vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres:

2 And she being great with childe cryed, trauailing in birth and pained to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen, and behold, a great red Dragon, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heades:

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and did cast them to the earth: And the Dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be deliuered, for to deuour her childe, as soone as it was borne.

5 And she brought forth a man childe, who was to rule all Nations with an rod of yron: and her child was caught vp vnto God, and to his Throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there a thousand two hundreth and threescore dayes.

7 And there was warre in heauen, Michael and his angels fought against the Dragon, and the Dragon fought with his angels.

8 And preuailed not, neither was there place found any more in heauen,

9 And the great Dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the deuill and Satan, which deceiueth the whole worle: hæ was cast out into the earth, and his angels wer cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loude voyce, saying in Heauen, Now is come saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they ouer-came him by the blood of the Lambe, and by the word of their Testimonie, and they loued not their lines vnto the death.

12 Therefore, rejoyce yæ heauens, & yæ that dwell in them: Woe to the inhabiters of the earth, & of the sea, for the Deuill is come downe vnto you, hauing great wrath, because hæ knoweth ý hæ hath but a short time.

13 And when the Dragon saw that hee was cast vnto the earth, hæ persecuted the Woman which brought forth the man childe.

14 And to the woman were giuen two winges of a great Eagle, that shæ might flie into the wildernesse, into her place, where shæ is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the face of the Serpent.

15 And the Serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the Woman, that hæ might cause her to bæ carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman: and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the floode which the Dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the Dragon was wroath with the Woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her sæde which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the Testimonie of Iesus Christ.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIII.

1, A beast with seuen heades riseth out of the sea, to whom the Dragon yeeldeth his power.

AND I stood vpon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise vp out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes ten crownes, and vpon his heads, the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I saw was lik vnto a Leopard, and his feete were as the feete of a Beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a Lyon: and the Dragon gaue him his power, and his seate, and great authoritie.

3 And I saw one of his heades, as it were wounded to death, and his deadlie wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the Dragon, which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? Who is able to make warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, and blasphemies: and power was giuen vnto him to continue fourtie and two monethes.

6 And hee opened his mouth in blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name and his Tabernacle, and them that dwelt in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make war with the Saints, and to ouercome them: and power was giuen him ouer all kindreds, and tongues, and Nations.

8 And all ỹ dwel vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, slaine from the foundation of the world.

9 If anie man haue an eare, let him heare:

10 He ỹ leadeth into captiuitie, shall goe into captiuitie: He ỹ killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword Here is the patience & the faith of the Saincts.

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, and hæ had two hornes like a Lambe, and hæ spake as a Dragon.

12 And hæ exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadlie wound was healed.

13 And hee doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heauen on the earth, in the sight of mẽ,

14 And deceiueth them that dwell on the earth, by the meanes of those miracles which hee had power to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwelt on the earth, that they should mak an image to the beast, which had a wound by the sword, and did liue.

15 And hee had power to giue life vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speake, and cause that as many as would not worshippe the image of the beast, should bæ killed.

16 And hæ caused all both small and great, rich, and poore, frœ and bond to receiue a marke in their right hand, or in their fore-heads.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue hæ that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdome: Let him ỹ hath vnderstãding cõpt the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is fixe hundreth, threescore, and fixe.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1. The Lambe with his companie standeth on mount Syon.

AND I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundreth, fourtie, and four

foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their fore-heades.

2 And I heard a voyce from heauē as the voyce of manie waters, and as the voyce of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping vpon their harpes.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the Throne, and before the foure beastes, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth and fourtie and foure thousand, which were redæmed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are Virgins. These are they which follow the Lambe whithersoeuer hee goeth. These were redæmed from among men, beeing the first fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the Throne of God.

6 And I saw another Angel fly in the midst of heauen, hauing the euerlasting Gospel to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, & to euerie Nation and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying, with a loude voyce, Feare God, and giue glorie to him, for the houre of his iudgement is come, and worship him that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great citie, because shee made all Nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying, with a loude voyce, If any man worship the beast, & his image, and receiue his marke in his fore-head or in his hand.

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of

God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation, and hee shall bee tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holie Angels, and in the presence of the Lambe.

11 And the smoake of their torment ascendeth vp for euer and euer. And they haue no rest day nor night, who worship the beast, and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the marke of his name.

12 Heere is the patience of Saintes: Heere are they that keepe the Commandements of God, and the Faith of Iesus.

13 And I heard a voyce from heauen, saying, vnto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their workes doe follow them.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, & vpon the cloud one sate like vnto the Son of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voyce, to him that sate on the cloude, Thrust in thy sickle, and reape; for the time is come for thee to reape, for the haruest of the earth is ripe.

16 And hee that sate on the cloude thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another Angel came out of the Temple which is in heauen, hee also hauing a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which hath power ouer the fire, and cryed with a loud cry to him that had the sharpe sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vines of the earth, and cast it into the great

great wine-presse of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-presse was troden without the Citie, and blood came out of the wine-presse, euen vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundreth furlonges.

## CHAP. XV.

1. The seuen Angels with the seuen last plagues. 3. The song of them that ouercome the beast. 7. The seuē vials.

AND I saw another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels, hauing the seuen last plagues, for in them is filled vp the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse, mingled with fire, & them y had got ē the victorie ouer the beast & ouer his image & ouer his mark, & ouer y number of his name, stand on the Sea, of glasse, hauing the harps of God.

3 And they sung the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous are thy workes, Lord God Almightie, just and true are thy wayes thou King of Saints.

4 Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name? for thou onelie art holie: for all Nations shall come and worship before thee: for thy iudgementes are made manifest.

5 And after y I looked, & behold, the Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimonie in heauen was opened.

6 And the seuen Angels come out of the Temple, hauing the seuen plagues, cloathed in pure and white linnen, & hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beastes gaue vnto the seuen Angels, seuen golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who liueth for euer and euer.

8 And the Temple was filled with smoake from

the

the glorie of GOD, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

## CHAP. XVI.

The Angels powre out their vials of wrath. 6. The plagues follow.

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, & powre out the vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went and powred out his viall vpon the earth, and there fell a noysome and grieuous sore vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the Sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euerie liuing soule died in the Sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the riuers and fountaines of waters, & they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt bee, because thou hast judged thus:

6 For they haue shed the blood of Saincts, and Prophets, and thou hast giuen them blood to drinke, for they are worthie.

7 And I heard another out of the Altar say, Euen so, Lord God Almightie, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall, vpon the Sunne, and power was giuen vnto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the Name of GOD, which hath power ouer these plagues; and they repented not to giue him glorie.

10 And

10 And the fift Angel powred out his viall vpon the seate of the beast, and his kingdome was of darkenesse, and they gnawed their tongues for paine.

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen, because of their paines, and their sores, and repented not of their dœdes.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his viall, vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water therof was dried vp, ỹ the way of the kings of ỹ east might be prepared.

13 And I saw thrée vncleane spirits like Frogs come out of the mouth of the Dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet;

14 For they are the spirits of deuils, working miracles, which goe forth, vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of the great day of God Almightie.

15 Beholde, I come as a thiefe, Blessed is hée that watcheth, and kæpeth his garments, lest hée walke naked, and they sæ his shame.

16 And hæ gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into the Aire, and there came a great voyce out of the Temple of heauen, from the Throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voyces, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, so mightie an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great citie was diuided into thrée parts, and the cities of the Nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.

20 And euerie Iland fled away, and the Mountaines were not found.

21 And

21 And there fell vpon men a great haile out of heauen, euerie stone about the weight of a talent, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

## CHAP. XVII.

3. 4. A woman arayed in scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth on the beast. 5. Which is Babylon.

AND there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials, and talked with mee, saying vnto mee, Come hither, I will shew thee the iudgement of the great Whore that sitteth vpon many waters.

2 With whom the kings of the earth haue committed fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth haue beene drunke with the wine of her fornication.

3 So hee carried mee away in the Spirit into the wildernesse: and I saw a woman sit vpon a scarlet, coloured beast, full of names, of blasphemie, hauing seuen heads and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with golde and precious stones, and pearles, hauing a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthinesse of her fornication.

5 And vpon her forehead was a name written, MISTERIE, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER, OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the Saints, & with the blood of the Martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the Angel saide vnto mee, Wherefore didst thou marueile? I will tell thee the misterie of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath seuen heads and ten hornes.

8 The

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, and goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the booke of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the mind which hath wisdome. The seuē heads are seuē mountains on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seuen Kings, fiue are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come, and when hee cometh, hee must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, euen hee is the eight, and is of the seuen, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest are ten kings, which haue receiued no kingdome as yet: but receiue power as kings one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power and strength vnto the beast.

14 These shall make warre with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall ouercome them: For hee [is Lorde of lords, and King of kings, they that are with him, are called and chosen, and faithfull.

15 And hee saith vnto mee, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and Nations, and tongus.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, vpon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, & naked & shall eate her flesh & burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God shall bee fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great citie, which reigneth ouer the kings of the earth.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XVIII.

2. Babylon is fallen. 4. The people of God commanded to depart.

AND after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from heauen, hauing great power, and the earth was lightned with his glorie.

2 And hee cryed mightilie with a strong voyce, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, & is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of euery foule spirit, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird.

3 For all Nations haue drunke of the wine of the wrath of her Fornication, and the kinges of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the merchantes of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

4 And I heard another voyce from heauen, saying, Come out of her, my people, that yee bee not partakers of her sinnes, and that yee receiue not of her plagues:

5 For her sinnes haue reached vnto heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquitie.

6 Reward her euen as shee rewarded you, and double vnto her double, according to her workes: in the cup which shee hath filled, fill to her double.

7 Howe much shee hath glorified her selfe, and liued deliciously, so much torment and sorrow giue her: for shee saith in her heart: I sit a Queene, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning, & famine, and so she shalbe vtterly burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God, who iudgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who haue committed Fornication, and liued deliciously with her, shall bewaile her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoake of her burning.

10 Stan-

10 Standing afar off for the feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mightie citie: for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weepe and mourne ouer her, for no man buyeth their merchandize any more.

12 The merchandise of golde, and siluer, and precious stones, and of pearles, and fine linnen, and purple, and silke, and scarlet, and all Thine wood, and all maner vessels of yuorie, and all maner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and yron, and marble:

13 And Cynamome, and odours, and oyntmentes, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine floure, and wheate, and beastes, and sheepe, and horses, and charets, and slaues, and soules of men.

14 And the fruite that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all thinges which were daintie, and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchantes of these thinges which were made rich by her, shall stand a far off for the feare of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie that was cloathed in fine linnen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearles:

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought. And euerie shipmaster, and all the companie in ships, & sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood a farre off,

18 And cryed when they saw the smoake of her burning, saying, What citie is like vnto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cryed, weeping, & wailing, saying, Alas, alas, ỹ great city, wherein were made rich all ỹ had ships in the sea, by reason

of

of her costlines, for in one houre is shee made desolate.

20 Reioyce ouer her thou heauen, and yee holy Apostles, and Prophets, for God hath auenged you on her.

21 And a mightie Angel tooke vp a stone like a great milstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall the great citie Babylon bee throwne down, and shall bee found no more at all.

22 And the voyce of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall bee heard no more at all in thee: and no craftesman of whatsoeuer craft hee bee, shall bee found any more in thee: and the sound of a milstone shall bee heard no more at all in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voyce of the bridegroome, and of the bride shall bee heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all Nations deceiued.

24 And in her was found the blood of Prophets, and of Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

## CHAP. XIX.

God praised for judging the whore, and auenging his Saincts.

AND after these thinges, I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying, Alleluia: saluatiõ, and glorie, and honour, & power vnto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his iudgementes, for hee hath iudged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants at her hand.

3 And againe they saide, Alleluia: and her smoake rose vp for euer and euer.

4 And the foure and twentie Elders, and the foure beasts

beasts, fell downe and worshipped God that sate on the Throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voyce came out of the Throne, saying, Praise our God all yee his seruantes, and yee that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of manie watets, and as the voyce of mightie thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God Omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let vs bee glad and reioyce, and giue honour to him: for the marriage of the Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe readie.

8 And to her was granted, that shee should bee arayed in fine linnen, cleane and white: for the fine linnen is the righteousnesse of Saincts.

9 And he saith vnto me, Write, Blessed art they which are called vnto the marriage Supper of the Lambe. And hee saith vnto mee, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feete to worshippe him: and hee said vnto mee, See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren that haue the Testimonie of Iesus, worshippe God: for the testimonie of Iesus, is the Spirit of prophesie.

11 And I saw heauen opened, & behold a white horse, and he that sate vpon him was called faithfull and true, and in righteousnesse hee doeth judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were manie crownes, and hee had a name written, that no man knew but himselfe.

13 And hee was clothed with a vesture diped in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heauen followed him vpon horses, clothed in fine linnen, white & cleane.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharpe sword, that with it hee should smite the Nations: and hee shall rule them with a rod of yron: and he treadeth the wine-presse of the fiercenesse and wrath of Almightie God.

16 And he hath on his vestur, & on his thigh, a Name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an Angel standing in the Sun, and he cryed with a loude voyce, saying to all the foules that flie in the midst of heauen. Come and gather your selues together vnto the Supper of the great God,

18 That ye may eate of the flesh of kings, & the flesh of captaines, and the flesh of mightie men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies did gather together to make war against him that sate on the horse, and against his armie.

20 And the beast was taken, & with him the false prophet, ý wrought miracles before him, with which he deceiued them that had receiued the marke of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast aliue into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnãt were slaine with the sword of him that sate vpon the horse which sword proceeded out of his mouth, and all the foules were filled with their flesh.

## CHAP. XX.

1. Satan bound for a thousand yeares. 6. The first resurrection.

AND I saw an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the key of the bottomlesse pitte, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon, ý old serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, & bound him a thousand yeres

3 And

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him vp, set and a seale vpon him, that hee should deceiue the Nations no more, till the thousand yeeres should bee fulfilled, and after that hee must bee loosed a little season.

4 And I saw Thrones, and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them: and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, & for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beaste, nor his image, neither had receiued his marke vpon their fore-heades, or in their handes, and they liued and reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead liued not againe vntil the thousand yeeres were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holie is hee that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall bee Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeeres.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired. Satan shall bee loosed out of his prison.

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the Nations which are in the foure quarters of the earth. Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell: the number of whom the is as the sand of the Sea.

9 And they went vp on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the campe of the Saincts about, and the beloued citie: and fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the Deuill that deceiued them was cast into the lacke of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night, for euer and euer.

11 And I saw a great white Throne, and him that

sate on it, from whose the earth and the heauen fled a-way, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God: and the bookes were opened: and another book was opened which is the booke of life, and the dead were iudged out of those thinges which were written in the bookes according to their workes.

13 And the sea gaue vp their dead which were in it: & death & hell deliuered vp the dead which were in them: & they were iudged euerie man according to their works.

14 And death, and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

## CHAP XXI.

A new Heauen and a new Earth. 10. the heauenlie Ierusalem.

AND I saw a new heauen, and a new earth: for the first heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea.

2 And I Iohn saw the holie Citie new Hierusalem, comming downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a Bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall bee his people, and God himselfe shall bee with them, and bee their God.

4 And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shall bee no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there bee anie more paine: for the former things are passed away.

5 And hee that sate vpon the Throne, said, Beholde, I make all things new. And hee said vnto mee, Write, for

for these words are true and faithfull.
6 And hee said vnto mee, It is done: I am Alpha & Omega, the beginning & the end, I will giue vnto him y is athirst of the fountaine of the water of life freelie.
7 Hee that ouercommeth, shall inherite all thinges, and I will bee his God, and hee shall bee my sonne.
8 But the fearefull, and vnbelieuing, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers and sorcerers and idolaters, and all lyars, shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.
9 And there came vnto mee one of the seuen Angels which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with mee, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride, the Lambes Wife.
10 And hee carried mee away in the spirit to a great and high Mountaine, & shewed mee that great citie, the holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God.
11 Hauing the glorie of God: and her light was like vnto a stone most precious, euen like a Jasper stone, cleare as chrystall.
12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelue gats and at the gates twelue Angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.
13 On the East three gates, on the North three gates, on the South three gates, and on the West three gates.
14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations & in them the names of the twelue Apostles of the Lamb.
15 And he y talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the citie, and the gates thereof, and the wall therof.
16 And the citie lyeth foure square, and the length is as large as the breedth: and hee measured the citie with

the

the rǽde, twelue thousand furlongs: the length and the
brædth and the hight of it are equall.

17 And hæ measured the wall thereof, an hundreth
and fourtie and foure cubites, according to the measure
of a man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper
and the citie was pure gold, like vnto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the cities were
garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first
foundation was Iasper, the second Saphyre, the third
a Chalcedonie, the fourth an Emeralde.

20 The fift Sardonix, the first Sardius, the seuenth
Chrysolite, the eight Beryl, the ninth a Topas, the tenth
a Chrysoprasus, the eleuenth a Iacinct, the twelfth an
Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, euery
seuerall gate was of one pearle, and the stræt of the ci-
tie was pure gold, as it were a transparent glasse.

22 And I saw no Temple therein: For the Lord God
Almightie, and the Lambe, are the Temple of it.

23 And the Citie had no nǽde of the Sunne, neither
of the Moone to shine in it: for the glorie of God did ligh-
ten it, and the Lambe is the light thereof.

24 And the Nations of them which are saued, shall
walke in the light of it: and the kings of the earth dos
bring their glorie and honour into it.

25 And the gates of it shall not hæ shut at all by day:
for there shall bæ no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glorie and honour of the
Nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing
that defileth, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination,
or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the
Lambes booke of life.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XXII.

1. The River of the water of life.

AND hée shewed mée a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as Christall, proceeding out of the Throne of God, and the Lambe.

2 In the midst of the street of it, & of either side of the riuer, was there the tree of life, which bare twelue maner of fruits, and yelded her fruit euery moneth: & the leaues of the tree were for the healing of the Nations.

3 And there shall bee no more curse: but the Throne of God, and of the Lambe shall bee in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his Name shall be in their fore-heads.

5 And there shall bee no Night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the Sun, for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euer and euer.

6 And hee said vnto mee, These sayings are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holie Prophets sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruants the thinges which must shortlie bee done.

7 Behold, I come quickelie: Blessed is hée that kéepeth the sayings of the prophesie of this booke.

8 And I John saw these thinges, and heard them. And when I had heard and séene: I fell downe to worship before the feete of the Angel, which shewed mee these things.

9 Then saith hée vnto mee, See thou doe it not, for I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the sayings of this booke: worship God.

10 And hee saith vnto mee, Seale not the sayings of prophesie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 Hée that is vniust, let him bee vniust still: and he which

which is filthie, let him bee filthie still: and hæ that is righteous, let him bee righteous still: and hæ that is holy, let him bæ holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, & my reward is with mæ, to giue euery man according as his worke shall be.

13 I am Alpha, and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that doe his Commandementes, that they may haue right to the tree of life, and may enter in thorow the gates into the Citie.

15 For without are dogges, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus haue sent mine Angel, to testifie vnto you these thinges in the Churches. I am the Rote and the off-spring of Dauid, and the bright morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come, And let him that is a-thirst come. And whosoeuer will, let him take the water of life frælie.

18 For I testifie vnto enerie man that heareth the words of the prophesie of this Booke. If any man shall adde vnto these thinges, God shall adde vnto him the plagues that are written in this Booke.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the Booke of this prophesie, God shall take away his part out the Booke of life and out of the holie Citie, of and from the things which are written in this Booke.

20 Hee which testifieth these things, saith, Surelie, I come quicklie. Amen. Euen so, Come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

FINIS.